THE MAGUS ERA

BOOK 03

Blood Red

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Magus Era

(巫神纪)

by

Blood Red

(血红)

Synopsis

Long ago, there were people who stood upon the earth with their heads held high. They never bowed to anyone because of their indomitable spirit. They were capable of controlling wind and lightning, and conquering dragons and serpents. They seemed strong enough to split the earth and shatter the stars with their fists. They traveled throughout the land and called themselves Magi. Eventually, one of them would become a Supreme Magus! These men are the ancestors of human beings. Their blood is what we all share today.

Qing Long is the former strongest man in the world. He traveled through space and time and was reborn as Ji Hao in the Fire Crow Clan of the Southern Wasteland. It's a complicated world. Forces from both inside and outside of the clan want this young and talented boy to die. Under great pressure, Ji Hao makes a deal with a mysterious man, who resides in his spiritual space, never showing his real face. He gains two drops of blood from a dragon and phoenix. Afterwards, Ji Hao becomes increasingly more powerful.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Law @ Qidian International

Translation Edit by Hitesh_ @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201: A Poisonous Rain

Brother Ling, whose name was Great Gale Ling, took the rest of the team and began his assault. His eye sockets were filled with hot blood and rage rushed directly to his head. Great Gale Ling shouted madly, as hot air streams surged out of every pore of his.

'How could this have happened?! How could I have taken such a great loss?!' The information he had received from the Ten-Sun Country was detailed and true. According to that information, among Ji Hao's teammates, Yu Mu and Feng Xing were the only two Senior Magi, and they had broken through to the Senior Magus level only three to five years ago. Therefore, Great Gale Ling and his team could easily kill all of them.

If they took out Ji Hao's team, which was responsible for escorting the exploration troops of the Rong Mountain Clan to their new territory, the thirty thousand people of the Rong Mountain Clan would be given to him. This was the reward that was approved tacitly by the man who had encouraged them to launch this attack.

A whole thirty-thousand people of the Rong Mountain Clan! These people who knew everything about mine exploration and weapon forging were a tremendous treasure. Great Gale Ling had even contacted slave dealers from the Yu Clan in secret. Once he successfully killed Ji Hao and his teammates and captured these clansmen, he would sell these Rong Mountain Clan clansmen immediately through a secret distribution channel.

However...

All the souls of the great ancestors and all the free spirits of the wind in the world would testify on behalf of Great Gale Ling that Feng Xing had fallen to the ground in a very weird and twisted manner. His lucky survival from the deadly shot was purely because of luck. But how on earth had Feng Xing been able to kill

Great Gale Ling's brothers directly with only a series of blind counterattacks that he had launched after having fallen to the ground?!

The poor boy who had been shot directly in the head, which was something that had happened so quickly that even a Senior Magus would have been unable to save him, was one of Great Gale Ling's blood-related cousins. He was the son of a blood-related uncle of Great Gale Ling and had been quite close to him since they were little kids. That boy was a talented young elite warrior who was extremely valued by the Great Gale Clan.

In Pu Ban City, this boy even had already been selected to join the guardian troop of the King of the humankind, Emperor Shun, as the commander of a hundred elite archers. This time, Great Gale Ling had secretly taken him out of Pu Ban City for this secret killing mission that had been assigned to him by an elder.

Before he could kill the target, his brother had been killed by the enemies. Great Gale Ling couldn't even imagine how he would explain this to his uncle. Neither did he have any idea how to face all those questions that would come from the group of ministers, or even from Emperor Shun himself.

He was utterly enraged and frightened. His arms, which had been as stable as a mountain before, had started to tremble. He pulled his longbow open and shot out waves of arrows. Soon, the two quivers of arrows that had been tied around his waist, the three quivers of arrows he was carrying on his back, and the two quivers of arrow that were tied around his shanks, were all shot out.

He shook his body abruptly and shattered those empty quivers into pieces, while thrusting his hand into a fist-sized storage bag tied around his waist. He took another quiver full of arrows out, then simultaneously created another rain of arrows.

Those arrows darted through the sky like raindrops towards Feng Xing, Yu Mu, Taisi, and Shaosi, along with cold, light sparks and

ghost-wailing-like, shrill, swishing sound. Weirdly, elder Iron Mountain, who was standing right in the middle of the campsite while organizing a defensive formation, hadn't even caught the attention of Great Gale Ling for even the slightest bit. Great Gale Ling and companions didn't even take the elders of the Rong Mountain Clan into consideration.

Fifteen elite archers who possessed top-ranked shooting skills madly shot over a thousand arrows out within a second. Without any strategy, all those arrows darted towards Ji Hao's teammates on completely straight paths at the highest speed, and contained as much power as they could, along with the strongest killing intent.

Shaosi's facial expression changed slightly. She took a deep breath and moved, stepping forward, while shielding the fainted Taisi behind her. Facing such a strong rain of arrow, Shaosi doubted if she was powerful enough to keep Taisi safe. The only thing she could do was to block all the arrows that were aimed at her brother with her own body.

Feng Xing let out another great shout and a series of curses while running and dodging on the ground, leaving a trail of afterimages behind him. At the same time, he was shooting arrows out, one after another. The arrows shot by Feng Xing seemed continuously able to collide against the arrows of the enemies. The collision would cause both arrows to explode simultaneously, whilst creating thunderous booms.

However, Feng Xing's quivers emptied completely after shooting the two-hundred arrows he had brought with him. He growled out in a resonating voice and activated his internal power. His internal power gushed out of his body into his longbow and condensed quickly into cyan light-arrows on the bow string. In the blink of an eye, another hundred light-arrows were shot out by Feng Xing. Feng Xing's butt thudded against the ground, his face filled with despair. He had already used up all of the powers contained in his body, and now he was even unable to move.

Nevertheless, there were entire fifteen skilled archers on the side of the enemy and Great Gale Ling alone had shot out over five-hundred arrows within a moment. All those arrows flew rapidly down like a storm. Yu Mu, Feng Xing, Taisi, and Shaosi were all in the targeted range.

Yu Mu took a deep breathe then cursed in a low voice, "Fatso, poor little fatso…do all fatsos have to be human shields…"

Stretching his hands, Yu Mu took an amazingly deep breath. With his mouth as the centre, a gigantic air swirl suddenly emerged along with an ear-piercing swishing sound. All of the small rocks and soil around Yu Mu rose instantly into the air and the plants within a radius of ten miles were also uprooted. The uprooted plants disintegrated immediately due to the fierce air of the swirl and gathered towards Yu Mu's mouth.

The arrows that had been flying over seemed to have abandoned their attacks on Feng Xing, Taisi, and Shaosi. They changed their trajectories and flew instead towards Yu Mu, similar to how birds would fly to their nesting woods.

Because of a certain kind of magic that Yu Mu had chanted to draw the arrows towards him, the speed of the arrows seemed to have doubled now. Each of the arrows had become powerful enough to penetrate through a mountain peak and even caused huge amounts of fire sparks to be created due to the friction of the air.

"I…why am I the one taking these arrows? Because I am fat?!! Damn you! You bunch of Eastern Wasteland bastards! You can shoot nothing but sparrows!!" yelled Yu Mu angrily while taking out his huge pot from who knows where. He then turned the pot upside down and carried it on his head. He buried his face in his hands and let over a thousand arrows thickly strike onto the pot and his body.

A thick and fine layer of spell symbols emerged on the surface of

the pot. This huge pot that Yu Mu used to cook all kinds of strange yet delicious food was also quite a powerful defensive magic tool. Arrows shattered against the pot one after another, and those spell symbols on the surface of the pot cracked.

The three thousand arrows disappeared simultaneously and suddenly. At the same time, all the spell symbols that were lit on the surface of the pot collapsed instantly and shattered into pieces. The following barrage of arrows pierced through the thick iron pot instantly and stuck deeply into Yu Mu's chubby body.

The puffs that were caused by those arrows when piercing into Yu Mu's face began to swell, and large amounts of blood gushed out of Yu Mu's body. His two-foot-thick layer of fat was trembling intensely and was letting out great yet withy power. He tried his best to counteract those arrows that had already stuck into his body.

Yu Mu screamed out in pain while streams of tears gushed out of his little shining eyes. He even cried out because of the pain when he cursed his enemies, "You cruel and heartless bastards! I will pay a visit to your Eastern Wasteland sooner or later and leave behind a handful of disease-causing poison! May your Great Gale Clan die without any descendants! Oh...ouch! When I develop a magic poison that is powerful enough to eliminate an entire clan, you will be the first ones to test its power!"

Accompanied by the waves of Yu Mu's howls and cries, the wind around the campsite grew fiercer and the clouds started roll in the sky.

Thin clouds gathered inwards from all directions. Even the tears of Yu Mu had directly turned into mist and rose straight into the air. The water in the nearby rivers also turned into dense mist and rose into the air. After that, a gentle rain poured down from the sky, but the weird thing was that raindrops had a dark-green colour.

These dark-green colored raindrops had a nice herbal scent. It dripped gently and softly onto the bodies of Great Gale Ling and his teammates.

At first, Great Gale Ling ignored the rain and was still shouting. He was preparing to rush down and fight, but soon his face turned suddenly horrible green.

"Poison…strong poison! Retreat! Retreat!!"

Great Gale Ling screamed himself hoarse.

Chapter 202: Release

Run... run as far as you can.

Great Gale Ling and his teammates were all immediately freaking out, all of them turned around and fled whilst using all of their powers.

In battle, every elite Senior Magus like Great Gale Ling, who were highly skilled and powerful, were capable of easily destroying an army single-handedly. But a poison using Magus, who knew everything about poisons, was capable of slaughtering an entire clan whenever he or she desired to do so. There were even terrifying cases, such as the one during ancient times, in the era of Emperor Yao that had passed not long ago, a poison using Magus had wantonly spread a pestilent poison in the Midland in revenge for his clan that had been wiped out. Three months later, within an area encompassing ten miles, not even a single plant had been able to survive that poison. Over a hundred million clansmen of eight large-scale clans had been killed because of the rampaging disease that was caused by the poison. Ever since then, poison using Magi had been considered as the most terrifying beings in battles.

Not a single Magus was brave enough to risk his life fighting against a poison using Magus without the help of powerful magic medicines that could counteract the poison user or having prepared enough detoxifying medicines, or medicines that could neutralize poisons capable of causing diseases. In the world of Magi, being killed was not a very big deal, but being poisoned with a substance that would linger in your body and spread among other people, causing fatal damage to their clan, would make the warriors suffer the most.

Great Gale Ling and his teammates rushed back, fleeing with all of their powers. Fierce gusts of wind emerged under their feet, and swooshing spheres of white gale appeared behind the backs of each

of them, raising them into the air and accelerating them quickly by many times. They flew ten miles away within a single second, while leaving a trail of afterimages.

“Damn it…Elder Yun Peng tricked me…damn, this bloody fatso! No one told me that he was a poison user!”

Great Gale Ling wanted to cry, but he failed to shed any tears because his tear glands were damaged by the powerful poison. His eyes had become dry and countless tiny cracks appeared on the surface of his eyeballs, making him incapable of seeing clearly at the moment. The poison had invaded his internal organs, and Great Gale Ling sensed clearly something similar to countless worms crawling madly around within his body.

His limbs were numb and his blood vessels were blocked. A few newly awakened Magus Acupoints which hadn’t been warmed and nourished to the optimal state yet were also easily invaded by the poison. He felt waves of numbness from his Magus Acupoints, along with which, all of the power stored in his Magus Acupoints was polluted by the poison, turning into thousands of power streams, resembling vicious snakes, smashing around inside his body. Wherever those power streams swept across, all muscles, blood vessels, and bones would be stirred into jam.

“You…our Great Gale Clan will not spare you for this!!” screamed Great Gale Ling in a badly hoarse voice, “Our Great Gale Clan is…”

“Your Great Gale Clan is one of the ten most powerful clans of the Ten-Sun-Country and the most loyal henchman of the Ten-Sun-Country! We know, we know, you don’t even need to say it!” yelled Feng Xing. He then laughed out so loud that tears even gushed out of his eye sockets.

Great Gale Ling growled out loud and jumped abruptly hundreds of feet high into the air. He turned around, glared at the defensive formation of the clansmen of the Rong Mountain, then pulled his longbow open and flipped his fingers, shooting three arrows out.

The tree arrows flew as fast as lightning bolts into the defensive formation and caused thunderous muffled booms. All three arrows exploded immediately, transforming into fierce whirlwinds and rose into the air along with loud swooshing sounds. Nearly a thousand armed warriors of the Rong Mountain Clan were rolled up by the three whirlwinds while howling in fear and pain. Countless visible white sharp gusts of winds circled around their bodies and madly hacked at their limbs. This caused large amounts of fire sparks to spurt out from their thick metal armors, and from time to time, armor fragments would fall off onto the ground.

Blood dripped from the air above the defensive formation of the Rong Mountain Clan, and not long after there was a rain of blood. With a vicious grin, Great Gale Ling looked at the defensive formation, which had now fallen into chaos, and yelled, “Even if I die, you shall all die with me! Haha! Haha! You idiots!”

Ji Hao was standing on Mr Crow’s back. Mr Crow had transformed into a fiery streak of light and was rushing towards the campsite. Seeing Great Gale Ling risking his own life to inflict heavy losses on the Rong Mountain Clan, Ji Hao was instantly enraged. Escorting the troops of the Rong Mountain Clan to their new territory, protecting them, and helping them with the exploitation and development of the new land, were the tasks of Ji Hao and his teammates. If the casualties among the clansmen of the Rong Mountain Clan were to be too serious, Ji Hao and his teammates wouldn’t be able to complete their task, and Ji Hao would feel incredibly guilty.

“Damn you bastards! Who the hell sent you here?!” shouted Ji Hao. He then loudly cawed at Mr Crow.

Mr Crow had just swallowed two whole bottles of Three Birds and Nine Beasts pills. Currently his body was filled with active power and all wounds left by the Shadow Devil assassins had already cured fully. There were only a few damaged feathers that hadn’t grown back yet. Hearing Ji Hao’s caw, Mr Crow too let out

a long and resonating caw, then stretched his wings and threw out over ten black feathers. Those feathers darted out like bullets, tied by long beams of fiery lights, shooting towards Great Gale Ling and his teammates.

The metal-sharp feathers accurately pierced through the bodies of those boys while making a series of puff sounds. All Great Gale Ling's teammates had already fallen into half-unconscious states because of the poison released by Yu Mu. Therefore, Mr Crow's feathers easily punctured their vital body parts, and sent out a stream of Gold Crow flame into each of their bodies, which then burned them into clouds of smoke within a moment.

Great Gale Ling floated in the air, struggled as hard as he could and tried dodging those feathers. He bit his own tongue until it broke and let out a long, hoarse yet shrill scream. Followed by his voice, a beam of white light darted out from his chest, transforming into a hazy silhouette of a great gale bird and merged with his body.

"What the...Spirit possession of an ancestor's soul?!" Ji Hao's eyes popped open, "Bloody hell! You have been raising a 'magic blood battle soul' inside your body! I can't let you live!"

The magic blood battle soul was a secret Maguspriest magic. Draining out the soul of a powerful wild creature, turning it into an embryo with a certain kind of secret magic, then injecting it into the body of a talented warrior. The Senior Magus level spirit blood of the warrior would then nourish the embryo. When the embryo matured, it would awaken and merge with the body of said warrior, gifting the warrior with all the powers and abilities that the creature had possessed.

The soul that had merged with Great Gale Ling's body belonged to a Great Gale Bird. If this soul of the Great Gale Bird naturally matured inside his body, after merging with Great Gale Ling, he would acquire all the powers of an adult Great Gale Bird. For example, solely relying on the body of a Senior Magus, Great Gale

Ling would be capable of flying up to a height of over a million feet. He would be able to freely travel through the void without any difficulty and manipulate all kinds of winds in this world. None of the ordinary Maguspriests would be able to fight against him. Moreover, his sight would have become extremely great and sensitive. He would be able to clearly see every single movement of a tiny mouse from the height of a million feet, which was a precious boon for an archer.

However, in order to survive the attack of Ji Hao and Mr Crow, Great Gale Ling had forcibly activated the power of the Great Gale Bird's soul. This would certainly over consume his life force, and result in him spending more spirit blood and time to be able to completely merge with the soul of the Great Gale Bird in the future; that was if he was to have a future.

The silhouette of the Great Gale Bird stretched its wings behind Great Gale Ling's body, bringing up a white fierce gust of wind and suddenly darting to a height of over three thousand feet, into the thick layer of clouds and straight into the sky.

Mr Crow let out a resonant caw, then sniffed scornfully. He transformed back into a fiery light streak and instantly rose into the air nearly a million feet high from the ground, around three thousand feet higher than Great Gale Ling. Then Mr Crow abruptly dived down and slapped Great Gale Ling directly onto the ground with only one claw.

An immature soul of a Great Gale Bird, how could it compare with Mr Crow in flying speed?

Yu Mu and Feng Xing had already rushed up to Great Gale Ling. Yu Mu angrily pulled out those arrows that were stuck on his body, while he raised his foot high and stamped hard on the back of Great Gale Ling, and yelled, "You damn little bastard! I will cook you into a pot of soup today and feed you to those wild dogs! My pot! My fat! And so much blood I have lost today! Damn you! Do you have any idea about how much delicious food I have to eat to

replenish all those back?!!”

Shaosi walked calmly over, her eyes filled with coldness and anger. She then said slowly with a frosty voice, “Don't kill him, give him to me, then release him. He has almost killed us... He has to pay for that.”

Shaosi then began to chant a strange spell, along with which, a subtle and weird power sneakily gathered over from an unknown source.

Chapter 203: Candle Dragon

While Ji Hao and his teammates were attacked, Pu Ban City had been incomparably quiet and peaceful.

Ying Yunpeng held his hands behind his body while walking slowly and leisurely in the clean and tidy Ten Sun Market. Just as its name implied, the Ten Sun Market was set in Pu Ban City by the Ten Sun Country. The Ten Sun Country was the most powerful human-ruled country in the Eastern Wasteland. It had over ten thousand different-sized clans as its appendages. With its great power, the Ten Sun Country had monopolized over fifty percent of the business in Eastern Wasteland products within Pu Ban City.

The Eastern Wasteland had bountiful of all kinds of spices, woods, herbal medicines, and precious jade, all of which could be found at the Ten Sun Market. Pearls, hawksbill, coral, and other simple treasures that had come from the Great Eastern Ocean and the Eastern Wasteland were piled like useless rocks in the Ten Sun Market.

Beautiful mermaids, proud and muscular young human-like dragon girls, strong aquatic warriors and powerful wild beasts that lived in the sea; whether it were female slaves or personal warriors, you could find all kinds of slaves in the Ten Sun Market. You could even find some merchandise that were contraband, such as dead bodies of real dragons, armors made from the scales of pure-blooded dragons, longbows made from dragon bones and tendons. It seemed that one could buy literally everything in this market.

Ying Yunpeng was a master elder, who was sent as an administrator of the Ten Sun Market by the Ten Sun Country. Every type of trading in the Ten Sun Market was under his supervision. With his tough yet worldly strategies, the Ten Sun Market had been developing and thriving, creating great amounts of benefits for the Ten Sun Country and Ying Yunpeng himself

every day.

On top of that, Ying Yunpeng was also a master Magi tutor of the Magi Palace and a minister of the King of humankind. With all these titles, Ying Yunpeng could easily make the entire Ten Sun Market and a part of Pu Ban City shake with only a stamp of his foot against the ground.

The broad road had a width equal to ten chariots moving side by side, and was paved with a thick layer of white sand. All of this white sand had been shipped over from the North Beach of the Ten Sun Country. This sand was worth nothing back in the Eastern Wasteland, but after being shipped to Pu Ban City, a cart full of sand was worth one jade coin. In other words, the road was not paved with white sand but with piles of coins.

Stepping on the soft white sand, Ying Yunping was in an even better mood. He was smiling proudly from time to time and was nodding at shop owners on both sides of the road, who grinned and gave him a salute. Walking across the fifty miles long road, there was a town located at the end of the road. The town was squared with each side having the length of ten miles and was surrounded by a hundred zhang wide, flowing river. The city was surrounded by walls that had a height of three zhang and around these walls were teams of patrolling warriors from the Ten Sun Country, wearing leather armor and holding longbows.

Ying Yunpeng walked into the town through a bridge. Wherever he passed walking, countless people of Ten Sun Country, who lived in the town, bowed and saluted him. The smile of Ying Yunpeng grew bigger and bigger, and his head was held higher and higher. He even amiably touched the heads of a few kids, who were happily laughing and ran past him.

Looking at those kids, Ying Yunpeng thought proudly that the Ten Sun Country was indeed a country which was marvelous and blessed. Even the children of the Ten Sun Country had rounder heads than the children of other clans, and looked much better.

He walked eastwards from the front gate of the town. The east-end of the town was a very broad residence area. Magnificent mansions, built with logs, were lined orderly. Between those mansions were tall watchtowers, with each watchtower having elite Eastern Wasteland archers guarding the area in turns.

The silvery sound of birds singing came from the sky. Tens of rocs and eagles were hovering overhead the mansion area. Using these birds that had extremely sensitive eyes, not even an insect would be able to sneak into this area.

Ying Yunpeng walked into a mansion. Two pretty maidservants ran hurriedly over, kneeled politely on the ground and saluted him.

"Hm, I come for master Candle Dragon." Ying Yunpeng snorted slightly. the smile on his face had disappeared instantly. While speaking, he carelessly touched the tender face of one of the maidservants.

The two maidservant stood hurriedly back up, trotted and guided Ying Yunpeng deep into the yard. Not long after, they stopped in front of a small building, which was completely surrounded by a metallic fence wall and watchtowers.

Ying Yunpeng walked into the small building, and saw a gigantic black flagstone placed in the middle of the room, with two naked, dry dead bodies lying on it. A nearly two-zhang tall elderly man, who had a very wrinkled and odd face, with a candle light goggling on his head, was carefully observing the two dry dead bodies inch by inch, with his body bowed.

Standing beside the elderly man, who was much taller than himself, Ying Yunpeng laughed hollowly, then said, "Master Candle Dragon."

Master Candle Dragon straightened his body slowly up. His head nearly touched the ceiling by doing so. He then turned around. Master Candle Dragon had a dragon-like face, two fist-sized, horn-

like bones bulging on his forehead, and two spheres of golden fiery light shining in his hollowed eyes. It was impossible for someone to see what his pupils really looked like.

Taking a deep breath, Master Dragon began talking in a hoarse voice, "Little Bird, you are here."

Ying Yunpeng let out an embarrassed grin. He couldn't be unhappier about being called 'Little Bird', however, this Master Candle Dragon, whose actual name was Candle Dragon Gui, who was now standing right in front of him, was one of the few old terrifying master elders of the Magi Palace. He had begun working in the Magi Palace since the ancient era, when the world was still being ruled by the first generation of the King of the humankind.

Even though he was quite dissatisfied, Ying Yunpeng was not even a thousand year old yet, and wouldn't dare to show any sign of disrespect towards this Master Candle Dragon.

Saluting politely to Master Candle Dragon, Ying Yunpeng grinned and said, "Master, it has been a whole month, have you found any clue?"

Master Candle Dragon took out a black wooden stick, raised it above his own head and ignited it with the candlelight floating upon his head. He then put it into his own mouth, greedily swallowing the dense and pungent smoke released by the burning wooden stick. Swallowing a few mouthfuls of smoke, Master Candle Dragon opened his mouth and puffed out a stream of smoke onto the face of Ying Yunpeng. The smoke was so dense and had such a strong scent that it nearly made Ying Yunpeng pass out.

Staring at the black stick held in the hands of Master Candle Dragon and thinking about how such kinds of black sticks were made, Ying Yunpeng internal organs and face both began to twitch intensively. He was almost thrown out. Letting out another few hollow and embarrassed laughs, Ying Yunpeng stepped hurriedly back, then saluted Master Candle Dragon once again.

"Very strange, deadly curse." Master Candle Dragon sat down on the ground and crossed his legs. He pulled a wisp of hair off from one of the dry dead body, put it under his own nose and carefully smelled for a while, then continued, "The alarm magic formation of the Magi Palace didn't have any reaction when this happened."

"Neither did the defensive magic formation set in their own room have any reaction."

Master Candle dragon threw the hair away, swallowed another two mouthfuls of dense smoke, then took out two triangle-shaped jade talismans from around the waists of the two dead bodies, and said, "What was even more humiliating, these were the magic talismans that you, the Ten Sun Country, had spent quite a fortune on and bought from my nephews. Each of these two talisman could neutralize the power of any deadly curse once."

Slightly sighing, he then continued blandly, "I am known as the most powerful magic curses artist in the Magi Palace, and although those nephews of mine are indeed stupid, but they are all ranked only behind me. Nevertheless, the talismans made by them failed to have any reaction when the attack happened, and these two kids were indeed cursed to dead."

Master Candle Dragon then raised his hand, slightly slapped his own face and said, "I am very ashamed, feeling like I have nowhere to put this old face of mine. Therefore, Ying Yunpeng, if you dare to mention even a word about these two poor kids to anyone, I will curse you to death myself.

Chapter 204: Weal and Woe

Master Candle Dragon's words were rude and unreasonable, every single word filled with threat, telling Ying Yunpeng that there was no room for negotiations at all.

Ying Yunpeng was slightly frightened, therefore he hurriedly responded, "No, no, I, Yunpeng wouldn't dare to do that, it's only..."

Master Candle Dragon then raised his head excitedly, then laughed out loud, interrupting Ying Yunpeng's sentence and said, "The kid, who enchanted the deadly curse, has actually made me feel disgraced. Such a talented kid, if I take him in as my student, I can gain my dignity back. Therefore, I have decided, this Taisi, Taisi is his name, right? He will be my last student."

The wrinkled face of Ying Yunpeng turned instantly dark. He dared not to complain or show any anger, and could only continue to look bitterly at Master Candle Dragon. In order to make this old Master Candle Dragon, who had outlived his usefulness, agree to check the dead bodies of his two apprentices and discover the reason of their death, he had asked some influential people to help him, and spent a hell of a fortune. However, this was what he got - Taisi, the biggest suspect, who might have cursed two of his apprentices to death, might become the last student of Master Candle Dragon.

He now felt a great shame that the heavens, which were thriving and greatly influential in ancient times, had now withered. The five gods of the heaven had now all gone, and all those heavenly disciplines that governed all creatures in this world had become symbolic rules. Otherwise, Ying Yunpeng would definitely go up to heaven while kneeling down and he would kowtow to the heaven after each step he took forward. Then he would put Master Candle Dragon to trial in front of the emperor and other gods of the heaven.

What kind of people would do nothing but help the enemy of the one whose money they had accepted?! Ying Yunpeng wanted to cry, but he was too angry to shed any tears, therefore, his entire face began twitching.

Master Candle Dragon let out clouds of thick smoke out, looking at Ying Yunpeng's twisted face, remained silent for quite a while then finally began to talk again.

"Little Bird, I know that you have spent quite an effort for me, an old man, therefore, I will tell you something; you can freely choose to believe my word or not."

Slapping one of the two dried dead bodies, Master Candle Dragon continued blandly, "You should know that the daily security magic formation of the Magi Palace is designed against all evil intentions. Any attack or magic spell that could generate evil intentions would trigger the security magic formation and catch the attention of the elder who was on the security magic formation maintaining shift, before even approaching the Magi Palace."

"The same applies to the talismans made by my nephews. Attacks and spells containing evil intentions would trigger these talismans. That way, these talismans would launch counterattacks, and the magic powers left in the talismans by my nephews could block the deadly curses for the owners of the talismans."

"However, the security magic formation of the Magi Palace didn't have any reaction when the curse happened."

"Nor did these talismans made by my nephews, who have learned about seventy percent of my knowledge."

"Can you understand why?" asked Master Candle Dragon while looking seriously at Ying Yunpeng in the eyes.

Ying Yunpeng looked back at Master Candle Dragon in confusion. He was the best archer in the Magi Palace, and even among the entire Pu Ban city, Ying Yunpeng was known as the

most powerful bow-shooting master. But he knew only a little bit about all kinds of magic spells. As far as magic curses were concerned, he had only learned some elementary knowledge.

Not mentioning powerful Magi like Master Candle Dragon, even Ji Hao was much more powerful than Ying Yunpeng on the subject of curses.

Master Candle Dragon waved his hand carelessly, right after which, the entire small building abruptly turned into gigantic puffs of smoke and dissipated into the air; bright starlight instantly came down.

Pointing his finger at the starry night sky, Master Candle Dragon drew an arc in the air then pointed at where the Magi Palace was located.

"The sun moves across the sky, shining fervidly on the Magi Palace, but the rays of sun won't attract any reaction of the security magic formation. The light of the great sun is fatal to those evil spirits, which means that the sunlight is harmful, however, the security magic formation of the Magi Palace will never be triggered by the sunlight, because the sunlight doesn't have any evil intention in it."

"The light of the stars can cause deadly harm to some evil creatures as well, however, showering under the starlight, the security magic formation will also not have any reaction to the starlight, because the starlight doesn't contain any evil intention."

"All natural rules are somehow fatal to mortal creatures in this world. A mortal has a lifespan, and an end to its life. However, countless old master Magi have run out of life force and passed away deep inside the Magi Palace, did the security magic formation even have any reaction towards that?"

Ying Yunpeng began to quiver slightly, and while looking at Master Candle Dragon, he said word by word, "Taisi's curse..."

Master Candle Dragon let out a smile and responded, "This kind of curse is similar to the natural rules. If it was truly chanted by that kid, Taisi, the power of his curse is exactly the same as the sun shining above the land, the stars sparkling overhead the jungle, the wind blowing across the grassland and the plants withering as time goes by. No magic formations or talismans can contend against this kind of power, and only powers that are equal to natural rules can."

Ying Yunpeng clenched his fists, gritted his teeth and let out a sneer, "The two of them are no one but two orphans brought to the Magi Palace by an elder. If they were not quite talented, they would have died of starvation long ago. How did they...how could they be so powerful?!"

Master Candle Dragon dropped his eyelids, each of his eyelids had over ten layers, and each layer was so thick as if it was carved by the engraver of time.

"In the ancient time, there were extremely powerful people who had godly powers, but they were not gods. They were similar to humans, but not entirely human. Those people were called Jiu You, also Black Nether; some called them Dark Nether as well. They controlled life and death, and were capable of manipulating weal and woe, and were incredibly terrifying beings. The ancestor of my Candle Dragon Clan had fought against the Dark Nether Clan, and had been badly injured by them, falling into a deep sleep. Even now, he has yet to wake up!"

Ying Yunpeng took a deep breath and said, "The Dark Nether Clan, I seem to have heard about them."

Master Candle Dragon said blandly, "Twenty thousand years ago, Chiyou's army launched a surprise attack on Pu Ban City. All powerful human Magi under the command of the King of the humankind were either killed or injured, but the Dark Nether Clan sent out all of their forces to Pu Ban City, helping the humankind. The two great rivers now flowing in the Pu Ban City were created

back then."

"Ah, ah, I-I remember!" Ying Yunpeng's eyes suddenly shone, then yelled out, "But after that great fight, the Dark Nether Clan was thoroughly extinguished. No...I didn't think that..."

Master Candle Dragon threw a sideways look at Ying Yunpeng, while letting out a hidden, yet cold and scornful sneer.

If they were really offspring of the Dark Nether Clan, the Ten Sun Country was not even qualified to fight against them. Only elderly Magi like Master Candle Dragon knew how horrible those Dark Nether Clan's people were... after all, they had lived through that age.

A series of footsteps came over, along with which, a few Ten Sun Country's Maguspriests carried Great Gale Ling, whose body was covered in deep wounds, and rushed over. From a long distance, Great Gale Ling howled out while gasping quickly, "Elder Yunpeng, you have to extract revenge for my brothers! They're dead! Dead! All dead! That bloody fatso, is a, a poison user!!"

Ying Yunpeng instantly rushed up to Great Gale Ling in both shock and anger, grabbed his shoulder and yelled, "What? The people you took are all dead?! All dead?! They have only two Senior Magi, why couldn't you deal with them with a powerful team like that?!"

Neither Ying Yunpeng nor the few Maguspriests had noticed that above Great Gale Ling's head, an extremely dim black spell symbol appeared for one short moment, then disappeared quickly.

The body of the old man, Master Candle Dragon, quivered suddenly and then he leapt abruptly away, while whisking his own butt with his hand. After that, he dashed out of the yard at the highest speed.

"Little Bird, I have a potful of jade whale soup cooking on the stove, I can't let it burn. I have told you what you should know

anyway, you can do whatever you want from now on. Eh, I'm no one but an old, old man... I have nothing to do with this whole thing, nothing at all!"

While yelling, Master Candle Dragon darted rapidly away as if he had seen a ghost. A while later, he stopped at the corner of the street, with his body quivering in excitement.

"The power of Weal and Woe, that's right. This kid, and his sister, they're, they're unspeakably great, talented kids."

Shaking his body, Master Candle Dragon transformed into a gigantic dragon silhouette, and directly drilled into the ground and disappeared.

Chapter 205: Slaves

At the campsite...

The women of the Rong Mountain Clan were busy while their faces were filled with an unswerving look.

The last three arrows that had been shot by Great Gale Ling had killed three hundred and seventy seven warriors of the clan. Seven hundred and eighty five were wounded seriously and twelve hundred and fifty three clansmen had been wounded slightly. If it hadn't been for Yu Mu's poison that had consumed over ninety percent of Great Gale Ling's power, the count of deaths and wounded would be higher by at least a magnitude of ten.

To ordinary people, Senior Magi's powers were as terrifying as gods, devils, and fierce ghosts, completely overwhelming.

Warriors who had fallen on the battlefield were cleaned and laid on piles of firewood orderly. Elder Iron Mountain and a few elderly Maguspriests stood to the side, and began chanting a soul-comforting spell in very low voices.

"Dead warriors, this here is not far away from the Rong Mountain, and you have been so lucky to be able to return home right after you died."

"To protect the surviving clansmen, bless them a safe journey. Protect the children who survived, and bless them so they will grow up safely."

"The Rong Mountain is not far away from here, you should go home soon. Do not fear, do not worry, our clansmen have already raised banners for you. Go home along the same way we had come, the banners will guide you. Rong Mountain is our hometown!"

Occasionally, weeping sounds of children came from the crowd. They were the kids of the killed warriors. However, only a few had cried out, while most of the children whose parents died in the

battle were now gathered around elderly clansmen, silently taking over the armors and picking up the weapons which were left by their parents.

The wounded warriors were lying on the backs of the Curly-Horned Cattles. Shaosi, Taisi, and a group of women from the Rong Mountain Clan were cleaning their wounds and feeding them healing potions. A thick smell of herbal medicines lingered in the air. Now and then, a few badly wounded warriors would cough intensely, while spitting large amounts of blood out.

Yu Mu was staring expressionlessly at the busy campsite, while his upper body laid bare.

This was a damned era, people got used to the abrupt demise of their families. It was so difficult to survive and death was like a dark cloud shrouding everyone in darkness all the time.

Feng Xing gritted his teeth and pulled out arrows from Yu Mu's body one after another. Many arrows had pierced into Yu Mu's fat over two feet deep. Some arrowheads had even punctured his bones and pierced into his marrow.

Every time an arrow was pulled out, a stream of blood would gush out of Yu Mu's body. However, his skin and flesh would then squirm and the wound would heal quickly, all by itself. When the arrows that had sliced his muscles and broken his skin were being pulled out, Yu Mu remained expressionless, as if those injured muscles and skin all belonged to someone else.

Still, the arrowheads that had pierced into his bones were all thickly dotted with sharp thorns. When Feng Xing pulled them out with some force, the bones of Yu Mu clashed against the arrowheads and made a series of ear-piercing noises. Instantly, Yu Mu's entire body tightened and his face became twisted. He gnashed his teeth and began letting out muffled groans.

Sticky perspiration ceaselessly oozed out of Yu Mu's skin. He gasped quickly for cold air, then began talking abruptly.

"Eh, that guy Shaosi released earlier. He had fled away with a life-saving magic talisman. Shouldn't he have arrived at Pu Bu City by now?" Letting out a slight howl, Yu Mu laughed embarrassedly and continued, "I want to swallow some meat so much right now...hmmm...but my pot it's not solid enough. Such a great shame, eh..."

Man Man was squatting quietly beside Yu Mu and Feng Xing, holding the long handles of her pair of hammers in each of her hands, while she was staring at all these people who were busy in the campsite. This was the first time for her to witness something like this; a campsite, which was left in a mess after a surprise attack; women and children, who were very sad about having their lost their families but forcibly choked their tears back, and those kids, who had red and misty eyes, but silently took over the armors and weapons that were left by their fathers or uncles from the hands of the elders with fortitudinous looks.

For some unknown reasons, Man Man, who had always been a careless little girl, now had eyes filled with tears. The following moment, two lines of crystal clear tears gushed out of her eye sockets.

She dropped her hammers, walked slowly up to a woman, took over a clay bowl from her hand, and helped clean wounds of a warrior who had a huge hole cut out on his chest.

"Hm, Man Man." Ji Hao looked at Man Man, and felt as if a sphere of raging flame was going to explode inside his chest.

He thought about what Great Gale Ling had confessed to while begging for his life after being captured. He had been so afraid to die that he even blurted out things he shouldn't have. Thinking about his words, Ji Hao felt anger rushing to his brain like a fierce stream. He patter Mr Crow, who was standing on his shoulder, right after which Mr Crow emitted a resonating caw towards the sky while rising in the air. It stretched his wings, spun his body and expanded to over hundred zhang length. Ji Hao hopped onto

the back of Mr Crow and then transformed into a beam of fiery light. He directly rose into the air, thousands of feet high from up the ground.

Mr Crow transformed into an over hundred zhang long beam and sliced the clouds apart. It darted forward, flying over hundreds of miles within ten minutes.

Hovering in the air for a while, Ji Hao, whose pupils were shining brightly, abruptly let out a great growl and leapt straight down from the back of Mr Crow. While falling rapidly from the air thousands of feet high from above the ground, Ji Hao had also activated his fiery wings, allowing himself to dive down even faster.

Like a blazing shooting star, Ji Hao smashed fiercely into a small valley.

A small troop consisting of hundreds of slave warriors led by tens of Jia Clan warriors,\ were camping in the valley. They hadn't built a bonfire. They were only sitting in a circle on the ground around a luxury tent.

Seeing Ji Hao fall from the sky along a dazzling, bright light, the little group of most powerful Jia Clan warriors amongst the small troop instantly shouted out in both anger and fear. They jumped into the air. Two of them even directly leapt hundreds of feet high and rushed straight towards Ji Hao, intending to bump him in the air.

Ji Hao was diving rapidly down, and could even clearly see the thick beard on the faces of the two Jia Clan warriors.

"I want all of you to die!!" Ji Hao gave a great shout. Along with his shout, the great power stored in the Magus Acupoint of his Dantian transformed into a dragon-like fire stream and roared out. Then it was instantly absorbed by the Yan Spear, which had merged with Ji Hao's right arm as a tattoo.

A one zhang and eight foot long fire stream suddenly spurted out from Ji Hao's right palm. Although with his current Senior Magus level power, he could only activate a slight little bit of the power of the Yan Spear and that too for a short moment, which was so short it might even be ignored. But, currently Ji Hao considered it more than enough.

A gold-red, spear-shaped fire stream spurted out from Ji Hao's palm and instantly released a terrifyingly great heat. The air within tens of miles in radius was immediately shrouded by raging fire, as if the spear-shaped fire stream had set even the sky ablaze. Clouds of flame rolled in the sky, and the armors worn by the two Jia Clan warriors quickly began to burn.

Holding the spear-shaped fire stream, Ji Hao shouted out in anger and thrust the spear forward. After the spearhead had touched the bodies of the two Jia Clan warriors only slightly, the spear-shaped fire stream, which had been activated now, gushed back into Ji Hao's right arm. However, the two Jia Clan warriors were even unable to let any sound out before the beam of bright fiery light gushed from out their chests, burning them into puffs of smoke within a moment.

Ji Hao landed heavily on the ground. Followed by a thunderous boom, the entire three to four zhang long valley was swept across by a powerful fire stream.

After having activated the Yan Spear, Ji Hao had ran out of his internal power. At the moment, he activated his Golden Dan and released the tremendous power contained in it. The power of the Golden Dan soared out in streams, along with which three flying daggers and two flying swords darted out from the storage bag tied around Ji Hao's shoulder, leaving a trail of zhang long beams of cold light, swishing towards the other Jia Clan warriors. Over ten Jia Clan warriors who had been sent up into the air by the shockwave created by Ji Hao when he had landed on the ground, were all sliced by the sharp and fierce beams of cold dagger and

sword light from their necks, and were beheaded before Ji Hao stood back up.

Compared to the Jia Clan warriors of the Blood Tooth, these were only Junior Magus level idiots, which Ji Hao wiped easily out.

"You are from the Black Lock, Great Gale Ling had asked you to come here and take over new slaves, right?" asked Ji Hao while he gave a vicious grin to those slave warriors surrounding him, "But sorry, you are now my slaves. All of you!"

Chapter 206: Vicious Bugs

After burying the warriors who had fallen in the battle, the migrating troops of the Rong Mountain Clan continued with their journey.

A small troop of eight hundred slave warriors, eighteen Jia Clan warriors, and a pig-like, greedy, stupid manager of the small slave-trading group , had all been added to the migrating troops of the Rong Mountain Clan. They now were all slaves. They had been sold to the Rong Mountain Clan by Ji Hao at a very low price - one piece of leather. The tungsten steel mines within the new territory that were very hard to explore were waiting for them.

The migrating troop could move forward at the highest speed for seven hours every single day. The rest of the time was used for resting, cooking and eating. The curly-horned cattle could run for over three-hundred miles within an hour. With this speed, the migrating troop arrived at a thousand-mile round highland area.

Continuing to move forward in the undulant highland area, a mountain range that was covered in thriving jungles was located right in front of the troop. Technically speaking, this mountain range also belonged to the Rong Mountain area, but a grassland transformed from a small fracture had split these two parts of the Rong Mountain apart.

After the surprise attack, the troop hadn't encountered any other serious threats. Ji Hao had broken through to the level of Senior Magus, therefore, the fighting efficiency of the guarding team of the migrating troop had improved largely. On top of that, Mr Crow was hovering over the troop all the time, while being on the lookout for anything from the surrounding areas. It would inform any possible danger, whether from wild beasts or other unknown enemies, well ahead of time. Because of all this, the migrating troop had finally arrived at their destination all safe and sound.

Ji Hao was holding the long, black dagger and rubbed the edge of the dagger slightly with his forefinger. A wisp of black wolf fur mixed with his blood was set ablaze on the dagger's edge.

Accompanied by a swooshing sound, over ten thousand tusked wolves that were a zhang tall rushed out from a valley that was in front of the troop, while howling. A strange blue flame spurted out from their bodies, and gushed ceaselessly from out of their nostrils, jaws, and ears. Some of the weaker wolves were soon burned to death, but the stronger ones survived, rushing madly around the valley and setting those slightly withered bushes and grass in the valley ablaze.

Cold Fire Deadly Curse.

This was one of the elementary-level magic curses of the Gold Crow Clan, and was greatly effective against animal groups which consisted of large quantities of individuals but where each individual had low strength. In the Magi Palace, Ji Hao had learned the advanced-level spells of this Cold Fire Deadly Curse. On the jade slip, which this spell was written on, Ji Hao had found a footnote indicating clearly that the origin of this spell was the Fire Crow Clan of the Southern Wasteland. It also said that if anyone was interested in digging deeper into this spell, they were free to visit the Gold Black Mountain of the Southern Wasteland to find more changes in this spell.

Learning an advanced-level spell that originated from his own clan made Ji Hao gain a deeper understanding of the Magi Palace.

"But, Mr Crow, this one is actually much more useful than the one grandpa Ji Kui had taught me." Ji Hao was staring at those blazing wolves that were rushing all around the valley with narrowed eyes, grinned and said, "Our old Cold Fire Deadly Curse infuriates wild beasts and makes them risk their lives in order to make them fight madly for us. But, this advanced-level spell has been improved by some soul-attack spells, which drives these animals insane. This is why none of these wolves have even tried

to hurt us yet."

Mr Crow let out a caw, leaned his head aside and looked seriously at those wolves, which gradually had become quieter now and had been burned to ashes by the fire.

"When we have an opportunity, we have to send all these spells that our Gold Crow Clan clansmen can use back to our home." Ji Hao calculated carefully and continued, "At least, these spells could improve the battle effectiveness of our Maguspriests by fifty percent... Such a great deal!"

Loud sounds of whipping were coming from behind Ji Hao. The warriors of the Rong Mountain Clan were driving the slaves who were carrying all kinds of tools and were walking in the steaming hot valley. They dug up the soil, deeply burying the ashes of the plants and the bones of the wolves in the ground, after which they cleaned up the remaining plants and bushes that had survived the flames.

More and more clansmen of the Rong Mountain Clan were joining the team that was cleaning the valley. This valley, which was tens of miles long and around three miles wide, would become their new residential area. A thousand muscular warriors had already begun lumbering and lifting rocks, preparing to build a fifty-zhang-wide wall in the only entrance of the valley, in order to shield the entire valley behind it.

After all, this was a totally primitive piece of unexploited land. On the first day, Ji Hao had wiped a group of Tusked-Wolves out, but at night, eight different kinds of wild beasts had secretly followed the bloody scent and came near the valley, attempting to launch surprise attacks on the clansmen of the Rong Mountain in the valley.

Elder Iron Yan, who was in charge of this immigrating troop, accidentally became the first wounded one amongst the entire troop. As a Senior Magus, he was embarrassedly bitten on his toe

by a highly poisonous, three-tailed cat that was hidden under a fallen leaf. Although it was not a big deal, this accident made everyone become more vigilant.

By working together and after spending quite an effort, Ji Hao and his teammates had finally been able to kill the majority of the wild beasts and drive the remaining ones out of the valley. The carcasses of the dead wild beasts had been pulled in the valley, thanks to which the clansmen wouldn't have to worry about food for at least a month. However, these carcasses had also attracted more predators. Although Mr Crow was floating right above the valley while releasing his sense power to frighten the wild animals away, the jungle surrounding the valley never really became quiet.

Every day, new groups of wild beasts would try to approach the valley, and Ji Hao's team would kill huge numbers of them. In the meanwhile, they would also encounter those mysterious creatures that were bred and nourished by nature itself, such as different-sized stonemen and other living creatures who had somehow cultivated themselves into a conscious state.

Every time they encountered such kinds of creatures, Ji Hao, who had been hanging out with all of the mysterious natural creatures since he had been a little kid, would become the main force of coordinating the work.

Those stonemen, who were the kindest, simplest, and most generous, soon accepted the Rong Mountain Clan people, and began to see them as reasonable new neighbours. Ji Hao had used his good old method - bribing these stonemen with vats of delicious booze and made them allies of the Rong Mountain Clan.

Those treemen were easy to deal with as well. After Yu Mu, who had a great amount of defensive fat, blocked an attack that had been launched by three treemen simultaneously, and Man Man had smashed a violent treeman that was obsessed with slaughter into pieces, all the treemen living within a thousand miles around the valley had silently accepted the Rong Mountain Clan clansmen.

As for the other kinds of creatures, such as evil spirits and ghosts, threatened by the powerful and mysterious Magi spells that were performed by Ji Hao, Shaosi, and Taisi, they had all made pacts of peaceful coexistence with the Rong Mountain Clan one after another. From now on, as long as the Rong Mountain Clan didn't initiate attacks on these creatures, they would never go against the Rong Mountain Clan.

With Ji Hao's smooth communication and negotiation skills, a few powerful and influential spirit beasts, which had been cultivating for quite many years, had moved into the newly built altar of the Rong Mountain Clan and became guarding spirits of this new village. All Rong Mountain Clan needed to give them in return was enough amounts of blood from either humankind or beast kind each year.

After the big part of a month had passed, lines of cabins had been built orderly in the valley, along with a new minefield. Elder Iron Yan couldn't wait to gather all the experienced mine workers amongst the troop, locate the tungsten steel, and officially start the exploitation.

Three days later, when the mine had been excavated to a depth of a hundred and fifty zhang, large chunks of tungsten steel ore could be dug out.

Right when everyone was happily and excitedly shouting and cheering, a loud and abrupt howl came from the mine. Followed by the howl, countless human-head-sized black bugs flew out along with a buzzing sound. A few slave warriors, who were working in the mine, didn't have enough time to flee and were easily torn apart by these crazy bugs. After having torn the slave warriors, the bugs swallowed their bodies completely, including the bones.

A great numbers of black bugs gushed out from the entrance of the mine in a formidable array. All of the Rong Mountain Clan clansmen were frightened badly, and rushed hurriedly back above the ground.

Chapter 207: The Nest of Bugs

The mine was now filled with those black bugs, which were gushing out like water during a tide.

Shaosi grabbed Taisi by his neck and pulled him away from the entrance of the mine. The few strong and muscular slave warriors had easily been torn apart by those bugs, judging from which, a bug could probably tear a big half of Taisi's scrawny little body off with a single bite.

Feng Xing took a glance at his bow, shook his head and leapt away as well. There were too many bugs, and he would only be able to kill a few with one shot. If he used arrows of mass destruction, he might destroy the entire mine. If he used only ordinary arrows, he could kill at most a thousand bugs with all his arrows, or maybe even less.

Yu Mu considered it briefly, but then shook his head as well and turned hurriedly around to flee away. He was actually quite willing to throw some of his poison into the mine and easily kill all of those bugs. However, he was good at using poison, but not that good at detoxifying. If he left a highly poisonous mine for the Rong Mountain Clan people, those clansmen probably wouldn't be too happy about it. Therefore, he wisely chose to step back.

Man Man excitedly carried her pair of gigantic hammers, rushed into the mine while laughing and carelessly waving her hammers, smashing those bugs. With every move of hers, she could smash at least ten bugs to death. The carapaces of those bugs were solid and smooth. They would emit huge amounts of fire sparks when clashing against the hammers. The clashes itself sounded like someone was hammering iron blocks.

However, every time that Man Man would hit the bugs slightly harder, the entire mine would shake intensely. Elder Iron Yan was horrified by this. He was afraid that the mine would collapse. That

was why he hurriedly yelled at Man Man, telling her to stop. According to surveys, this spot was located nearest to the main lode. If Man Man destroyed this newly built mine, they would be unable to rebuild it later, because the soil and rock formation underneath it would be shaken loose.

Man Man stopped unwillingly, opened her mouth and spewed out a mouthful of flame.

Gold-red flame swooshed out of her mouth along with countless golden, silvery, and purple light spots, instantly burning over ten thousand bugs, which were filled in the hundreds of zhang long and seven to eight zhang wide mine, to death. The flesh and blood of those bugs were burned into ashes. Only their carapaces were burned into a sticky red liquid, flowing into the ground along the cracks in the rocks.

"This is...high-quality tungsten steel!" yelled Iron Yan, who was bitten by a highly poisonous three-tailed animal earlier on and still had a numb and stiff leg. He abruptly let out a series of screams and said, "These bugs have somehow purified tungsten ore and absorbed tungsten steel, merging the steel with their carapaces! Ah! Man Man, don't burn them at such a high temperature!"

Looking at the streams of sticky red liquid flowing on the ground along the rocks, Iron Yan had gone nearly mad. The carapaces of these bugs were extremely pure tungsten steel that could be directly forged into weapons after undergoing a very simple smelting process. But, now these carapaces had melted and merged with the rocks and soil, making it too difficult to extract the steel again.

Man Man paused for a second, her cherry-like lips curving downwards, then carried her hammers, turning around and walking out of the mine. She had only learned to let out flames as hot and powerful as she could to make sure she struck her enemies down immediately. She had yet to learn how to control the power and the temperature of her flames. Therefore, she had no idea how

to fulfill Iron Yan's requirements.

Ji Hao shook his head and said confidently, "Let me try. Just burn them dead, yeah?"

The melting point of tungsten steel was twice as high as that of ordinary iron. As long as he controlled the power of his flames, keeping it under the melting point of tungsten steel, those carapaces would not melt down. Ji Hao walked calmly into the mine, facing large groups of bugs swooshing towards him. Suddenly, raging gold-red flames spurted out from his body. The flames were not as hot as Man Man's flame and were slightly cooler than the melting point of tungsten steel.

Those black bugs darted towards Ji Hao. However, when they were still a few zhang away from Ji Hao, streams of gold-red flames would gush into their bodies through the cracks on their carapaces. Their carapaces were thick and solid, but inside their bodies, their internal organs were as fragile as that of ordinary insects. Popping sounds were coming continuously from their bodies. Ji Hao waved his arms and brought up a whirlwind, rolling countless empty carapaces out of the mine, which he piled on a flat area hundreds of zhang away from the mine.

Ji Hao walked into the mine step by step. At each step the black bugs in the mine were being burned, after which they would be rolled out by the whirlwind and finally get piled on the flat area.

Yu Mu was standing far away from the mine and stared at Ji Hao in shock. He tried to do the math with his fingers, while murmuring, "Ji Hao was born in the Gold Crow Clan of the Southern Wasteland, who are naturally capable of controlling the power of fire. But, he also is capable of controlling the powers of wind, water, and is able to fly, and move underground. He also has a deep understanding of poisonous medicines as well as magic medicines. He has even forged few rather high-quality mining tools a few days ago, and built an iron cattle to help the Rong Mountain Clan people to transport ores..."

Feng Xing was a bit shocked as well. He licked his own lips and asked, "Is there anything that he is not capable of?"

"Kah!" Yu Mu let out a loud laughter, proudly raised his head and said, "He can't eat as much as I can...and, he certainly can't get pregnant and give birth to a baby!"

Man Man carried her hammers and curiously rushed over, poked hard on Yu Mu's fat belly with her finger and yelled, "Fatso! Can you give birth to a child? Haha, you have such a huge belly! Man Man has seen some women carrying babies in their bellies; their bellies were as big as yours!"

Man Man then raised her tender, petal-like face, staring admiringly at Yu Mu with a pair of sparkling eyes, and asked, "Can you really give birth to babies?"

The chubby face of Yu Mu darkened instantly. He seriously looked at Man Man, and couldn't help but wanting to explain her about the details involved in making babies. However, he quickly predicted the horrible consequence that this might cause - if he taught Man Man this adult stuff, old Zhu Rong would probably come in person to find and crush him.

Therefore, Yu Mu gasped deeply, closed his mouth, then gave Man Man an incomparably warm grin.

Step by step, Ji Hao walked deeper in the mine. Soon, he reached the place where the few slave warriors had been torn apart, which also happened to be first place the bugs had rushed out. He saw a few water-tank-sized holes opened in the main lode, and streams of bugs ceaselessly flying out from those holes.

"Come down, I found the source of these bugs."

Ji Hao waved his hand and let tens of fireballs out, swishing into those dark holes, right after which, large streams of flame spurted out from those holes. Hundreds of empty carapaces of the black bugs had been blown out by the streams of flames, rolling and

crashing on the ground.

Man Man was the first to rush back into the mine, with the others following right behind her.

After Ji Hao walked through the entrance opened up by his fire streams over a distance of two hundred miles, and had burned at least a hundred thousand black bugs to death, the road suddenly widened, and an over ten mile wide underground cave appeared before his eyes.

Countless black bugs gathered in this cave, staring at Ji Hao and the others with their glowing green compound eyes.

The bugs gathered in here were not only human-head-sized. The largest bugs were over a zhang in length. The carapaces of these extra-large bugs seemed to be especially thick and solid, and were decorated with large amounts of complicated and beautiful silver patterns.

Encircled by all these black bugs was a hundred zhang long fat worm that was curled up on the ground. From the tail-end of its body, large amounts of eggs were laid out continuously. These eggs would break immediately after the wind had blown across it, and a grey bug would crawl out from each of the eggs.

Another tens of wild paths were connected to this underground cave, from which, groups of black bug were ceaselessly rushing down like streams of water.

This was obviously a huge underground nest and that gigantic worm was their queen.

Chapter 208: Bug Slave

"So annoying!"

Ji Hao complained, while stretching his arms and standing in front of the other people. His whole body was burning like a human-shaped torch. Countless black bugs opened their jaws, showing their dense and sharp teeth, spurting dark-green saliva, and rushed madly towards Ji Hao.

However, whenever they came at a hundred zhang distance from Ji Hao, their bodies would begin to turn red. If they moved tens of zhang further closer, all their internal organs would be burned, causing their bodies to become solid and empty black carapaces.

A visible muddy sphere of wind appeared behind Feng Xing's body. Within that sphere, a blurred silhouette could be seen twisting madly and intensely. After the appearance of the silhouette, countless tiny streams of whirlwinds blew up from the ground, rolling the empty carapaces up and out of the mine.

Large groups of Rong Mountain Clan people, holding all kinds of tools, happily carried those carapaces away, and piled them orderly up on the ground. Each of them had faces filled with a smile.

The bug queen, which was curled up on the ground, raised its upper body slightly and stared at Ji Hao viciously with all eighteen compound eyes on its small head, while spurting out thick, dark-green liquid from its mouth. The queen then began to scream shrilly. Followed by its voice, even more bugs rushed out from the tens of paths, buzzing and screaming, darting towards Ji Hao, showing no fear of death.

Those large bugs which had over a zhang wide carapaces shook their heavy body and moved slowly towards Ji Hao. When they were still hundreds of zhang away from Ji Hao, these large bugs would shake their wings intensely and emit wisps of black and

silver helix-formed thorns, along with which, their bodies swelled quickly.

These thorns were only a foot long and a-thumb-thick, glowing and especially sharp. Along with high-pitched swishing sounds, these thorns madly darted towards Ji Hao. However, Man Man laughed out loud and leapt up towards Ji Hao. She lifted her pair of hammers up and shielded him behind them. All of those thorns clanged and shattered against her hammers and fell on the ground.

Man Man's hammers were forged by a master craftsman of the Zhu Rong Country with all kinds of natural treasures. Therefore, the naturally-grown thorns of these bugs were unable to do any harm to it.

Elder Iron Yan hurriedly walked up while carefully avoiding the streams of flames spurted out by Ji Hao, then grabbed a black and white thorn. He took out a tiny hammer and hammered hard on that thorn a couple of times, then abruptly yelled out in excitement, "Silver tungsten!! This tungsten steel mine is accompanied by a silver tungsten mine! It is a treasure!! Ten times more valuable than tungsten steel!!"

Iron Yan excitedly raised both of his arms and shouted, "We are blessed by our great ancestors, this silver tungsten mine belongs to our Rong Mountain Clan! With this mine, our Rong Mountain Clan will certainly thrive! Thank our good ancestors, this silver tungsten mine is ours, ours!"

Ji Hao threw a glance at Iron Yan. A mine of silver tungsten was quite rare and hard to find, which was why it was known as a kind of precious mine. Silver tungsten by itself was nothing too special, but after melting it and using it with other metals to form alloys, it would hugely improve the rigidity and the sharpness of such an alloy. For example, if one was to compare two sharp swords that were crafted by one master blacksmith using the same materials, except that one contained a bit of silver tungsten and the other didn't, the one with silver tungsten would be able to cut the other

one into two easily.

In the Southern Wasteland, high-quality weapons that contained silver tungsten were unreasonably expensive. Ji Hao remembered clearly the time when he was three-year-old, a trade caravan passed by their clan, buying all the stored leathers and beast bones that had been saved up by all the people of the Gold Black Mountain for a whole year and a half, with only a hundred silver tungsten weapons. Nearly ten million Gold Black Mountain people had worked very hard for an entire year and a half, saving those leathers and bones bit by bit as their properties, but they traded all that property for only a hundred weapons that contained little bit silver tungsten.

Facing such a valuable mine, Elder Iron Yan's reaction made Ji Hao feel very unpleasant. When the Rong Mountain Clan begged the Magi Palace to help them for this task of immigration and mine exploitation, they never mentioned a word about the possibility that the tungsten steel mine might be accompanied by a silver tungsten mine. Only one small silver tungsten mine was many times more valuable than all three tungsten mines that they had detected so far.

"Silver tungsten mine, hm, really good stuff." Ji Hao turned his head around and looked at Iron Yan, whose face was now filled with happiness, and said blandly, "Elder Iron Yan, in the agreement made by your Rong Mountain Clan and the Magi Palace, I don't think any silver tungsten mine was mentioned, am I right? You had only indicated that this area had three tungsten mines, but never said that this area might also have one or even more silver tungsten mines."

The tiny little eyes on Yu Mu's chubby face, which were squeezed badly by his face, making them look tiny, popped suddenly into the size of a baby's fist. He rolled up his sleeves and yelled out loudly in excitement, "Ji Hao is right! Elder Iron Yan, now you have to raise our wage, raise it, you must raise it!"

"Hold on for a second, hold on!" Iron Yan, who was nearly drowning in excitement and surprise, now was struck by this unexpected situation. He looked at Ji Hao, and seemed not to know how to react, only yelled back at Ji Hao, "But, but we have already..."

Man Man turned around as well, lifting one of her hammers up and heavily stamped it against the ground. The entire mine instantly shook intensely. The ground even began swaying and a few gigantic rocks nearly fell down from above.

"My Abba is the Fire God, Zhu Rong. If Ji Hao wants you to raise the wage, you have to raise the wage! Or I will let my Abba come to talk some sense into you!" said Man Man while proudly holding her head high, "My big brother has said that no one should owe us money!"

Iron Yan paused briefly, and looked at Man Man's tiny body and her huge pair of hammers, which were much bigger than her. The grin on his face suddenly changed into canniness, and he then said, "Not a problem, not a problem at all! Hm, we all should be reasonable, right? We truly didn't know about this silver tungsten mine before, therefore, at first, we should just figure out more information about the mineral resources of this mine."

Ji Hao nodded, letting out even greater streams of flames from his entire body, then walked towards the bug queen, step by step.

The bug queen seemed to be screaming with all of its power. Along with its voice, countless black bugs darted towards Ji Hao. However, none of those bugs managed to even approach Ji Hao. Ji Hao walked slowly up to the bug queen which was way too fat to move, pulled out his black stone dagger, while his own palm tore open. He then quickly drew tens of strange spell symbols on the head of the bug queen with his blood.

The glowing blood slowly seeped into the head of the bug queen, after which, the bug queen began to struggle intensely. About ten

minutes later, the spell symbols drawn by Ji Hao activated the power contained in Ji Hao's blood and left a slave mark on this bug queen's weak soul, turning it into Ji Hao's slave.

The bug queen weakly screamed one last time. Followed by this scream, all those black bugs which were madly attacking Ji Hao earlier abruptly stopped, and lay quietly down on the ground.

Ji Hao patted this huge bug queen, turned around and said to Iron Yan, "This big thing and her children can help you with the mine exploitation work; you can have them. In return, we are not going to be too greedy, we only want a set of powerful defensive magic formations and a portable small-scale battlefort."

A canny light sparked for a short while in Iron Yan's eyes. He was about to open his mouth and say something, when a black bug abruptly darted from a small path with a fist-sized crystal held in its jaws.

Clang!

The crystal fell out from its jaws and loudly clanged against the ground, dragging everyone's attention onto it.

Chapter 209: A Crystal Mine

Ji Hao was the fastest one, even three seconds faster than Feng Xing. He grabbed the crystal in his hand ahead of Elder Iron Yan.

The fist-sized crystal was ivory-white, only half-inch thick, and shaped irregularly, looking like a broken leaf. However, it was incredibly heavy; only a slight piece like this weighed at least five-thousand stones. An ordinary elementary-level Novice Magus could only hold two crystal pieces like this at one time, and that too by using all of his or her power.

Once Ji Hao's palm touched this crystal, he felt an extremely dense stream of power gushing into his body through his palm. The power was pure and warm, and felt like wine that had been in a cellar for over a hundred years. This stream of power had even brought Ji Hao a magical sense of pleasure.

"Highest-grade magic crystal!" said Ji Hao, after letting out a cough.

Ji Hao had seen highest-grade fire-essence crystals back in the Cold Stream Valley within the Southern Wasteland. The fire-essence crystal was actually a small class belonging to the range of fire-power system magic crystals. However, amongst all kinds of magic crystals, the most precious, rare and useful kind was the kind that actually didn't have any natural property. What was meant by this was that the power contained in this kind of magic crystal neither belonged to the fire-power system nor to any other special kind of power system. Nevertheless, no matter which power-system one's power had a natural affinity to, one could use this kind of all-adapting magic crystals to assist one's cultivation. One would be able to absorb power from this kind of magic crystals.

A piece of all-adapting magic crystal was worth ten times more than any other special kind of magic crystal of similar quality and

purity as itself. Moreover, this kind of magic crystal was too rare; one could hardly find it in markets. All powerful clans and organizations were trying as hard as they could to gather more all-adapting crystals. Not a single clan or organization would easily let this kind of precious magic crystal get out of their hands.

"I seemed to remember that silver tungsten mines happened to be accompanied by magic crystal mines," murmured Yu Mu. He had learned quite a lot about all kinds of mines and magic crystals in the Magi Palace, "But, not this kind of highest-grade all-adapting magic crystals. Hmmm, I thought only other few rare kinds of highest grade metal mines could be accompanied by all-adapting magic crystals, isn't it?"

Ji Hao shook his head, weighed this piece of magic crystal in his hand, then let out a deep growl at the bug queen, which had already become his slave.

The black bug that had darted out just now with this piece of magic crystal held in its jaws let out a shrill scream, slightly shook its body, then turned around and quickly flew back into the path where he had come from.

Ji Hao, all his team members, Iron Yan and tens of Rong Mountain Clan clansmen hurriedly followed it, running into the path, and rushing behind the black bug. After rushing along the downward slope for around three hundred miles, the path gradually became thinner and narrow. Obviously, this path was recently made by the black bugs. Having walked another five to six hundred zhang along the narrow path, another cave that was hundred zhang wide appeared in front of everyone. The cave was filled with extremely dense natural power. Milky-white dense fog gathered into streams that looked like real milk and was rotating slowly inside the cave.

A magical white light lit up the entire cave. This light was coming from the human-head-sized pieces of white magic crystals, which were thickly dotted on the stone wall of the cave. Some of

these magic crystals were lighter in color, and some were darker. Apparently, they were different in quality and purity. On the stone wall nearest to the entrance, a piece of magic crystal had a breach on it and the shape of the breach was similar to the smaller piece of magic crystal held in Ji Hao's hand.

Obviously, this piece of magic crystal was accidentally bitten out by the black bug. Right when it had broken it out of the wall, this black bug must have heard the calling of its queen, and therefore, it had hurriedly rushed out with this small piece of magic crystal held within its jaws.

"An entire mine of highest-grade all-adapting magic crystals!" Ji Hao gasped in shock, turned around with a serious look at Iron Yan, and said, "Elder, I think we should really talk about this. This mine might bring your Rong Mountain Clan a destructive disaster, believe it or not!"

The face of Iron Yan twitched intensely. He held his tiny hammer, staggered into the cave, and took a deep breath. The visible dense milky-white fog that had condensed from pure natural power transformed into two small swirls and ceaselessly swished into his body.

The natural power contained in the small piece of magic crystal held in Ji Hao's hand equaled to the total amount of power that a peak-level Junior Magus, who had awakened a hundred meridians, each filled with power, possessed. This meant that this small piece of magic crystal was enough to let an ordinary human warrior smoothly cultivate all the way to the peak Junior Magus level. On top of that, the power contained in such a crystal was extremely pure and dense, which would result in one's cultivation being faster by at least ten times when compared to others.

In this underground cave, over a thousand human-head-sized magic crystals were exposed on the stone wall. Each of them could be cut into more than ten smaller pieces like the one Ji Hao was holding.

Inside the stone wall, most certainly there would be more magic crystals similar to the ones on it, otherwise the natural power inside the cave would not have been able to grow so dense.

Elder Iron Yan stumbled to the middle of the cave. Right in the middle of the cave was an over a zhang wide and foot deep pit. The pit was filled with an unknown kind of white and sticky liquid. Apparently, this kind of white liquid was also an incredibly valuable natural treasure, similar to the earth essence milk. It had condensed from extremely dense natural power and was accumulated naturally through countless years.

It would be a great waste to use this kind of liquid to assist with one's cultivation. Only by using it as a magic medicine ingredient would its real value fully be gained. This kind of magical medicine ingredient was way too precious. It could only be used in the most powerful magical medicines that were capable of bringing even the dead to life.

But, more attractive that the liquid were the nine completely glowing and translucent plants that were in the middle of this shallow pit. These plants looked like little bamboos. They were only a finger thick and a zhang tall. Each plant had nine sections and each section had three white lines, with nine silvery-white, long and slim leaves attached to each side. Without being blown by any wind, these plants were swaying slightly, and those silvery white leaves clanged slightly against each other, letting out jade-clanging-like especially sweet and pleasing sounds.

Ji Hao had already memorized names of all the frequently used herbal medicines, but he couldn't tell the name of these nine magical plants. Obviously, either this kind of a plant hadn't yet been recorded by the Magi Palace, or they were listed as the kind of precious and powerful natural treasures in a greatly valuable and secretive books, which Ji Hao didn't have access to with his current apprentice status.

All in all, everyone present was clearly aware that plants that

could grow deep underground without having been exposed to sunshine and in this kind of liquid, condensed from pure natural power for god knows how many years, could only be described as 'magically precious herbal medicine materials'.

Ji Hao coughed slightly and said, "All kinds of precious and magical natural treasures like this can only be picked with special methods. Otherwise, even a slight mistake would completely ruin these nine magical herbal medicine ingredients. I think we should first get out of here and let the Magi Palace know what we have found here. Then we can discuss about our following moves."

Elder Iron Yan suddenly raised his head and said with a really weird expression, "Why should we let the Magi Palace know? Why? All these belong to our Rong Mountain Clan, these are our property!"

Before he finished his speech, a stream of dim black glow appeared on Iron Yan's muscular arm, from within which, tens of thumb-thick chains suddenly darted out like a multi-headed poisonous snake. Those chains swiftly wrapped around the bodies of Ji Hao and his teammates, firmly locking all of their limbs.

Ji Hao and his teammates hadn't seen this coming. They suddenly felt a great weight had been added on each of them, and all fell on the ground, without being able to move even a bit.

Elder Iron Yan then shouted out harshly, "Seal the mine, all clansmen get out as quickly as you can! Seal the mine! Do not let anyone know what has happened in here! Not even a single soul!"

Chapter 210: Lie Mountain

"Damn it!" cursed Ji Hao angrily.

He truly hadn't thought that Elder Iron Yan would actually attack them. Although he did foresee some bad developments as soon as he had seen this magic crystal mine, he had never thought that, considering the current situation where the Rong Mountain Clan numbered less in Senior Magi, which made them weaker than Ji Hao's team, Elder Iron Yan would choose to attack them. After all, amongst the entire migrating troop of the Rong Mountain Clan, Elder Iron Yan had been the only Senior Magus. Although he knew everything about smithing, he barely fought in real battles.

According to Ji Hao's prediction, if Elder Iron Yan had intentions of having this crystal mine all for himself and his clan, and would decide to act on it, he still would have to wait till their reinforcements had arrived at this location. That would have given Ji Hao plenty of time to have delivered this message to Wulong Yao and other elders of the Magi Palace.

However, Iron Yan had taken action immediately. Furthermore, he was in possession of such a powerful subduing inherited magic treasure hidden inside his body. Those chains had been forged by some unknown kind of metal. Although they had the thickness of only a thumb, they were incredibly heavy. Countless black spell symbols were glowing on each of the chains, releasing a tremendous power. These chains sank deeply into the joints of Ji Hao and his teammates, squeezing till bone-cracking sounds were coming out of their bodies. Even with his extremely solid body, Ji Hao could feel great pain coming from his bones.

Moreover, the power of this chain was added with some extremely effective gravity spell symbols that made this chain, which was already quite heavy, weigh as great as mountains. Ji Hao, Feng Xing and Yu Mu, these three Senior Magi were oppressed severely by the chain and none of them could manage to

even lift their heads up, and could only fall onto the ground in an embarrassed manner.

This was in fact not a big deal to Ji Hao, Feng Xing or Yu Mu, but the poorest one in the team was actually Taisi. Among all the members of the team, Taisi was the weakest one. The chain, which had locked all his joints, suddenly tightened, along with which, he let out a great howl and all of his bones were squeezed, breaking his joints in such a way that his limbs and upper body even twisted in a weird manner.

Taisi fell on the ground with a thud, the whites of his eyeballs showing while black-colored mixed dark-red-colored blood gushed out from the corners of his mouth.

The people of the Rong Mountain Clan were rushing out at their highest speed. The face of Elder Iron Yan had become dark-blue, and his tight and stiff body was quickly moving backwards. It was obvious that he was extremely nervous about having attacked and locked up Ji Hao and his teammates so suddenly.

When he had reached near the entrance of this underground cave, a murderous intent appeared abruptly on his face. All of a sudden, his right arm began to glow and a heavy, thick machete appeared instantly in his hand. The black edge of the machete glistened with huge blood-red light, which clearly indicated that this was a fierce and powerful weapon that had bathed in quite an amount of blood.

While staring at Elder Iron Yan, who was showing such a murderous intent, Ji Hao sneered and said, "How will you explain it to the Magi Palace if you killed us?"

"You were all swallowed by a terrifying beast living around this area in order to rescue our clansmen. We truly appreciate your sacrifice, therefore, we, the Rong Mountain Clan, will give a compensation to the Magi Palace ten times more than the original price," said Iron Yan harshly.

Ji Hao raised his voice and yelled harshly as well, "It won't be that simple! Man Man is the little girl of the Fire God, Zhu Rong. If she dies here, your Rong Mountain Clan will be wiped out completely for sure! So, Elder Iron Yan, just release us, and we will pretend nothing has happened."

Elder Iron Yan gasped deeply, gritted his teeth and said, "I have already locked you up, how can we pretend nothing has happened? This magic crystal mine, with this mine, our Rong Mountain Clan will certainly rise! We will grow hundreds of times more powerful than we are now, within at most a hundred years. And we, as an immigrating branch clan, will be able to return home proudly, even..."

While speaking, Iron Yan hacked his machete hard against the ground, creating large amounts of fire sparks, then growled our hoarsely, "None of our Rong Mountain Clan clansmen have ever forgotten that we originated from the Lie Mountain Clan, we are the offspring of the highest Flame God! We..."

A series of chain clanging sounds interrupted his speech. Man Man, who was also locked firmly by the chain, slowly stood up with her body shaking intensely.

Ji Hao, Yu Mu, Feng Xing, and Shaosi were all locked by chains and couldn't even move a little bit. Man Man however, gritted her little teeth and stood forcibly up with only her physical strength. Dragging the long chain and carrying her pair of hammers, Man Man walked towards Iron Yan, step by step.

"The old one! Man Man thought that you were a good man, but you turned out to be a bad guy. I will tell my Abba to burn your Rong Mountain Clan down!"

"What is the big deal about being the offspring of the Flame God? We are from the Zhu Rong family of the Southern Wasteland. We will never be afraid of your crappy Lie Mountain Flame God!" Man Man continued angrily.

The clanging sounds of the chain never stopped. Man Man carried her hammers, with the chain shockingly wrapped around her body, approaching Elder Iron Yan step by step. The horrible power of the chain pressured her small body so much that each of her steps left a deep footprint in the ground.

Fortunately, the ground of this underground cave was nourished by dense and pure natural power and had become especially solid. Otherwise, if it had been an ordinary type of ground, Man Man would have been directly pressed down onto the ground long ago.

Elder Iron Yan was staring at Man Man. Ever since Man Man had easily destroyed a smithing worktable with her hammer, he had known that this little girl had a monster-like strength. Although he was a Senior Magus, he doubted if he would be able to survive against Man Man's hammers.

Letting out a bitter laugh, Elder Iron Yan turned around and hurriedly left the cave while yelling loudly at his fellow clansmen.

The Rong Mountain Clan clansmen, who had remained behind in the underground cave and were waiting on Elder Iron Yan, quickly took out several magic talismans, sticking them in the ground and wall of the cave. Right after the talismans had been stuck, the ground began to tremble. The rocks and the soil began to move under influence of those powerful magic talismans. Soon, the entrance of the underground cave had been blocked firmly. After blocking the entrance, the talismans affected the stone walls too. Now and then, palm-sized spell symbols would flash across the stone wall, bringing up clouds of smoke that spread quickly out of the underground cave.

These were special magic talismans that were genuinely created by the Rong Mountain Clan and were designed to strengthen mines. These talismans could make ordinary rocks become more solid than before by thousands of times.

Now that those Rong Mountain Clan clansmen had activated

those talismans in the underground cave, the cave instantly turned into a huge cage and locked Ji Hao and his teammates inside. Even if Ji Hao and his teammates could violently break the thick, solid rock layer and get out of this cave, the Rong Mountain Clan people still would gain the time they needed. Not to mention that Ji Hao and his teammates were now locked by Elder Iron Yan's chains. Man Man, who was the only one capable of moving, could only do so with great difficulty and only slightly. It was nearly impossible for her to open up a path that would lead to the outside world single-handedly.

Ji Hao lied on the ground, helplessly let out a bitter grin and said, "I hadn't thought that Elder Iron Yan would really dare to attack us. Ha, it's just a magic crystal mine."

Yu Mu sighed, shook his head and said, "It's not just any ordinary magic crystal mine, but an all-adapting magic crystal mine! No one would be willing to give that away. If the Rong Mountain Clan can really keep this magic crystal mine all to themselves, their clan will certainly rise."

Ji Hao gnashed his teeth and said coldly, "I'm just afraid that they will completely be wiped out even before rising."

Taking a deep breath, a wisp of purple smoke slowly rose from the middle of his eyebrows, along with which, Ji Hao's body gradually transformed into a cloud of mist, then quickly turned into a gust of wind. After about five minutes, Ji Hao got easily rid of the chain and reappeared in the wind.

Kicking the chain away, Ji Hao then looked around at the stone wall.

"We have to get out as soon as possible... Otherwise, we will be in hell of a trouble if the Rong Mountain Clan reinforcements arrive."

Chapter 211: Trapped

The power contained in the Magus Acupoint of his Dantian had been activated and directly gushed into the Yan Spear inside Ji Hao's right arm.

The silhouette of a spear flashed across the air along with which Ji Hao's right hand suddenly moved lightning fast. Followed by a series of chain-clanging sounds, the chains that Elder Iron Yan had used to lock Ji Hao and his teammates firmly and had deeply sunk into their bone joints were broken by the Yan Spear one after another and flew out.

Yu Mu, Feng Xing, Shaosi, and Man Man immediately leapt up. Yu Mu and Feng Xing instantly began to curse ragingly with their faces towards the sealed entrance of the underground cave.

Mr Crow and the two baby Magic Fiery Snakes, which had also been locked by the chain, darted onto Ji Hao's body, spurting out large streams of fire and dense smoke clouds. Especially the two magic fiery snakes, they were born cruel and vicious. At this moment, their pupils were filled with an angry glow. If Iron Yan happened to appear in front of them right now, these two little things - each of whom had grown to a half-foot length - would certainly rush out and tear him into pieces.

"Hu...hu-hurt..." Taisi lied on the ground, his body twisting badly into a weird shape and weakly letting out a groan.

Shaosi walked hurriedly up to Taisi, touched his broken bones with her fingers, and knitted her brows instantly. Taisi was scrawny and weak, far weaker than Ji Hao and the others. Therefore, the chain didn't only break his joints, but also crushed all the bones near those joints. If he had been a Senior Magus, this kind of wound would have recovered within the span of few breaths, but Taisi was only a Junior Magus. Although his power had already reached the peak of the Junior Magus level, his body

was still at the weakest grade amongst all Junior Magi. Coupled with the fact that the life force contained inside his body was helplessly thin, he might need to rest in bed for a few years in order to let those crushed bones recover.

"I have a 'dragon marrow ointment' here," Ji Hao took out a fist-sized black jade bottle and put it on Taisi's chest, then said, "Quick, spread it on Taisi's wounds! In tops, a quarter of an hour and he will have recovered fully. We're still in danger, do not waste any time!"

Shaosi gritted her teeth, threw a glance filled with seriousness and hesitation at Ji Hao, then hurriedly grabbed the jade bottle and pulled a gold-cyan ointment out from the bottle. The sticky ointment emitted a nice fragrance, smelling like a mix of flower and wine. Shaosi then carefully spread the ointment on Taisi's wounds where his bones were crushed.

This 'dragon marrow ointment' of Ji Hao was specially concocted by Wulong Yao himself with his secret magic medicine making skills. Unlike ordinary 'dragon marrow ointment', which usually used marrows of serpents or flood dragons, Ji Hao's ointment was made from the marrow of a real dragons, which were a few evil water dragons killed by Wulong Yao himself. This ointment was truly the highest grade of magic medicine.

Once Shaosi spread this ointment on Taisi's wounds, the ointment transformed into a visible layer of thin mist and quickly wrapped around Taisi's body. A deep roaring-sound of dragon was continuously coming from the mist, along with which, Taisi's hollowed joints began to swell at a visible rate. All the crushed bones moved under the strong effect of the powerful magic ointment and grew back together.

Yu Mu took a careful sniff, then took out a similar-looking black jade bottle, pulled out the plug of the bottle and compared it with Ji Hao's ointment. After that he let out a great sigh and said, "Ji Hao, are you a direct relative of an elder of the Magi Palace? Look

at my 'dragon marrow ointment', it's made from a thousand years old serpent's marrow, and it's already the best grade we can ever get from the Magi Palace. But yours is made from the marrow of a genuine dragon, isn't it?"

Ji Hao let out a grin, nodded and said, "Elder Wulong Yao of the Magi palace, he and an elder of my clan were old friends. So, he gave me quite a few life-saving stuffs, if any of you need anything, just ask..."

Ji Hao didn't want to talk too much about this. He looked at the stone wall, which still had large amounts of glowing spell symbols flashing across it, and said in deep voice, "We have to find a way out before the reinforcements of the Rong Mountain Clan arrives. If we remain stuck here, those people will have countless different way to keep us down here for forever."

Hearing Ji Hao's words, the facial expressions of both Yu Mu and Feng Xing changed abruptly. They instantly stopped discussing the 'dragon marrow ointment', and hurriedly began running around the sealed cave. Feng Xing even pulled out a dagger and threw out nearly a thousand hacks on the stone wall of the cave within a moment, making a series of ear-piercing clashing sounds and creating such a large amount of fire sparks that the entire cave was lit up because of them.

This was an all-adapting magic crystal mine, and the magic crystals that had been found here were of the highest grade. Even a little piece weighed five-thousand stones. So it was reasonable to say that the stones and rocks in this area were also extremely solid, and that it even had thousand times higher density than ordinary metals. Therefore, it was quite difficult to break through these stone walls. On top of that, the Rong Mountain Clan people had sealed the entire cave and strengthened the stone wall with a special magic. The over a thousand hacks that were launched by Feng Xing with his full strength had only left thousands of tiny white marks, which were even smaller than sesames, on the stone

wall, failing to knock even a piece of rock off.

"I can't do this," yelled Feng Xing a bit helplessly, "I can indeed move fast, but I don't have enough strength... we need much greater strength."

"Strength! Man Man has strength!" Man Man shouted happily while dropping one of her hammers and gripping the handle of the other hammer. She then leapt into the air, raised the gigantic hammer and smashed on the sealed entrance of this underground cave with all of her strength. Followed by a thunderous bang, Man Man let out a scream and rebounded back like a rubber ball. She fell on the ground and howled out in pain.

Clouds of smoke mixed with streams of fire instantly filled the entire cave up. After the smoke and fire had dissipated, Ji Hao and the other teammates hurriedly rushed over and checked the sealed entrance. However, they were disappointed to discover that Man Man's hammer had only left a half-inch deep dent on the stone wall.

Although Ji Hao had always been a calm person, he couldn't help but exclaim silently in his head when he saw the shallow dent. This stone wall was formed by a layer of rock that was nourished by extremely dense and pure natural power for over countless years. Coupled with the fact that this cave had been strengthened by the secret strengthening magic of the Rong Mountain Clan, being locked up in this sealed underground cave had become a nearly desperate situation for Ji Hao and his teammates. Everyone was clearly aware how great Man Man's strength actually was and that her hammers were even more powerful than her. But still, a full-strength hammer launched by Man Man could only knock a slight dent into the stone wall. Even if Man Man could really knock a path out of the stone wall bit by bit, the Rong Mountain Clan reinforcements would have arrived long ago by then.

"Oi, I don't' think we need to be too nervous," said Taisi, the majority of whose wounds had just recovered. He sat up with a bit

of difficulty and continued, "The Rong Mountain Clan has only like ten Senior Magi at most, and none of them are good at fighting. Together, we can easily beat them. Just let them come if they dare to."

Ji Hao sighed with a frown, shook his head and said, "You're right. Indeed, we shouldn't be afraid of the Rong Mountain Clan. However, we should be afraid of the Lie Mountain Clan, who might support the Rong Mountain Clan. The Rong Mountain Clan was like a branch clan of the Lie Mountain Family, therefore, I assume, more or less, they are pretty close with some of the clansmen of the Lie Mountain Family."

Once Ji Hao mentioned the Lie Mountain Clan, no one could say another word. Even Man Man remained silent. Although she had yelled that the Zhu Rong family of the Southern Wasteland would never be afraid of the Lie Mountain family, Man Man understood clearly that Emperor Yan, who was a legendary emperor and one of the first three generations of the King of the humankind, was born in the Lie Mountain family.

The Lie Mountain family possessed a high status amongst the entire humankind, equal to the status of the Zhu Rong family of the Southern Wasteland. If the Rong Mountain Clan truly brought over a few powerful Senior Magi from the Lie Mountain family to deal with Ji Hao and his teammates, it wouldn't be possible for Ji Hao and his teammates to win.

An all-adapting magic crystal mine was worth a lot. Many people would take great risks for it which they wouldn't possibly be willing to take ordinarily. Such a valuable mine could also make people take some ridiculous actions, which normally they would never have taken. As the saying goes, even wise people can be blinded by lust for benefits.

Maybe Man Man would survive because of her family background, but Ji Hao and the other teammates wouldn't be that lucky. Even worse, Man Man might be killed and silenced as well.

After all, God knew what the Lie Mountain Family people would do for such a highest-grade, all-adapting magic crystal mine.

"We can't pin our hope on the kindness or hesitation of our enemies," said Ji Hao harshly, "we must figure a way out, as soon as possible!"

Chapter 212: A Magical Space

Shaosi took out a cyan-colored bone cane.

The bone cane was pure green-cyan, as bright as the sky after a storm. She gripped the bone cane and began a Maguspriest dance, executing it gracefully in the underground cave. Along with her movements, all the others felt that a certain kind of magical power started to gather from all the directions towards her.

"Such a shame that it's useless to me." Taisi looked at Shaosi with a sad expression, while crossing his arms in front of his chest and murmuring, "Abba, Amma, please bless us. Let us find something nice and useful. At least, let us find a way out."

Shaosi raised her bone cane high, along with which, a visible white beam of light appeared in the air above the head of all her teammates, except of Taisi and Shaosi herself, then silently darted into their heads. Even the two baby magic fiery snakes had each received a beam of white light.

Yu Mu, Feng Xing, and Man Man didn't know what had happened. They had been running around the underground cave, carefully checking the stone wall, and had yet to sense any effect of Shaosi's magic. However, Ji Hao, who had activated his Gold Crow Pupils fully and was observing this underground cave through the power of the Sky-Opening over and over again, trying to find a slight tear on the stone wall, all of a sudden felt that the completely sealed stone wall in front of him had lit up and somehow began chanting.

For some mysterious reason the stone wall in front of Ji Hao's eyes cracked abruptly similarly to how flowers bloomed. Quite a few little cracks appeared on the stone that had completely consolidated and previously seemed impossible to crack.

In this world, anything and anyone had their weaknesses. Not a single thing or being was perfect.

Murmuring according to the instruction of the mysterious man, Ji Hao focused his eyes on a little crack on the stone wall that was where the concentration of exposed magic crystals had been the highest and was right in front of the sealed entrance. The following moment, he pulled his black dagger out and threw a hack with his full strength at the crack.

Because it being an inherited magic treasure of the Gold Crow Clan, the black dagger let out a slight and shrill screaming-like sound. As a Senior Magus, a Sky-Opening launched by Ji Hao was now ten times more powerful than it had been before. But, the counterforce of the Sky-Opening had increased by ten times too. Although the black dagger was made from extremely precious materials and had been enchanted with incredibly powerful spells and spell symbols, it still got damaged by the counterforce.

Man Man, Shaosi, and the others were only able to see an arc beam of light trailing behind the dagger and flashing across the sky. Right after that, the stone wall trembled slightly, and a one zhang tall and five foot wide crack appeared on the stone wall.

A series of cracking sound started to come from the wall. The power of Sky-Opening was rupturing the wall continuously. A tunnel, pitched at a 45 degrees angle, was opened up, extending further along the cracking sound of the wall. Huge amounts of rocks and magic crystals were falling down from above.

The spell symbols that were released from the talismans, which were activated by the Rong Mountain Clan people to strengthen the stone wall and had been flashing across the stone wall, began to shatter. But, the natural power in this underground cave was extremely rich and pure; each spell symbol that had shattered started to recover immediately by nourishing it with the dense natural power. Gradually, large amounts of spell symbols gathered around the entrance of the tunnel, along with which the stone wall began moving, attempting to reseal the tunnel.

"Come! Follow me! All of you!" shouted Ji Hao loudly, "If you

don't want to be trapped in here and be disposed by the Rong Mountain Clan people later, follow me!"

A fierce wind that was transformed from pure and dense natural power blew out from the tunnel. The natural power contained in the gust of wind was extremely rich and pure, just like wine that had been cellared perfectly for thousands of years, only smelling which would make people feel tipsy. After letting out the shout to the others, Ji Hao rushed into the tunnel as the first one while madly waving his black dagger, throwing out arc light beams one after another, slicing those spell symbols which were moving continuously towards the tunnel into clouds of smoke and fire sparks.

Man Man carried her pair of hammers and walked into the tunnel while swaying her body, right behind Ji Hao. She always trusted Ji Hao without any hesitations.

Shaosi grabbed Taisi's shoulder, carried him like a sack of straw, and walked into the tunnel as well. At the same time, she turned her head around and said to Yu Mu and Feng Xing, "This is your luckiest moment, you can freely pick the nine magical herbs, it should be fine."

Feng Xing and Yu Mu quickly glanced at each other, then simultaneously let a shrill shout out. Yu Mu immediately grabbed his giant pot, which was shot broken earlier and roughly repaired by himself. The pot now could barely contain liquid without leaking. He used all his strength and scooped into the small milky white liquid pool. He scooped all the nine magical plants along with the entire pool of milky white liquid that had been condensed from the natural essence power into his pot. After that, he hurriedly thrust his pot into the storage bag tied around his waist. In a great rush, Yu Mu and Feng Xing then ran side by side into the tunnel.

Along with a heavy thud, Yu Mu's huge body barely squeezed into the tunnel, but Feng Xing, who had rushed side by side with him,

was pushed aside by Yu Mu's body. He bumped his head against the stone wall quite embarrassedly.

Feng Xing growled out angrily. Hearing Feng Xing, Yu Mu stepped back out of the tunnel regretting rushing first and let Feng Xing in first. He then squeezed his body with some difficulty into the tunnel again. This tunnel opened by Ji Hao was only around a zhang wide and less than three meters tall, therefore, Yu Mu, who was taller than three meters, had to bend down and shrink his body, moving barely in the tunnel.

Countless spell symbols re-emerged on the stone wall. Along with slight sounds of rock movements, the stone wall began squirming and resealed the entrance of this tunnel right behind Yu Mu's body, without leaving even a single crack on the wall.

Ji Hao rushed downwards as fast as he could, following the tunnel while holding the black dagger. The natural power of the wind blew continuously against his body. The further he moved, the stronger the wind became. Ji Hao felt as if he returned to the time he had first arrived at the Midland from the void. Similar to now, he had to move against the fierce wind transformed from great natural power, step by step with extremely difficulty.

The natural power wind flow clashed against Ji Hao's body and let out fire sparks. The tight armor worn by Ji Hao activated automatically, releasing a bright layer of clear light and wrapped Ji Hao's body up to prevent him from being crushed by the tremendous natural power contained in the wind.

Not long after that, the wind became way too strong. Ji Hao couldn't even move forward anymore. He failed to fend against the strong natural power wind with his own power. Man Man growled out, raised her pair of gigantic hammers and pressed them against Ji Hao's back. She took advantage of this 45 degrees tilted tunnel and added with her terrifyingly great strength she helped to keep Ji Hao moving forward.

Shaosi pressed her hand on Man Man's back, then Yu Mu and Feng Xing followed it up from behind. At last, even Mr Crow had joined. He stretched his wings and laid all his strength on Ji Hao's body. With all of their powers combined, Ji Hao moved downwards along with the tunnel, still with quite some difficulty, against the horribly great natural power wind, which grew stronger and stronger, for over a thousand miles, finally reaching the end of the tunnel.

Even Ji Hao was shocked of himself that he had just opened such a long tunnel by a single Sky-Opening. Not that his power was truly this great, but when he had launched the Sky-Opening earlier with his black dagger, he had accidentally broken a certain spot in that stone wall, which allowed him to coincidentally open up this tunnel, which had existed behind that stone wall before.

A hazy layer of light blocked the exit of the tunnel, through which, one could see streams of natural power twisting and rolling in swirls.

Ji Hao gritted his teeth, turned around and took a glance at the tunnel, which had already been resealed for over hundreds of zhang behind them, then rushed into the layer of light. Followed by a loud boom, all the others rushed into the light as well. Once they stepped out of the tunnel through the layer of light, their bodies became light and floated up in the air.

The natural power contained in this space was way too dense. It could even hold human bodies up like the buoyant force of the water, keeping them floating in the air.

This was another underground cave that had a radius of miles. On the stone wall of this underground cave were countless thumb-sized holes that were spurting dense and pure, visible streams of natural power into the underground cave.

Right the middle of this underground cave, a stalagmite and a stalactite were located on the ground and the roof, only tens of

zhang apart from each other. Right between the stalagmite and the stalactite, a stone sword was floating silently in the air. The stone sword looked extremely dignified, majestic, and had a squared shape and an ancient style. Every single moment this sword would absorb a tremendously great amount of natural power from the air.

Chapter 213: A Holy Weapon

"This is..."

Ji Hao and the others floated aside the gigantic stalactite, staring at those natural formed, complicated dragon and phoenix like spell symbols, and couldn't help but all be stunned.

Both the stalagmite and the stalactite were tens of zhang long and a few zhang wide. The stalagmite had grown straight towards the sky, while the stalactite was hanging on the roof, pointing at the ground. The stalagmite was releasing a special kind of power that had a similar sense as an elegant phoenix, flying and dancing gracefully in the air. The power released by the stalagmite sensed like that of a fearless dragon that was powerful enough to tear the entire world apart. The power of the stalactite felt gentle and soft, while the power if the stalagmite felt strong and fierce. Combined, the two of them gave off a magical sense that would make people emotional towards the nature of heaven and earth and was difficult to put into words.

If someone would look closer, he would discover an extremely thin beam of light being released from the tips of both the stalactite and stalagmite, which was silently absorbed by the stone sword that was floating right between both of them.

The length of the sword was eight foot and it was crafted in an ancient style. It had a square form with straight lines and angles, without any unnecessarily complicated decorations. The color of the sword was snow-white, similar to the color of the streams of natural power. Not even the faintest beam of light was released from the sword, but the sword did seem to contain the brightest and most dazzling light of the world that was waiting to be activated and release its glow.

In the Southern Wasteland, knowledge regarding naturally-formed, magical and powerful objects was scarce. Ji Hao had

learned the classifications of all kinds of treasures of this world only after joining the Magi Palace from out of a few books that he had read in his free time.

Some treasures had existed in the universe even before the creation of this world, called 'primordial natural treasures' by people. Those were capable of breaking all kinds of magic and destroying all kinds of evilness. Not a single person or thing could withstand its power, which was great enough to break the void and rebuild the primordial universe. Killing with such treasures would not have any retribution of fate. These kinds of treasures were the most precious and rare among all the treasures in the world.

Then there were some treasures that had formed naturally at the time the world was being created. These treasures that were born alongside the world had received a part of the power of the newly created world. These kinds of treasures were called the 'world-accompanying spirit treasures'. These treasures, created alongside the world, had a part of the world in them and were connected to the world. They shared their destiny with the world. Killing with these kinds of treasures would also have no retribution of fate. Out of these treasures, the ones with the highest grade were comparable in power to the 'primordial natural treasures'.

After the creation of this world, the natural laws and power gradually formed from the chaos. As time passed, the primitive natural powers merged with the first batch of crafted objects, becoming the 'natural-crafted magic treasures'. The set of Black Underworld Water Manipulating Banners of the Water Ape Clan and the Southern Spirit Pot of Zhu Rong Tonggong were 'natural-crafted magic treasures'. Killing with these kind of treasures would lead to retribution of fate, but because these kind of treasures were very powerful, ordinary retribution would not be able to do any harm or damage to them. Although the power of the 'natural-crafted magic treasures' was not as great as that of the 'primordial natural treasures' or the 'world-accompanying spirit treasures',

they still were powerful enough to rule a certain part of the world. Therefore, every powerful clan or organization had such a treasure to solidify their status and overwhelm others.

After the newly-created world had become stable, Yin and Yang energies emerged from this world and the five nature elements divided. Therefore, following the natural laws of the world, different types of magical objects had formed naturally in special locations, where they had been nourished by the natural power. These magical objects were called 'natural holy weapons'. Most of these were hidden in underground caves that had gathered an amazing amount of natural power and were difficult to reach for people. These kinds of treasures were condensed by pure natural power bit by bit over countless years. If one was able to find a 'natural holy weapon' and managed to manipulate it, one would be able to rule a piece of land all on his or her own using its power.

All the above mentioned four kinds of treasures were formed and nourished by natural power and were unspeakably powerful. They could cause infinitely great effects.

The magic treasures and tools that were crafted by Maguspriests who used all kinds of precious materials were ranked below these four kinds of treasures. These crafted magic treasures normally had many limitations and were less powerful by a great margin. They couldn't be even mentioned in the same breath as those naturally-formed magic treasures.

While Ji Hao was trying to recall all he had read about the different kinds of magic treasures, he raised his voice and told what he knew about naturally-formed magic treasures to his teammates.

"My brothers and sisters, this is without a doubt a 'natural holy weapon'. With a simple offering ceremony and some practice any of us can freely manipulate this sword. It will be even more convenient than manipulating inherited magic treasures of our own clans. The difference is that this sword will be far more

powerful than our own inherited magic treasures. Along with the improvement of our own powers, we will be able to release more and more of the power contained in this sword."

"We can't leave such a powerful weapon to others. I suggest each of us should take a shot and see which one of us will be chosen by this sword, what do you think?"

Ji Hao looked at the others with a smile and said. Although this 'natural holy weapon' was quite alluring, Ji Hao wasn't confused by its great allure at all. He remembered clearly from a book he had read in the Magi Palace that indicated that all 'natural holy weapons' were spiritual and magical subjects. Even if one could see one, the holy weapon might not be willing to accept the person as its owner.

In order to gain a 'natural holy weapon' what one needed was not only luck but also the right destiny. If one intended to be rash and rush up to take the holy weapon, they might end up with empty hands, or worse, even be harmed by its great power.

Man Man looked at the stone sword, hurriedly shook her head and said, "Eh? A sword? Man Man don't like such kind of light weapons."

She then clanged her hammers hard against each other and continued proudly, "Man Man's hammers are great! Man Man loves her hammers!"

Feng Xing was struggling and looked at the stone sword for quite a long while, then he took his roughly-crafted and simple-shaped longbow out, turned around and began complaining, "Why is it not a bow? But...even if it was a bow, I couldn't bear to abandon this inherited precious treasure. This bow belonged to my ancestor, and is probably not less powerful than that natural-crafted holy weapon...I, I, I'm not going to try it, I have decided!"

Yu Mu was as struggling as well, same as Feng Xing. He rubbed the layers of fat on his waist, patted his own head, then lowered his

head and looked at his over three meters tall gigantic body, then let out a big sigh helplessly, and turned around.

"Next time, if a natural crafted pot appears right in front of us, none of you should try but me. But a sword...look, look at me! Do I look like a sword person? What should I do with that sword? Cut meat? The edge of this sword is way too straight without even a slight bit of arc, probably less useful than a real knife to me! Well, then I can only use it to chop wood! Forget it, forget it, it's just not my type."

Taisi and Shaosi didn't even take a glance at that stone sword.

Taisi raised his bony little arm, grinned embarrassedly and asked, "Ji Hao, look at me, do you think I am even capable of holding it up?"

Looking at scrawny, poor little Taisi, Ji Hao nodded. Yeah, that was quite true, everyone of this team was capable of manipulating this sword, everyone except Taisi.

As for Shaosi, magical white light gradually appeared in her eyes. She looked seriously at Ji Hao and said, "This is your destiny, Ji Hao, I can see it clearly. This stone sword has been expecting you for many, many years...one day, its name will be known by the entire world because of you, this is..."

Before Shaosi had finished her prediction-like speech, her eyeballs suddenly rolled up, showing the whites of her eyes. At the same time she abruptly spurted out a mouthful of blood for over a distance of seven to eight meters.

Ji Hao glanced at Shaosi in shock. He then nodded, and said frankly, "In that case, this time, I will take this sword. Next time, if we encounter more treasures like this, I will never step in... that should be your destinies."

Taking a deep breath, Ji Hao moved slowly towards the stone sword. When he was still a hundred zhang away from the sword,

he politely and solemnly cupped his hands, and bowed to the stone sword.

The stone sword shook slightly, along with which, a beam of white light darted out from the sword and circled around Ji Hao. After that, the stone sword disappeared suddenly. Inside Ji Hao's spiritual space, a dimly glowing longsword emerged silently.

The following moment, the stalagmite and stalactite exploded simultaneously, a silhouette of a dragon and a silhouette of a phoenix instantly rose into the air, circling rapidly around Ji Hao and his teammates. Led by the dragon and the phoenix, great streams of natural power began surging into all of their bodies.

Chapter 214: Body Strengthening

The power of the dragon's silhouette was great and fierce while the power of the phoenix' silhouette was gentle and light. The powers of both the dragon and phoenix silhouettes transformed into gusts of wind and blew quickly through all the meridians of all the members of Ji Hao's team.

They eyes of Yu Mu, Feng Xing, Taisi and Shaosi popped simultaneously out, showing surprised yet unbelieving smiles. When the powers of dragon and phoenix silhouettes swept through their bodies, those blocked humankind meridians that they were born with, which were said to be useless, had slowly and silently awakened inside their bodies. It was similar to how mirrors that had been covered with dust for centuries were wiped clean suddenly. Those faint meridians were gradually starting to glow how they should have glowed long ago.

They were able to sense clearly that slight wisps of natural power were emerging from those thin meridians, of which the power had never been touched before. Those wisps of power were way too faint to the point that they could even be ignored. Nevertheless, natural power did emerge from those meridians, which meant that from this point on they could cultivate those meridians. They could strengthen and broaden them and could store more power into them, in order to allow their Acupoints to contain more and greater power when awakening them in the future.

When Senior Magi awakened their Magus Acupoints, the power of each Acupoint would be based on the total amount of power contained in all their meridians. The Magus Acupoint would absorb all that power during its first awakening. The more power it could absorb during its first awakening, the greater the potential of that Acupoint would be. Therefore, every single extra meridian able to store power would make a Senior Magus more powerful that his peers with the same amount of Acupoints but less

meridians.

Just as it was back in the Southern Wasteland!

The reason why the Bi Fang Clan was much more powerful than the Gold Crow Clan was that their inheritance system, the bloodline of the Bi Fang, reserved nearly thousand active meridians. Compared to them, the bloodline of the Gold Crow only reserved a few hundreds of active meridians. That was why not only the Senior Magi of the Gold Crow Clan were less powerful than the Senior Magi of the Bi Fang Clan, but they were also with tens or even hundreds of times less potential to break through the level of Magus King compared to the Senior Magi of the Bi Fang Clan.

At this moment, the meridians inside the bodies of Ji Hao's teammates had been slowly waking up one after another. The speed of their wakening was extremely slow, yet quite stable and gentle.

One meridian, two meridians, three meridians...ten meridians, twenty meridians, thirty meridians...a hundred meridians, two hundred meridians, three-hundred meridians...

The power of both the dragon power and phoenix here were condensed from pure natural power, which was the purest power and the one with the most essence of the world. They were especially connected with this location. This kind of power was gentle and clean, without any impurity. Especially that, since the dragon and phoenix power had naturally crafted the holy weapon, it was easy to figure out how great and creative these two powers actually were.

To this geographical area, these two creative powers were too weak even to be mentioned. However, for these few kids, these two powers were more than enough to thoroughly remold their bodies and lay a perfect body condition for each of them. Because of this foundation, each of them would certainly grow into magnificently

powerful Magi and Maguspriests.

Mr Crow cawed slightly, and laid leisurely on Ji Hao's shoulder, silently feeling the strengthening of its body that the dragon and phoenix power had caused for it. This kind of creative power was extremely beneficial to Mr Crow as well. On his head, tens of feathers had gained a layer of golden color. Obviously, the Gold Crow bloodline contained in his body had been purifying and improving.

The two tiny little magic fiery snakes were hanging on Ji Hao's earlobes with straightened bodies and were slightly waving their tails. Their eyeballs were sparking brightly. Clearly they were enjoying very much as well. Spots of dim lights emerged on their heads and began spreading towards their tails, along with which, their bodies started to grow slowly.

Only Man Man had a pure god's bloodline and without a single humankind meridian in her body. Therefore, the power of the dragon and the phoenix were only able to nourish her body, making her body even more solid and powerful. Apart from that, there was nothing beneficial that Man Man could gain from these two kinds of power.

As for Ji Hao, he had already completely awakened all his 129600 meridians, therefore, he didn't need the powers of the dragon and the phoenix to awaken his humankind meridians for him. However, these two powers were great and creative after all. These two powers gushed gently into his body, filling his meridians up and nourishing even the faintest tips of his meridians. Within half an hour, his meridians had broadened by thirty percent compared to how they had been previously, thanks to the powers of the dragon and the phoenix. After that, great streams of natural energy swooshed abruptly through his body like water during tide. The natural power immediately transformed into his internal energy, sweeping through the meridians across his whole body in all directions. Magus Acupoints were lighting up one after another

on Ji Hao's chest and stomach. Tens of them had even reached the threshold to awakening. All Ji Hao needed to do was spend a little thought and these Magus Acupoints could be broken through and awakened by these great streams of power.

Not only Ji Hao, but the bodies of Taisi, Shaosi, Yu Mu, and Feng Xing, even Mr Crow had different amounts of light spots lighting up. Every light spot was shining either dimly or brightly and were on the point of awakening.

Ji Hao observed the others with his spiritual power and was shocked to discover that Taisi was the one who had gotten the most benefits from this process of body strengthening... probably because his body was the worst amongst all the team members. A whole three-thousand brand-new meridians had been awakened inside his body.

The other three team members had different amounts of new meridians awakened; the one gaining the least had still gained around two thousand new meridians.

Great streams of power were flushing madly inside their bodies as well, continuously striking on septums that had grown naturally outside their Magus Acupoints.

Soon, the first thunderous boom came from Ji Hao's body. The power contained in his meridians was the greatest among all the team members. Therefore, he was the first to awaken a Magus Acupoint. This time, under his precise control, he had awakened the most important Magus Acupoint located beside his heart.

A sphere of red light emerged on Ji Hao's chest that seemed like a blazing flame. All of Ji Hao's blood and power swooshed briefly into the Magus Acupoint of his heart. Then they transformed into drops of dense and sticky concentrated blood, and flowed quickly to the rest of his body. The new blood was heavier and more powerful. Every drop of this new blood could contain more bloodline power. This kind of blood was the key to the great and

nearly great life force of Senior Magi that allowed them to recover within a moment from all kinds of serious injuries during battle.

After the Magus Acupoint of his heart, Ji Hao awakened the two important Magus Acupoints located in his lungs, along with which, Ji Hao sensed that the capacity of his lungs had improved by hundreds of times. He could now bring up a fierce gust of wind from the air around his body by only taking a deep breath.

In order to be powerful enough to even lift up mountains and fill up oceans, or manipulate air streams by breathing and remain athletic in battles for as long as needed, a pair of strong and prolific lungs, which could discharge waste gas, breath in fresh air and continuously provide life force to the human body, were highly necessary.

After lungs, were kidneys, liver, spleen...Ji Hao was very cautious. He was awakening the most important Magus Acupoints located at his internal organs one after another, using the knowledge regarding the human body he had gained in his previous life. Doing so, he improved the functioning of his internal organs largely. Also, he strengthened his somatic power and laid a better foundation for his future cultivation.

Gradually, nine Magus Acupoints let out eye-piercing light on Ji Hao's chest and stomach. With all the powers of the phoenix and dragon that had gushed into Ji Hao's body earlier, he had only been able to barely open nine Magus Acupoints.

Apart from Yu Mu and Feng Xing, who had broken into the level of Senior Magus few years ago, Taisi and Shaosi were a sharp contrast to Ji Hao. Each of them had lit up hundreds of Magus Acupoints in a row, bright light spots ceaselessly sparkling on their bodies, while great amounts of power swooshed into and out of those Magus Acupoints. It seemed quite terrifying.

Ji Hao had absorbed much more amounts of natural powers than the two of them, by over ten times, but he had only awakened nine

new Magus Acupoints. This clearly showed how much better Ji Hao's foundation was compared to the two of them.

Fierce gusts of wind transformed from great natural power that had been blowing around inside the underground cave had gradually quietened down. The powers of the dragon and the phoenix had been consumed as well.

Letting out the last mouthful of waste air, Ji Hao shouted out loudly. Followed by his voice, a silhouette of the stone sword spurted out from the middle of his eyebrows, transformed into a white beam of light along with his body, then struck hard on a corner of this underground cave.

The stone wall collapsed instantly along with a series of muffled booms. Surprisingly, what was located behind the collapsed stonewall was a rapidly flowing underground river.

Chapter 215: Overall Situation

Muddy river water was flowing, silvery fishes were chasing each other in the water, and large groups of white water birds left streams of dim shadows on the surface of the water.

A roaring river was flowing rapidly between the mountains. Not a single human could be seen in the surrounding area. There was only a group of white apes, which were fooling around while letting high-pitched growls from time to time.

A vertical water column rose abruptly from the river and swooshed into the air hundreds of zhang high from the ground. Ji Hao shattered the water column with a punch, then leapt up from the exit of the underground river with his body steaming. He landed on the ground, shook his body slightly then knelt on one knee, gasping quickly for air.

A few of the fiercest white apes screamed instantly at Ji Hao, carried their heavy and huge wooden sticks and rushed towards Ji Hao.

Ji Hao sneered and raised his head abruptly. He stared ferociously at these fat white apes with a pair of brightly glowing Gold Crow pupils. Those few white apes howled out, dropped their sticks and turned around, fleeing hurriedly away, while screaming loudly. Followed by their voices, all ten thousand different-aged white apes quickly dropped the fruits, flowers, leaves, and all kinds of objects they were holding in their hands in panic and fled away within the blink of an eye, without leaving even a trace.

Ji Hao stood slowly back up while continuing to gasp for air. He sensed a stabbing pain on his face. He carelessly wiped his face and grabbed a few fist-sized crabs that had steel-hard shells off from his face and threw them back into the river.

The underground river had continued to surge turbulently over a distance of ten thousand miles before it finally surfaced and

merged with this great river. Fortunately, Ji Hao and his teammates hadn't encountered any great danger when drifting along the underground river. The only things they bumped into were a few water snakes, a school of carnivorous fishes and a few unknown strange-looking water animals. No one had been hurt during the journey.

The only trouble had been that they had to hold their breath while drifting along the rapidly flowing underground river that stretched for over ten thousand miles, a journey that had taken them an entire four days and five nights. Ji Hao was so short on oxygen that his eyeballs had turned green. If it hadn't been for the rule of the Magi Palace that prohibited strictly acts of changing or breaking the geographical features of the Midland, Ji Hao would have used his punch and broken through the thick layer of rock above the underground river and leapt directly out of the underground long ago.

"Ah...atishoo!" Flooded by a muffled swooshing sound, Man Man threw both her hammers straight out of the hundreds of meters deepriver, then floated up while sneezing continuously. With eyeballs that showed the whites, Man Man vomited a few mouthfuls of water. She then dog-paddled with some difficulty to the river shore and struggled up onto the ground. Once there, she thudded heavily against the ground, unable to move any longer, not even for a little bit.

"Eh? Man Man? I didn't know that you could actually swim!" said Ji Hao surprised, while squatting beside Man Man. He held her in his arms and fed her a few round pills that could quickly replenish consumed power.

"Eh? Swim? Sure!" When speaking about swimming Man Man instantly got excited. She sat up from Ji Hao's arm, laughed out loud and continued loudly, "My big brother had lots of dragon fishes in his lake. I would often jump down into the lake and catch those fishes, then grill and eat them, since I was three years old!

That's when I learned how to swim!"

For some unknown reason, Ji Hao silently felt sorry for Zhu Rong Tonggong's dragon fishes for quite a while. While Ji Hao and Man Man were talking, four heads popped up from out the river, one after another.

Feng Xing and Yu Mu leapt onto the ground, while Shaosi held Taisi's hair in her hand, dragging him up to the ground as if she was dragging a dead body, then carelessly threw him aside. She conveniently added a heavy kick onto his stomach.

"B...blood sister..." Looking at Shaosi's brutal action, Yu Mu couldn't help but quiver.

"If I was her, I would directly kick this guy to death...this guy is just a humiliation to our entire male population!" Unlike Yu Mu, Feng Xing seemed to be anxious to see the world in disorder, "He was even worse than Man Man! Got choked by the river water and fainted only half an hour after we had jumped into the river. If Ji Hao hadn't been sharing air with him all the way..."

Yu Mu and Feng Xing quivered simultaneously. They turned towards Ji Hao, let out a few embarrassed waves of laughter and asked, "Ji Hao, how did it felt like, to press your lips against...another man's lips?"

The face of Ji Hao's darkened instantly. Damn you Taisi, he thought. Taisi had been a complete burden under the water. Every half an hour, Ji Hao, as the one who possessed the greatest lungs capacity, had to share some of his air with him to keep him alive. Fortunately, Ji Hao had been cultivating on the [Mantra Dan with Nine Secret Words] that allowed him to gain enough air from underwater. Otherwise, Taisi would have already died from suffocation in the underground river.

"Some of the Magi Palace's rules are so unreasonable." Ji Hao changed the topic as soon as he could and said, "We could have broken the rock-layer and jumped out from the underground river

three days ago. We had already left the magic crystal mine. Back then, the layer of rock had not been as solid."

"That is not a rule of the Magi Palace. The prohibition is made by the King of the humankind himself," sighed Yu Mu and said, "Actually this prohibition is quite reasonable. Imagine, if everyone is allowed to freely change the geographical features of the Midland, the Midland might have been destroyed already."

Ji Hao let out a sneer, then took out a few bottles of pills and handed them to his teammates. After that, he hurriedly took out a jade talisman and flicked it with his finger. Along his movement, the jade talisman was immediately set ablaze and a straight wisp of cyan smoke quickly rose into the air. The jade talisman burned rapidly, becoming smaller and smaller.

Ji Hao turned hurriedly towards the smoke and stated what had happened to his team during the past few days. After having finished speaking, he flicked his fingers again. Followed with Ji Hao's movements, the jade talisman turned completely into a wisp of smoke and rose into the air. Not long after that, the wisp of smoke transformed into an arrow, along with a horribly loud cracking sound, then flew swiftly away, going towards the Magi Palace.

This talisman was a message to Si Wen Ming. Right after that, Ji Hao took out a few more talismans and delivered messages to Wulong Yao and other few master Magi tutors who were quite close to him.

Staring at the wisps of cyan smoke that rose straight into the air, Yu Mu sighed abruptly and murmured, "Hmm, just wondering whether they will consider us successful or having failed with regards to this task. And how much compensation will we get from the Rong Mountain Clan."

After having sent out the messages, Ji Hao held Taisi up, and pressed his palm on the back of Taisi. He was gathering natural

power and life force from the surrounding jungle area with a secret magic and trying to replenish Taisi's lost life force. Hearing Yu Mu's murmurs, Ji Hao raised his head and asked with a slight shock, "What do you mean? How could they possibly have a doubt? We are the right side in this unexpected event, aren't we?"

Standing far away from the others, Feng Xing let out a long sigh and said, "Ji Hao, is this the first time that you have taken a task from the Magi Palace? Hm, fatso and I had encountered this kind of situation a few times before... actually quite a few times, where we were nearly slaughtered. However, every time we ended with very little compensation."

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes, thought of that Elder Iron Yan activating his inherited magic treasure and locking them up without any hesitation, and those Rong Mountain Clan people rushing out of the underground cave as soon as possible, after firmly sealing the entire cave with magic talismans.

Without a doubt, if hadn't been the case that Ji Hao's team was way more powerful than the immigrating troop led by Elder Iron Yan, the Rong Mountain Clan people would have killed them that very day.

"This will not end that easily," said Ji Hao with a bad, dark face, "Trying to kill us? Have the entire crystal mine? I don't care about having the crystal mine all to themselves, but they intended to kill us... they have to pay for exactly this."

"The solution of this will depend on the one who will come to pick us up from the Magi Palace," said Yu Mu, also with a dark face, "If it's Minister Si Wen Ming, we will have nothing to worry about, and only take what they owe us. However, if it's someone other...hehe, mind the overall situation of the humankind!"

"Overall situation of the humankind?" Ji Hao suddenly felt sick about these few words.

Chapter 216: Attendant

Three days later, the person sent by the Magi Palace to pick Ji Hao and his teammates up had arrived.

As soon as Yu Mu and Feng Xing, who were standing on a small hill beside the river, saw a few men wearing black cloak, riding on the back of a gigantic eagle that was flying over, they began to curse simultaneously.

After a series of dirty words, they growled angrily, "These cowards from the outer palace again! Every time, every single time, the Magi Palace will send these ball-less morons!"

Ji Hao's face became dark as well. Yu Mu, Feng Xing, Taisi, and Shaosi had spent a whole day to explain the current situation of the Magi Palace in details to Ji Hao. After having joined the Magi Palace for half a year, Ji Hao had finally gained an overall understanding to the so-called Magi Palace.

The Magi Palace had first been founded back when this world was still being ruled by the first three generations of the King of the humankind. At first, the Magi Palace was only like a library, it collected all classic books and knowledge that were created by the humankind, and made sure that the wisdom of the humankind would last and be passed to the younger generations. Back when the first three generations of Kings of the humankind ruled the human world, the humankind was quite endangered. It could be wiped out by other kinds of creatures anytime. Therefore, the existence of the Magi Palace was a hope that might allow the humankind to rise.

Nowadays, human clans were not as endangered as back then. During all these years, every generation of the King of the humankind had invested quite a lot in the Magi Palace, which gradually turned the Magi Palace into a great, overstaffed organization that occupied too many materials and human

resources.

Clans from the four wastelands and the Midland, which were powerful enough, had all been trying as hard as they could to get themselves involved in the Magi Palace. Therefore, currently in the Magi Palace, good and evil people were mixed up. In other words, the Magi Palace was now in a chaos. Each year, almost every powerful clan and big organization would select talented kids out of their ranks and send them to the Magi Palace. By doing so, they could not only use the Magi Palace' resources to cultivate their younger generations, but they could also build a shortcut for themselves, a shortcut that would allow them to step onto a higher administrative class of the humankind. Almost every kid, who had shown talents and had great achievements in the Magi Palace, could rise in Pu Ban city within a short time.

This was why small apprentice groups like the Southern Wasteland Society and the Great Dark Ocean Society had been fighting so hard against each other in the Magi Palace. Every year, quite a lot of apprentices would be found dead in the Magi Palace, and all of their deaths were related to conflicts between the small groups.

Currently, the Magi Palace could roughly be divided into the outer palace and the inner palace. The inner palace was led by elders like Wulong Yao and Kuafu Yan, who had always been concentrating on cultivating young apprentices that they found to be talented or to have some potential. They carefully selected elite young Magi who could be put in important positions for the Magi Palace. These master Magi tutors were more concerned about discovering the mysteries of this world and were all obsessed with the subjects that were their main research.

As far as powers were concerned, the elders of the inner palace, like Wulong Yao and Kuafu Yan, were all extremely powerful. Normally, elders of the inner palace were a lot more powerful that the elders of the outer palace. Therefore, the outer palace had been

quite suppressed by the powers of the inner palace elders. This was something that had managed to maintain a relatively harmonious atmosphere in the Magi Palace... at least it seemed quite peaceful so far.

As for the outer palace, almost every powerful clan and organization had their people who were involved in the outer palace. Every single elder of the outer palace was being supported by one or even more clans and organizations, which had their own purposes.

According to Yu Mu, those outer palace elders were a bunch of vicious and greedy wild dogs. All they were capable of thinking whole day long was how to open their mouth as wide as possible to bite something off, whatever it may be. As long as they could reach it, they would certainly bite it off, even if it was a pile of shit.

"How could elder Wulong let these guys come?" said Ji Hao with a tight face, while looking at the gigantic eagle that had been flying closer and closer, "And they have wasted whole three days."

The entirely-black eagle that had beaks and claws that were shining crystal-like, and the wingspan of over ten zhang looked quite amazing. It hovered around Ji Hao and his teammates for a short while, then cried out proudly and landed slowly on the ground.

Mr Crow cawed scornfully. This gigantic eagle looked quite powerful, however, it was still nothing but an ordinary bird to Mr Crow. Mr Crow could crush this idiotic bird with only one claw.

From the feathers of this gigantic eagle, clouds of black smoke were continuously being spurted out by huge amounts of spell symbols. Apparently, this black eagle would never have been able to fly from the Magi Palace to over here without the assistance of those spell symbols.

Three men in black cloaks were standing on the back of the eagle. A middle-aged man among them threw a proud glance at Ji Hao

and his teammates. His eyes were fixed briefly on the faces of Man Man and Shaosi with a very weird expression, then he said with a cold voice, "Were you the ones who had reported to the Magi Palace about those Rong Mountain Clan idiots who have intended to kill you, our Magi Palace's apprentices, for a magic crystal mine?"

This sounded quite right tough to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao took a step forward, pressed his right palm on his chest and bowed slightly to the middle-aged man, then responded, "Yes, that was us. Do you mind if I ask your name, mister?"

The middle-aged man let out a bland smile, then said, "I am Meng Ao, born in the Qiong Qi Clan of the Western Wasteland, now working for the Magi Palace as an attendant. This time, the Magi Palace sent me to redress the scales for you regarding this Rong Mountain Clan case. How dare the Rong Mountain Clan prison and attempt murder our Magi Palace apprentices, aren't they afraid of been kicked out of the Midland?!"

Meng Ao then waved his hand generally and said, "Come on, let's go find the Rong Mountain Clan people immediately. Before I came here, the elders told me that everyone who bullied our Magi Palace apprentices should pay for their mistakes."

Ji Hao and the others hopped onto the eagle's back. Meng Ao then turned back and said, "Ladies, please hold steady, don't fall off."

He grinned attentively at Man Man and Shaosi. Meng Ao's eyes swept across the faces of the two girls with a proud smile, then stamped his foot hard against the black eagle's back.

The gigantic eagle let out a shrill cry, along with which, clouds of black smoke spurted out from those spell symbols on its feathers. Within the black smoke, the black eagle suddenly rose thousands of feet high into the air, hovered around, then flew towards the Rong Mountain Clan's new territory that was located at over ten

thousand miles away.

During the journey, Meng Ao never stopped describing how powerful the Qi Qiong Clan was to Ji Hao. He proudly told Ji Hao and his teammates that his family was one of the top-ranked powerful families in the Qi Qiong Clan. He also was pleased to tell Ji Hao that he had already awakened three thousand Magus Acupoints, and was only a step away from the peak of the Senior Magus level, and would break into the Magus King level in at most ten years.

"At that time, I will be promoted, and become an elder of the outer palace...girls, after I become an elder, if anyone dares to bully you again, just let me know."

In the end, Meng Ao couldn't hold off his proudness anymore, and formerly struck up a conversation with Man Man and Shaosi, with a face filled with smiles.

Yu Mu and Feng Xing glanced at each other, then helplessly shook their head towards Ji Hao. It was as if they were saying, 'See, we were right... All elders and attendants of the outer palace are the same... they are just a bunch of bastards!'

Shaosi remained silent, her facial expression as cold as usual. She was staring straight at Meng Ao as if looking at a dead body.

Her eyes looked so...scary that Meng Ao was even subconsciously avoiding eye contact with Shaosi, only grinning and looking at Man Man.

As for Man Man, she had completely no idea what Meng Ao was talking about, and was only fiddling with her pair of hammers, while looking at the black smoke spurting out from the feathers of the black eagle, from time to time. She was wondering how this eagle, that seemed to be not that powerful, could carry her pair of hammers.

Meng Ao didn't get the admiration and intimacy from either

Shaosi or Man Man as he imagined, therefore, his face gradually turned dark, even darker than a ghost's face.

Soon, the gigantic eagle arrived at the Rong Mountain Clan's new territory and hovered above the area. Meng Ao shouted out in anger abruptly.

"I am Meng Ao, an attendant of the Magi Palace! Tell that guilty man, Iron Yan, to come out here!"

Chapter 217: Prince Xu

Compared to a few days ago, this new village of the Rong Mountain Clan had changed quite a lot.

The fence wall built at the entrance of the valley was no longer the same one that had been built with rocks. Instead, now it was a fence wall made completely of metal, and it was three times taller and two times thicker than it had been before. The fence wall was glowing with a cold light under the rays of the sun. Huge magic formations were drawn on the fence wall at every three zhang. In between these magic formations, thumb-sized magic crystals, each colored differently, were inlaid thickly.

The warriors standing on the fence wall were all wearing heavy metal armors. Their completely sealed armors were crafted exquisitely in beautiful shapes, done with master-like skills. A totem of a flame was embossed on the chest area of each of their armors. The black armors and red totems made an eye-piercing strong contrast.

Ji Hao used his spiritual power to observe these armored warriors closely and immediately his heart sank.

Only around the hundred zhang long fence wall, Ji Hao discovered twenty Senior Magus level warriors already. All the other warriors on the wall were at the peak of Junior Magus level. If you added those combat beasts lying beside them, the military capability on this fence wall was equal to the military capability of five Rong Mountain Clans together. Such a great, powerful force was not something that the Rong Mountain Clan could afford.

The gigantic eagle floated above the fence wall. Meng Ao took out his identity tablet, which clearly showed that he was an attendant of the Magi Palace, then yelled out arrogantly.

The warriors standing on the fence wall remained perfectly still, like statues.

Meng Ao seemed to be badly offended by this. His face had even turned blue and his voice grew louder and louder, "How dare you! Are you, the Rong Mountain Clan, trying to enrage our Magi Palace?!"

After quite a while, followed by the sound of unhurried footsteps, Elder Iron Yan, who had now changed into a clean and luxurious silk cloak and whose waist was wrapped around by a wide, pure-gold belt that had been decorated with large pieces of jade, walked slowly onto the fence wall. Both his hair and beard were perfectly brushed.

Ji Hao's pupils shrank instantly. Elder Iron Yan had always been walking around with his bare upper body. Or he would roughly wrap his body with a piece of leather, or wear a simple flax shirt. He had always left both muscular arms of his bare, because it was that way smithing or mining would be more convenient. But now, Ji Hao had trouble believing that this man was the same Elder Iron Yan he had known all that time.

Ji Hao's pupils began glowing and swept across Elder Iron Yan's silk cloak with waves of spiritual power.

Silk, truly unbleached silk that had a faint cream color, and was made with extremely fine skills. Although it hadn't been bleached or dyed, nor jacquard, the silk still looked quite luxurious. Apparently, this cloak was made from silk that had been reeled off from cocoons with special techniques, and was of very high quality.

Besides, this cloak was sewed exquisitely as well. All the lines were smooth and the cloak was completely neatly-pressed, making Elder Iron Yan look especially tall and sturdy. The Rong Mountain Clan certainly couldn't make or afford such kind of high-quality silk.

Apart from this luxurious cloak, Elder Iron Yan's hair and beard were brushed meticulously. Ji Hao could even sense a faint

fragrance of flowers being emitted from his head. Could you even imagine? An old blacksmith, who had spent all his life with mines, flames, iron blocks and heavy hammers, had carefully brushed his own hair and beard. He had polished both of them with essence oil that had flower petals soaked in it.

Ji Hao raised one finger and pointed slightly backwards. Followed by his hand motion, Feng Xing silently leapt down from the back of the black Eagle, transformed into a hazy silhouette and darted away, without making even the slightest noise. He was an archer, only an adequate distance would allow him to release his power to its full potential.

Yu Mu held his fat belly and began murmuring, "Damn, I'm having a stomach ache... I, I must have eaten something dodgy. Damn!! I have to go to the loo..."

While complaining, Yu Mu hurriedly leapt down, thudded heavily against the ground, and rushed into the dense jungle while farting all the way. Ji Hao swept his spiritual power across the jungle and discovered that fatso Yu Mu had rushed into the jungle, made a circle and moved towards the other end of the valley, just as Ji Hao anticipated.

Ji Hao and his teammates had helped with the exploration of this valley, and therefore they knew clearly that the only small stream in the valley was the only water resource for this entire area. If that fatso, Yu Mu, became evil and threw some of his poisons into the stream, all the Rong Mountain Clan people would have to shed tears of 'gratitude".

Taisi looked confused at Yu Mu and Feng Xing who were darting away, opened his mouth and prepared to say something. However, before he had let a word out, Shaosi crooked her index finger and knocked hard on his rib. Waves of great pain instantly struck Taisi's body. His face immediately turned deadly pale, while cold sweat poured down from his forehead in streams.

Shaosi then said blandly, "Oh dear brother, are you having pain again? I'm sorry, your respected attendant, I have to take my brother to find some pain-killing herbal medicines in the jungle. Man Man, come, help me take care of Taisi!"

While speaking, Shaosi grabbed Taisi's neck and carried him up while with her other hand she held the hand of Man Man, who hadn't realized yet what just had happened around her, then leapt down from the back of the eagle back as well and rushed quickly into the jungle.

Ji Hao couldn't help but let out a pleased grin. Since when did members of this temporary team begin cooperating so perfectly?

Ji Hao felt quite great. He puffed his chest out while grinning, then suddenly curved the corners of his mouth downwards, pointed his finger at Elder Iron Yan and shouted, "You old bastard! Don't you feel ashamed?! Attendant Meng Ao, this is the one who trapped us underground and attempted to kill us. If the underground cave hadn't accidentally collapsed and shown the underground river that allowed us to survive, we would be trapped dead down there by now!"

Meng Ao was quite angry as well. He felt so offended by the bland attitude that this Elder Iron Yan was showing that his head even started to hurt. He had anticipated that, faced with an attendant of the Magi Palace, Elder Iron Yan would cry in regret and apologize continuously. That he would kneel on the ground and beg him to show some mercy, to not punish the Rong Mountain Clan too harshly. Most importantly, Elder Iron Yan would thrust a great amount of stuff into his hand to bribe him!

How dare this old man hold his head so high and stand so calmly right in front of him, an attendant of the Magi palace?!

Meng Ao became angrier and angrier. He hadn't even noticed how strange and unreasonable those excuses used by Yu Mu and Shaosi were. He still had Ji Hao standing beside him anyway. Ji

Hao was a witness, and with witnesses and the power of the Magi Palace, Meng Ao was quite confident that this small Rong Mountain Clan, that had only around two hundred thousand people in total, would eventually bend in front of him.

Almost leaping into the air, Meng Aao yelled out, while pointing at Iron Yan, "Iron Yan, do you admit your guilt?!"

Iron Yan looked at Ji Hao while frowning. A trace of confusion flashed across his face then soon disappeared, after which, Iron Yan laughed out relaxed, held his hands behind his body and said, "Why I am I guilty? Attendant Meng Ao, we were about to report to your Magi Palace and seek some justice."

Iron Yan then continued harshly, "These few kids sent by your Magi Palace had fled away in fear when our campsite was attacked by a group of wild beasts. Because of which, thousands of our clansmen has been killed. Your Magi Palace has to take this responsibility and compensate us for it!"

Gasping deeply, Iron Yan said, "I thought these few kids wouldn't be so shameless to come back after they had fled away. I had been planning to go find them in the Magi Palace in a few days. But now, since they have come back, attendant Meng Ao, you have to give us a reasonable solution for this, we want justice!"

Meng Ao paused briefly, then yelled out in rage, "How dare you! Iron Yan! You're nothing but a small, small Rong Mountain Clan! How dare you slander our Magi Palace like this!!"

A scornful voice came from afar, "Small Rong Mountain Clan? Hehe, the Rong Mountain Clan is a branch of our Lie Mountain Clan. The Rong Mountain Clan people are all our Lie Mountain Clan clansmen! Looking down upon the Rong Mountain Clan is equal to insulting our Lie Mountain Clan. You, a nobody named Meng Ao, are you looking for trouble?"

Along with this voice, a tall and handsome young man walked slowly onto the fence wall, while proudly looking down at Ji Hao

and Meng Ao.

Iron Yan bowed smilingly to this young man, then said, "Prince Xu, it is just a small problem, you don't need to come out here yourself."

Prince?

Ji Hao looked at Meng Ao in confusion.

By now, Meng Ao's face had turned so twisted, as if he had just fallen into a thousand kilogram pile of dog shit.

Chapter 218: A False Countercharge

Prince Xu.

Ji Hao stared coldly at Meng Ao. This guy, who was born in one of the most powerful clans of the Western Wasteland, the Qi Qiong Clan, which was known by the rest of the world because of their madness and their military qualities, had all the way been cold and proud like a powerful lion king. But now, his pride and rage suddenly went away without leaving even the slightest trace, and he had turned into a nice and obedient dog.

"Prince Xu," Meng Ao bowed abruptly his straight waist. His cold face was suddenly filled with a grin again. He grinned like a blooming petunia, while his facial expression turned extremely polite and gentle.

"I had never thought that I would meet your highness in person here. Meng Ao feels so..." Meng Ao's eyeballs rolled quickly in his eye sockets while he was searching for some nice words in his head.

"You stupid lowly idiot!" The tall and handsome young man, whose face was as perfect as a sculpture and without any flaws, releasing a commanding and special sense of power, said harshly and coldly, "Don't explain. Just now, you insulted the Rong Mountain Clan. Are you trying to provoke our Lie Mountain Family? I will send an inquiry regarding this to the Magi Palace."

Hearing this young man's words, cold sweat gushed instantly out of Meng Ao's forehead. He laughed hollowly while his eyeballs rolled in his eye sockets. He bent his waist deeper, making his body now look like a huge meatball. The ego and pride he had been shown to Ji Hao during their journey had long gone.

"You're no one but an attendant of the Magi Palace, not even an elder. How dare you yell at us arrogantly and declare Iron Yan guilty without any evidence?!" said Prince Xu. He held his hand

behind his body. His light-silvery, silk cloak was sparkling under the sun rays. The quality of his cloak was way too great. If looked from Meng Ao's angle, Prince Xu was wrapped around by an over one-foot thick layer of silver glow.

Within the glow, countless fly-head-sized spell symbols darted out from time to time, exploding in the air like tiny fireworks. Then they transformed back into faint silvery wisps of smoke and merged with the silvery glow once again.

Without a doubt, this silver cloak was a magic treasure that had especially great defensive power. Ji Hao believed that this silver cloak, which seemed thin and soft, had even greater defensive power than his tight armor.

As for the reason why Meng Ao suddenly turned into such a lickspittle, just like a dog that didn't even dare to talk, Ji Hao had more or less some clues.

Prince was not a title that you could freely add onto yourself.

The Flame God, one of the first three generations of Kings of the humankind, born in the Lie Mountain Family, was currently nowhere to be found. No one could tell for sure if the Flame God was still alive. However, at least people knew that he had left the Midland already, which was a fact upon the table. Therefore, the current princes of the Lie Mountain Clan were certainly not sons of that legendary Flame God. Instead, all young men who had gained the title of prince in the Lie Mountain Clan were elite distant relatives of that Flame God, and were carefully selected by the family. These princes were then cultivated by the family with all the resources available.

The reason why they had been titled prince was that every single one of them had the potential to become the next generation of Flame God. They all had enough potential to reach the level of Flame God, which was the real meaning hidden behind their title of prince.

Since he had already gained the title of prince, this prince Xu was certainly quite talented and powerful. Besides, he definitely had a large group of elders of the Lie Mountain Family supporting him, and an even larger group of powerful Magi from the Lie Mountain family or their branch clans working for him. He surely had an elite army under his direct command. Moreover, he also had a vast personal territory with billions of taxpayers.

Every prince of the Lie Mountain Family was an especially powerful being.

If Meng Ao would have been one of the inheritors of the Qi Qiong Clan, he would still be able to keep his waist straight in front of Prince Xu. But sadly, he was only an ordinary clansman of the Qi Qiong Clan; a chess piece that had been sent to the Magi Palace by the Qi Qiong Clan, seeking for the clan's profits. As a small chess piece, how could Meng Ao even dare to show any disrespect or a slight trace of anger in front of such a powerful prince? He could only bend his body down and pretend to be a nice dog.

Ji Hao sighed, leapt down from the back of the eagle, stood in front of the fence wall, raised his head looking at Prince Xu, then said calmly, "Prince Xu, I am Ji Hao. Elder Iron Yan had trapped us underground and attempted to kill us only for a magic crystal mine. With regard to this, the Rong Mountain Clan has to confess their guilt to our Magi Palace and show their apology."

Both Ji Hao's attitude and words had frightened Meng Ao to the point that his entire body was even soaked in cold sweat. He hurriedly screamed out, "Ji Hao, who do you think you are?! How dare you yell around here?! Just shut up! Don't you dare cause us any trouble!!"

"You shut up!" Prince Xu threw a majestic glance at Meng Ao and said, "This has nothing to do with you, you should just keep your mouth shut and stay right there and just watch. I will not give you any trouble. Later, you can just go back to the Magi Palace and tell your elders what actually had happened, you just need to let them

know exactly what had happened around here. That is your only job."

Slightly smiling, Prince Xu bowed slightly, and looked down at Ji Hao, nodded gently and said, "You said that you were trapped in the underground mine, but how did you get out?"

Ji Hao could now clearly see Prince Xu's face. It was an especially handsome and manly face. The glow of his eyes were so bright and dense, it seemed as if you could even touch it. When he was talking, the sharp-lined lips of his moved only slightly, which made him look like an especially firm-hearted person.

Every time Prince Xu talked, an especially great sense of power that felt as strong as a tsunami would swoosh over towards Ji Hao. With the help of his spiritual power, Ji Hao sensed clearly that not even a single grain of sand was pushed away by this great sense of power. But indeed, he felt a great pressure that pressed hard on his body. Ji Hao felt like being abruptly smashed by a mountain. Followed by a muffled boom, his shanks had sunk entirely into the ground.

The terrifying pressure was continuously being added on Ji Hao's body from all directions. It was like quicksand, which pressed his body down into the ground bit by bit. Gradually, this horrible power began to drill into Ji Hao's body through his ears, eyes, nose and mouth. It was obvious that Prince Xu didn't want Ji Hao to talk.

Ji Hao took a deep breath with some difficulty, gathered his power into his lungs and began talking loudly after a sneer.

"How did we get out? Well, that's because even the real gods in heaven couldn't bear to watch us being trapped dead under there. They let the stone wall crack slightly, showing an underground river. We got out along the river."

Prince Xu seemed to be slightly shocked by Ji Hao. It was as if he couldn't believe that Ji Hao still was able to talk under the great

pressure released by him.

Remaining silent for a while, Prince Xu let out a bland smile and responded, "You have just lied. Ji Hao, you have become such a skillful liar at such a young age, what a shame. Indeed, a magic crystal mine is located in this area but all this has nothing to do with you."

You were entrusted by the Magi Palace, but faced with groups of fierce wild beasts, you had abandoned your responsibilities and fled away for your own safety. You left the Rong Mountain Clan people behind. Elder Iron Yan was thinking about going to the Magi Palace and sue the six of you. However, after all, Elder Iron Yan is a very generous and thoughtful elder, he didn't want to ruin your great futures just like this, so he had decided to let this go."

"But none of us had thought that you were shameless enough to come back here after you had fled way. You might have heard about the discovery of the magic crystal mine, and shamelessly came back, coveting a share of the crystal mine. You even dared to bring a false charge against Elder Iron Yan."

"This is why people say that the human heart is not what it had been in the old days. For the greed inside your heart, you have actually done something like this."

Prince Xu raised his head, let out a long sigh and said, "In this case, you shouldn't blame me for sending you back to the Magi Palace under guard and seek for some justice from your Magi Palace elders."

This long speech made by Prince Xu, which had completely switched the right and wrong, had enraged Ji Hao. His tendons were starting to stand out under the skin of his forehead, one after another.

Chapter 219: Wuyou

'Even if you were an offspring of the Flame God, you have no right to call the white black, and just falsely accuse anyone you want!' thought Ji Hao.

Ji Hao controlled his anger forcibly, gnashed his teeth, stared at Meng Ao and said angrily, "Meng Ao, as an attendant of the Magi Palace, are you going to just watch them carelessly frame your own people?!"

Meng Ao didn't even dare to look at Ji Hao in the eyes. He steered clear of the crucial point and said, "Actually, I shouldn't be the one to even come here today. Ji Hao your messages were delivered to elder Wulong Yao and few other elders, but, today all elders have been convened by the King of the humankind and went to Pu Ban City in order to attend a meeting. As it is the King of the humankind who has called, no one dares to be absent from the meeting."

Coughing embarrassedly for a short while, Meng Ao laughed hollowly and said, "I mean, I didn't want to come, it is just those elders sent me here."

Ji Hao looked at him and yelled in anger, "What are you even talking about?! You're an attendant of the Magi Palace, you..."

Before Ji Hao finished his sentence, the facial expression of Meng Ao changed abruptly and he raised his head, pointed his finger at Ji Hao and yelled, "What I am trying to say is that, you, you are a bunch of bastards! A group of reckless stupid kids! You have offended Prince Xu! Do you know? I have seen reckless people, but I've never met someone as stupid and shameless as you!"

Meng Ao moved his arm and pointed at the new village of the Rong Mountain Clan, located inside the valley, and continued loudly, "It is not some big deal but a magic crystal mine, are you really so greedy and shallow to this point that you shamelessly

tried so hard to gain yourselves some benefits from that small crystal mine?! Haven't you seen anything valuable in your entire life?!"

Ji Hao was enraged so much by Meng Ao's sudden change that he even had wisps of smoke rising from his head. His powers automatically activated, gushing around inside his body like scorching hot streams of flame. There were literally wisps of smoke rising slowly from out his ears, mouth, and nostrils. Along with this, his long hair which was hanging loosely on his back floated up one after another. Out of every strand of hair an extremely thin stream of flame was spurting out. Not long after that, all of Ji Hao's hair transformed into flame and rose into the air, looking like a fiery cloak fluttering behind Ji Hao's body.

Inside his spiritual space, the unnamed stone sword began to vibrate while producing high-pitched sounds from time to time.

This natural crafted holy weapon had been buried underground and had been in deep slumber ever since it had been formed. Now that it had been awakened by Ji Hao, it couldn't wait to drink some blood.

"Meng Ao, the Magi Palace has sent you here to seek justice for us!" said Ji Hao word for word, while gnashing his teeth.

A series of silvery tweedle came from deep in the valley. Along with it, a gust of cool wind blew out. Flooded by the wind, hazy watery mist gushed out of the valley like streams of water, sweeping quickly over trees and flowers. Finally, it bumped against the fence wall, rolled up along it and eventually wrapped it entirely.

Fist-sized, glowing white flowers were floating on the mist, rolling over along with it. These flowers were pure-white, had a very lovely shape and nice fragrance. When the streams of mist bumped against the fence wall, the petals of those white flowers clanged against each other, letting out jade-cracking like noise.

Tens of tall and slim, breathtakingly beautiful girls, who had white and tender skins, cherry-like lips, and were wearing white long dresses, trod on the mist and slowly walked out from the valley.

Some of these girls were holding jade bottles that contained some unknown liquid with nice flowery fragrances, and wines which smelled heavenly. Some of them were holding a huge jade tray, containing shining precious pearls that were rolling around on those trays and silver magic wine. Some of them were carrying censers that were carved out of magic crystals... there were no fire blazing in those censers, instead, only scented materials that were made from ten thousand years old black ice, which were slowly evaporating by magic powers and releasing a faint nice scent through an icy mist.

This kind of scent was extremely pure, without being mixed with even the slightest smell of pyrotechnic. The scent was being spread for miles along the breeze, making people feel extremely clean and elegant.

Each of these girls was being followed by an Ice Chi, or an Ice Luan. These rare and magical animals were pure-white as well, and all had fine ice crystals continuously spurting out from their bodies, forming an ice cloud under their bodies that held them up in the air, a few feet high from the ground.

These Ice Chi and Ice Luan were apparently carefully selected. Each ice Chi was less than three foot long, looking crystal-like and adorable, while each Ice Luan was about two feet long and especially beautiful. They were observing the surrounding area curiously, with pairs of brightly glowing eyes. Although these magic animals were relatively small in shape, the sense of power released from their bodies was as great as that of a Senior Magus.

Meng Ao's facial expression suddenly changed again. He had already turned into a nice dog in front of Prince Xu, but now, once he saw all these girls and animals, he had instantly turned into a

poor injured dog, which had been broken at the waist. He was nearly kneeling on the ground and begging for mercy.

Ji Hao looked at Meng Ao's face that had changed so suddenly, with a cold expression. Without a doubt, if it was not because he still was an attendant of the Magi Palace, Meng Ao would have hopped on the black eagle's back and fled away as quickly as possible. The reason why he was staying here was not because he had his dignity or pride, but he was worried that if he fled away, Ji Hao might sue him after returning to the Magi Place, which might cost him his position of attendant.

"A domestic animal would be more useful than you," said Ji Hao. Ji Hao had lived in the Southern Wasteland for over ten years, which had built his straightforward personality, just like most of Southern Wasteland men. He couldn't help but yell out at Meng Ao, "Meng Ao, you have humiliated the Magi Palace so badly! Even a pet is much better than you! Pets would at least try to protect their owners!"

As a proud attendant, Meng Ao was instantly enraged by Ji Hao's words. His face even turned black. He stared at Ji Hao in rage, and was going to scream out, but another series of silvery tweedle came at this moment.

This tweedle, which contained bone-piercing cold power, instantly shut Meng Ao up, causing him to become unable to dare to let out any sound. The anger that he was about to show Ji Hao also disappeared instantly because of this.

"Prince Xu, you seemed to have encountered some troublesome nasty people who are trying to blackmail you," A clear and bright voice that sounded like jade clanging and was as cold as the crack of an iceberg came from afar. The voice was similarly powerful as the sound created when a sword was being pulled out of its sheath.

Ji Hao shook his body slightly. He felt streams of cold power quickly gathering over from all directions, attempting to gush into

his body through his pores. Ji Hao hurriedly activated all of his power and launched a counterattack at those streams of cold power. Each of his pores spurted out large streams of scorching hot power and clashed against those streams of cold power.

Along with a swooshing sound, white cold mist rose around Ji Hao's body, forming a small whirlwind and wrapped Ji Hao's entire body up.

Without even showing his face, the person who had talked to Prince Xu just now, had already launched a fatal attack onto Ji Hao.

"No wonder you dared to blackmail Prince Xu, you do have some power in you!"

Followed by a series of light footsteps, a young man, wearing a silver long cloak, trod on icy mist and walked elegantly over.

Mr Crow cawed slightly and expanded his body abruptly to a few zhang length. He carried Ji Hao and slowly floated up into the air, slightly higher than the fence wall.

Staring at the young man who was walking over slowly, Ji Hao couldn't help but silently praise this young man for his appearance in his head. This young man was even more handsome than Zhu Rong Tianming, and was showing a natural impressive manner by every slight move he made. Such kind of manners Ji Hao had only seen from Zhu Rong Tonggong so far.

This young man had silver hair, eyebrows and pupils, and his skin was as tender and smooth as top-quality jade. Holding an odd-shaped stringed jade musical instrument that had only three strings, this young man walked slowly over. Everywhere he walked past, all Rong Mountain Clan people would kneel hurriedly down and salute him.

Prince Xu turned smilingly his head, bowed slightly to the young man with silvery hair, and said, "Just a few wild dogs barking. I

didn't mean to disturb you, dear Prince Wuyou. As an older brother, I apologize for loose hospitality."

The young man with silver hair let out a few laughs, looked at Ji Hao from quite a distance and said, "I am Prince Wuyou, you can also call me Gong Gong Wuyou. Greedy and cowardly people like you...since I have already seen you, how can I let you go back to the Magi Palace alive?"

While speaking, Gong Gong Wuyou crooked his finger and the stringed musical instrument suddenly let out a thunderous, ear-piercing sound.

Chi and Luan: Both Chi and Luan were legendary and magical animals in ancient Chinese culture. The Chi had a dragon-like shape while the Luan had a phoenix-like shape. However, both of these two kinds of animals are normally classified as being evil.

Wuyou as a name, literally means 'have nothing to worry about' in Chinese. Although Wuyou and Xu are all called 'prince', Wuyou is a blood son of a god that is equal to the Fire God, while Xu is not! The two of them are not real brothers, they call each other brother because they're pretty close friends.

Chapter 220: Shamelessness

Prince Wuyou.

Gong Gong Wuyou.

The son of the Water God.

Ji Hao's heart sank instantly. Faced with double amount of pressure that Prince Xu and Prince Wuyou were giving, he looked calmly at both of them and said, "Didn't think that only a small magic crystal mine could make you, respectful Prince Wuyou, come by yourself."

Since Prince Wuyou had already said that he wouldn't let Ji Hao return alive to the Magi Palace, so there was no necessity for Ji Hao to remain polite to both of them. In this case, Ji Hao immediately let out a sentence that insinuated that Gong Gong Wuyou had accepted benefits given by Prince Xu, to help him frame Ji Hao for this magic crystal mine.

Prince Wuyou's silvery pupils abruptly turned a weird dark-blue in color, and looked so deep that it seemed as a bottomless ocean with roaring and rolling waves.

The transparent strings of his music instrument let out a nice tinkling sound. While gently playing the stringed music instrument with his long and pretty, jade-like fingers, Prince Wuyou responded blandly, "You shameless little kid, how dare you talk to me, Gong Gong Wuyou, unjustly like that? How could I betray my honesty for such a small fortune?"

Prince Xu stood beside Prince Wuyou, laughed and said, "Filthy and shameless people naturally have filthy and shameless thoughts inside their mind. How can they possibly understand the respectful, honest spirit of a prince like you?"

Prince Wuyou let out a faint sigh, looked at Ji Hao and said with a gentle yet cold voice, "I came here because Prince Xu has built a

new outhouse palace. As a guest, I came to congratulate him for the completion of this new outhouse palace. I hadn't thought that I would meet you, a bunch of shameless people who wants to blackmail the Lie Mountain Family in here... So contemptible!"

"Well, well, I can't bear to talk even one more sentence to you. You have stained my eyes, my ears and my mouth. Guards, capture this kid and behead him. I will send his head to the King of the humankind myself, and seek some justice for the Lie Mountain family."

Resonating shouts came from the other side of the fence wall right after Gong Gong Wuyou had given his order. Tens of muscular warriors, wearing black dragon-scale armors, holding undy-shaped, long sharp swords, were rushing over while releasing great and cold power from all over their bodies. They trod on the ground, but water-ripple-like mist naturally rose from under their feet along with clattering water sounds. These warriors swiftly rushed over, leapt across the fence wall within the blink of an eye and rushed towards Ji Hao.

Mr Crow let out a long and shrill caw, flapped his wings, preparing to transform into a beam of firelight and go up into the sky. These warriors were only ordinary Senior Magi, they couldn't possibly fly. Therefore, as long as Mr Crow rose high into the air, none of these guards of Prince Gong Gong could do Ji Hao any harm.

However, right after Mr Crow had stretched his wings, a fierce gust of wind swished over from behind him. It was Meng Ao, holding a silvery white, three foot, square-shaped long spear, and punctured Mr Crow's left wing. The three foot and two inch long spearhead was thrust into Mr Crow's body through the root of his left wing and came out from his chest.

"Boom!" yelled Meng Ao. Followed with his voice, a beam of silver light flashed across the spearhead, then the sharp spearhead suddenly exploded, turning into countless thorns that pierced into

the remaining parts of Mr Crow's body along with high-pitched swishing sounds.

Mr Crow cawed out loudly in pain. All of his internal organs were injured by those long thorns, which happened to contain metal-like powers. Inside Mr Crow's body his muscles, blood vessels, and meridians, everywhere that had been touched by those thorns, all had exploded. Large amounts of blood spurted out from Mr Crow's body. Mr Crow opened his beak wide and tried to caw, but streams of blood immediately gushed out through his throat, disabling him from making any sound.

At least a thousand long metal thorns had pierced through Mr Crow's body. Mr Crow instinctively activated his power and healed those wounds, however, after those wounds were healed, those long thorns still remained in his body.

Mr Crow tried to flap his wings and flew back into the sky, but once he moved his wings, countless sharp thorns pierced out again from inside his body through the already-healed wounds, and more blood spurted out. Finally, Mr Crow lost the control of the left half of his body, and thudded heavily against the ground.

Meng Ao had unexpectedly launched a surprise attack on Mr Crow. Although his attack was not powerful enough to kill Mr Crow, he had been successful in stopping Mr Crow and Ji Hao from fleeing away.

"Caw!"

The pupils of Mr Crow had even begun to blaze, while he stared at the warriors that had been ordered by Prince Wuyou and he cawed loudly at Ji Hao.

Ji Hao had been accompanying Mr Crow since he had been a little kid. Of course, he could tell what Mr Crow meant by his caw - 'Go, run by yourself, just leave me!'

But, how could Ji Hao leave Mr Crow and run by himself?

Ever since Ji Hao could walk, he had started hanging out with Mr Crow, sat on Mr Crow's back and flew around the entire Gold Black Mountain. When he was slightly older and had made some achievement with regards to his cultivation of the [Mantra Dan of Nine Secret Words], he grew brave enough to hang out with Mr Crow all around the jungle, and made a group of non-human friends, such as Heng Luo.

Mr Crow was like a real brother and a tutor to Ji Hao.

Seeing those long thorns that thickly pierced out from Mr Crow's body, Ji Hao's anger instantly exploded inside his heart. He turned to Meng Ao and growled out, "Meng Ao! I swear, I certainly will kill you one day!"

Grabbing Mr Crow from the ground, Ji Hao's Golden Dan suddenly expanded inside his spiritual space. Along with the expansion, a cloud of hazy purple mist gushed out of his body, which immediately broke those streams of cold power that was being released by Prince Wuyou and had been wrapped around his body. Immediately after that, a gale started around Ji Hao's body. Ji Hao held Mr Crow, transformed his body into a gust of wind and merged with that gale, intending to flee away.

"Lai!"

The two young men standing behind Meng Ao simultaneously shouted out, while locking their fingers together into a certain motion towards Ji Hao, their pupils letting out a dark green glow.

Countless twisted vines suddenly grew out from the ground, covering up the entire area within a radius of tens of meters. Those vines twisted and twined with each other, blocking the wind, and even blocked the air, as they broke Ji Hao's [Wind Escape Magic].

Moreover, thousands of hair-thin yet solid and sharp iron-like vines quickly moved towards Ji Hao, seemingly wanting to wrap Ji Hao's body up. Every single one of those vines were thickly dotted with poisonous thorns, and without a doubt, even a light touch by

these thorns on the skin would cause a really ugly wound.

"Meng Ao!" shouted Ji Hao once again.

All of Ji Hao's awakened Magus Acupoints lit up simultaneously. The amount of power contained in each of these Magus Acupoints equaled the total amount of Ji Hao's power when he was still at the peak of Junior Magus level. Besides, his Senior Magus power was purer, and could be completely activated within a short period of time, making it possible to deliver much greater effects.

Ji Hao's entire body began blazing, spurting out flames crazily.

Mr Crow let out another resonating caw, while putting one of his claws on Ji Hao's shoulder. His claw ripped Ji Hao's skin open and deeply sank into Ji Hao's body, connecting with the most important Gold Crow bloodline meridian inside Ji Hao's body.

The following moment, all of Mr Crow's power, which was the power of his pure Cold Crow bloodline and contained a slight percentage of the power of the most ancient and original Gold Crows, had been injected in Ji Hao's body.

Mr Crow had lived for over a thousand years, therefore, his bloodline power was way greater and purer than Ji Hao's new Senior Magus power. Although Ji Hao had already awakened all of his meridians, the total amount of Mr Crow's power was still greater than that of Ji Hao by at least ten times. Judging only from the amount and purity of powers, Ji Hao couldn't even compare to Mr Crow.

Great streams of power of the Gold Crow bloodline were injected into Ji Hao's body, and quickly divided into the two streams by Ji Hao's spiritual power, gushing into the fiery feathered boots that had merged with Ji Hao's shanks.

The fiery feather boots in Ji Hao's shanks were instantly set ablaze by the streams of great power. Countless blazing crow feathers darted out from Ji Hao's shanks, rapidly forming into a

pair of gold-red boots. They were automatically worn on Ji Hao's feet, right after which, a beam of fiery light suddenly flashed across the air. Along with the light beam, the bodies of Ji Hao, Mr Crow and the two baby Magic Fiery Snakes, all transformed into one fire column and rose straight into the air.

Fiery feathered boots, one of the inherited Magi treasures of the Gold Crow Clan, once they were activated, they would allow the user to travel across any space within the blink of an eye. The user would be able to let out the Gold Crow magic flame, which was powerful enough to burn any ordinary object into a puff of smoke, protect its user.

With both Ji Hao and Mr Crow' powers, Ji Hao could only activate the fiery feather boots for a very short while, but it was more than enough for them to escape from this deadly danger.

All the vines around Ji Hao were burned into smoke. Ji Hao let out his fiery wings as well, which allowed him to move even quicker by ten times.

Within a single moment, Ji Hao had darted out over tens of miles, while leaving tens of shreds of fiery afterimages behind him.

Chapter 221: Counterplan

“Ou-ouch!”

Ji Hao howled out in pain while falling from the air with both of his feet wrapped around by dense smoke.

Within the span of only tens breaths, the fiery feathered boots had consumed all of Ji Hao’s power. His Magus Acupoints and meridians were now completely empty. Just like black holes, it felt like his meridians and Magus Acupoints were about to suck his bones and flesh in.

Fiery crow feathers were rising from out of the smoke one after another, then merging quickly again with Ji Hao’s calves in the form of tattoos. Ji Hao’s feet and calves were burned red, with waves of hot air rising from his skin. While dragging a pair of burned feet that were swelled up like balloons, Ji Hao staggered a few steps into the grassland, causing all the plants within the radius of a few zhang to wither instantly.

Caw!

Mr Crow had run out of power as well. His beady little eyes were fixed worriedly on Ji Hao’s feet.

The fiery feathered boots were an inherited magic treasure that had belonged to a Divine Magus. Although Ji Hao had already broken into the Senior Magus level, it still felt so difficult when trying to activate the fiery feathered boots. With all of Mr Crow and his powers combined, he had managed to maintain the active period of the fiery feathered boots for only the span of tens of breaths. Besides, the amount of power he had managed to activate was less than one percent of this magic treasure’s real power.

Even so, Ji Hao had fled three thousand miles away within this span of tens of breaths; even Ji Hao was badly shocked by such an amazing speed.

Completely out of Ji Hao's control, the fiery feathered boots had automatically taken Ji Hao this far. However, in addition to depleting Ji Hao and Mr Crow's power, this powerful treasure had almost grilled Ji Hao's feet.

Ji Hao hurriedly rubbed his hands together and activated the power of his Golden Dan, followed by which, faint water mist gathered quickly towards him from all directions. Not long after that, a huge dark cloud with a radius of over ten zhang had formed above Ji Hao's head. Cool raindrops fell from out the dark cloud, pouring on Ji Hao's calves and feet. Along with sizzling noises, his red and swollen up feet and calves gradually recovered back to normal, while letting out clouds of steam.

While gasping quickly in pain, Ji Hao took out a bottle of medicinal liquor from his storage bag with a pair of trembling hands, poured the liquor on his feet and calves, then rubbed them hard for quite a while. After finishing all this, Ji Hao took out a jade talisman and injected the slight little bit of power that he had barely restored, into the talisman.

The talisman began buzzing and vibrating like wings of bees, floated up into the air with its vibrating power. Streams of invisible power spread out towards every direction from the talisman. Yu Mu, Feng Xing, Man Man, Shaosi, and Taisi all had similar talismans that were connected with Ji Hao's talisman. Therefore, as long as they all stayed within the area of a hundred thousand miles in radius around Ji Hao, they would be able to follow the special stream of power and find Ji Hao's location accurately.

Having roughly dealt with his burned shanks, Ji Hao took out a bottle of Three Birds and Nine Beasts pills, poured the whole bottle of pills into his mouth and swallowed. A great amount of spirit blood of beasts was soon being digested by the two multicolored flames in Ji Hao's lower abdomen, and transformed into streams of power that gushed into his Magus Acupoints.

In the meanwhile, all of Ji Hao's awakened Magus Acupoints had opened up widely, and were greedily absorbing natural powers from the surrounding area, even forming a few whirlwind-like streams of power. These absorbed streams of natural powers were continuously being transformed into Ji Hao's internal power, then stored in his Magus Acupoints. His power was quickly restoring, and Ji Hao gradually turned less worrying-looking.

The two baby Fiery Magic Snakes leapt onto Mr Crow's body and opened their tiny mouths. Each gripped a thorn that had pierced out from Mr Crow's body, and pulled those over two foot long thorns out of Mr Crow's body with quite some difficulty, even when using all of their strength.

Those sharp and solid thorns were crafted by a master blacksmith of the Qi Qiong Clan in the Western Wasteland. They were incomparably sharp and were filled with metal-like powers. The two baby snakes bit those thorns with their tender jaws. The corners of their mouths were easily sliced open by those thorns, and blood dripped out from time to time.

The two baby snakes quickly flipped their tails because of the pain, however, the pain had enraged these two naturally fierce magic fiery snakes, making them hiss louder and louder, and tried even harder to pull more thorns out of Mr Crow's body.

Mr Crow was cawing out in pain as well. Even all of his feathers were standing straight up in the pain, eyes glowing in great anger, and a pair of pupils that had turned so red, as if they had been soaked in blood.

"Good boys, good boys," Ji Hao hurriedly grabbed these two warmhearted baby snakes off from Mr Crow's body, worriedly patted them, and fed each of them a Three Birds and Nine Beasts pills, then took out two fresh, still bleeding pieces of beast meat from his storage bag, feeding it to them.

After having swallowed the meat, the two baby snakes were lying

quietly on Ji Hao's shoulders, with popped out eyes, thrusting out their forked-tongues from time to time.

Ji Hao carefully pulled out those thorns from Mr Crow's body one after another. Mr Crow quivered intensely in pain, while his black feathers clashed against each other and let out metal-clashing-like sounds.

After all the thorns had been pulled out, Mr Crow let a long caw out filled with rage, and his entire body was instantly wrapped in a faint layer of fiery light. All his wounds recovered within a second, and Mr Crow soon got his strength back.

"Damn you! Meng Ao! In order to ingratiate himself with Gong Gong Wuyou, he had actually launched a deadly attack on us," Ji Hao growled deeply while feeding Mr Crow pills, "Mr Crow, we have to make Meng Ao pay for this! As soon as possible!"

After a big half an hour, Man Man rushed over while carrying her pair of hammers. Behind her, Shaosi dragged Taisi, the same way someone would drag a dead body and walked over as well.

Seeing Ji Hao and Mr Crow, Man Man immediately dropped her hammers and rushed up to Ji Hao, held Mr Crow up from the ground and yelled, "Mr Crow! Are you okay?! I saw that Meng Ao attack you! I will certainly smash his head up!"

Taisi was embarrassedly dragged up to Ji Hao by his blood-related younger sister, gasped quickly for air while taking out his bone cane and yelling angrily, "This...this isn't over yet...Ji...Ji Hao, they framed us, claimed that we fled away for our own safety, and attempted to blackmail the Lie Mountain family...this isn't over!"

Another big half hour later, Yu Mu rushed over while trying so hard to catch his breath, and with his huge pot carried on his head. Once he saw Ji Hao's face, he dropped the pot and heavily thudded his butt against the ground, and howled out.

“Holy, holy cats! Ji Hao, ne-next time, just do-don’t run this far, an-and so quickly! God, my legs, my waist…and my poor fat!!!”

Looking at Yu Mu, who was seriously maxed out, his sweat even spurting out from his pores, Ji Hao couldn’t help but twitch the corners of his mouth.

“Yu Mu, eh…although you’re fat and not good at running, you’re a Senior Magus after all… It’s just around three thousand miles, not that far,” said Ji Hao.

Yu Mu instantly showed the whites of his eyes and screamed out, “You have flown for three thousand miles! Gosh! We had to run on the ground, couldn’t just cut a straight line on the ground and fly over like you! I had run for at least five thousand miles!”

Ji Hao paused, let out a cough and hurriedly changed the topic, asking, “Where is Feng Xing?”

Yu Mu waved his hands, answered while gasping, “Feng Xing is best at observation and tracking, so he stayed back there, keeping an eye on Meng Ao. Once you escaped, Meng Ao was dragged into the Rong Mountain Clan’s new village by Prince Wuyou and Prince Xu…There’ll be a trouble.”

Ji Hao’s face darkened right after he heard Yu Mu’s words. If Prince Wuyou and Prince Xu forced Meng Ao to go back to the Magi Palace and frame Ji Hao and his teammates, Ji Hao and his teammates wouldn’t be able to get out of this accusation easily.

Judging from Meng Ao’s style of acting, he didn’t even need to be forced to do anything. As long as Prince Wuyou was willing to give him a little bit benefit, he would break all the rules without any hesitation and put all false accusation on the heads of Ji Hao and his teammates.

Taking a deep breath, Ji Hao felt that his legs and feet had recovered back to normal, and his power had been restored to thirty percent. He leapt up from the ground while yelling harshly,

“We can’t let him go back to the Magi Palace alive. Contact Feng Xing, capture him on his way back!”

Yu Mu was slightly shocked, hurriedly asked, “What? Although he’s bastard, but, after all he still is an attendant of the Magi Palace.”

Ji Hao looked at Yu Mu and said seriously, “So what? He is indeed an attendant of the Magi Palace, but he has attempted to kill us. Dare to kill him?”

Yu Mu paused for a second, then dense green poisonous smoke suddenly rose from his body like roaring water during tide, while his eyes started glowing like an enraged wild beast.

Chapter 222: Interception

Late at night.

The sky was covered by a dense layer of cloud and the jungle was enshrouded by darkness. Only from a select few fissures of clouds, starlight poured down like streams of water directly on this primitive land in the form of multicolored light columns.

The wind was blowing across the grassland. Suddenly, a deep yet terrifying roar of a wild beast came out from the tall and thick grassland, and soon spread out along with a bloody scent.

A stream of starlight happened to shine on a weirdly-shaped, small blood-red colored tree that looked quite vigorous. Seven fist-sized, milky-white buds were blooming silently and slowly under the starlight, quickly absorbing the starlight power. The multicolored starlight even formed seven visible multicolored swirls on top of each milky white flower.

Countless fierce wild beasts rushed towards this small tree. The beasts were fighting madly against each other, shedding blood that seeped quickly into the ground. The branches of the small tree started to sway happily. The blood of the beasts that had seeped into the ground was continuously being absorbed by the roots of this small tree, along with which the blood-red color of the tree became even more vivid.

The seven milky-white buds started glowing brighter and brighter, emitting a nice sweet fragrance that grew more and more alluring. Those beasts, which had been fighting for these buds, grew crazier and crazier.

A gigantic eagle flew silently across the sky, while its wings were spurting out large clouds of black smoke.

Meng Ao stood on the eagle's back, gnashed his teeth and yelled at the air, "They can't blame me for this, those stupid kids pushed

themselves into this situation. They have offended Prince Xu and Price Wuyou, they will certainly die for doing so."

"No need to mention how powerful Prince Xu is, we all know about how influential the Lie Mountain Family is. As for Prince Wuyou, he has currently taken the place of the Water God, Gong Gong, holding all kinds of powers and rights that had belonged to the Water God. In the Pu Ban city, every single person who came from the Northern Wasteland has to follow every word of his. Since Prince Wuyou has already said that he can't let those kids live, those few poor kids can only end up dying."

Touching the new storage bag tied around his waist, Meng Ao turned his head back and looked at his two companions, then said, "Therefore, regarding this Rong Mountain Clan event, you should know what to say back at the Magi palace. Do Prince Wuyou a favor, although he is too powerful to ask us a favor, we won't lose anything anyway. We have these one hundred highest-grade all-adapting magic crystals, which is enough to buy the lives of many people."

His two young assistants, who were standing behind Meng Ao, glanced at each other, nodded and said, "Attendant Meng Ao, you're absolutely right. We are not that stupid, we know what to say back at the Magi Palace."

Meng Ao grinned satisfied, pointed his finger down at the grassland, where the small tree was emitting a nice alluring fragrance, then said with a sneer on his face, "See, the law of the jungle, the truth of nature. Those weak animals will all end up dead, nourish this spirit-growing tree with their blood, and eventually, only the most powerful seven beasts will be able to taste those beautiful flowers, and grow spirits and intelligence."

"If you want to live a good life, you can't be like those stupid animals that will end up as sacrifice for the purpose of others, instead, you have to..."

While Meng Ao was comparing human life to that spirit-growing tree and those beasts who had been fighting for it, and giving his speech regarding how to be a survivor, a long arrow silently darted up from the ground, accurately puncturing the head of the black eagle under the feet of Meng Ao and the two young men.

The night was so dark that one wouldn't be even able to see one's fingers properly, and the eagle had been flying in the air two thousand feet above the ground. If seen from the ground, its head looked even smaller than the head of a fly. However, that arrow still punctured its head accurately through its beak and came out from the top of the skull.

The gigantic eagle didn't even cry out, and began silently falling down while spinning in the air.

Meng Ao and the two young men, all screamed out instantly. They were only Senior Magi and were unable to fly in the air yet. Only powerful Magi who were Magus King or above were capable of manipulating the natural power to fly through the air. Therefore, they could only fall straight to the ground together with the eagle, like three shooting stars with nothing to hold on to.

"Feng Xing, you get the younger two!"

While coldly giving an order to kill, Ji Hao rushed with big steps towards the place where the three people were about to fall.

Feng Xing's fingers were slightly trembling, but Yu Mu, who was standing beside him growled out in a deep voice, "Go! Do it! During all these years, haven't you had enough of these bloody cowards? Except ganging up with enemies to bully apprentices like us, what else can these bastards do?"

Yu Mu clenched his fists, gritted his teeth and continued, "Just do it. The worst result will be nothing but us leaving the Magi Palace. The world is vast, and we can always find our own happy place either in the four Wastelands or in this Midland."

Feng Xing took a deep breath, and his eyes that were hesitating instantly became determined. He pulled his longbow open, along with which, the simple and roughly crafted longbow suddenly had a bright beam of light flash across it. Two arrows were put on the bow string simultaneously by Feng Xing, then he growled out.

"Kill!"

Two arrows darted out and at almost the same moment that Feng Xing let the two arrows out, the hearts of the two young men were punctured simultaneously.

Feng Xing's arrows were as fast and powerful as the claws of a devil, deeply piercing into the hearts of the two young men. After the arrowheads had pierced into their hearts, Yu Mu's poison that was added on each of the arrowheads already spread out and reached every corner of the bodies of the two young men. Before they could pull the arrows out and activate their power to heal their hearts, Yu Mu's poison had consumed up to seventy percent of their powers and life force.

Senior Magi had amazingly strong life force, and none of the Senior Magi were easy to kill. Although each of these two young men had lost seventy percent of their power and life force, but they still were able to shout out in both anger and fear, while putting their quivering hands into their sleeves, taking out detoxification medicines and life-saving pills.

However, Ji Hao had rushed over.

Ji Hao let out a resonating shout, while a bright stream of fiery light darted out from his right arm and transformed into the Yan spear. Ji Hao gripped the spear and conveniently swept the spear across the bodies of the two young men.

The Yan spear brought up a great, fierce gust of wind around the two young men. On both of their bodies, several spell symbols began sparkling. The black cloaks both of them had been wearing had great defensive powers and under their black cloaks they also

had tight armors protecting them. With the protection of both the black cloaks and the tight armors, they could each withstand at least three to five attacks launched by any ordinary Senior Magi.

But the Yan spear was a powerful inherited magic treasure after all, which had belonged to a Divine Magus. Against it ordinary magic treasures could hardly hold their power. Therefore, the spearhead sliced the bodies of the two young men as easily as slicing across the surface of water. The two young men screamed out simultaneously, while four broken arms were sent up into the air and blood instantly spurted out from their wounds.

"Ji Hao! How dare you! You...you attacked the Deacons of our Magi Palace!" screamed Meng Ao, seemingly unable to believe what Ji Hao had just done.

He hurriedly waved his left hand. A silvery white round shield flew out from his wrist, and blocked the Yan spear that was swiftly hacking onto Meng Ao's head. In the meanwhile, he flipped his right hand and let out a soft spear that was as soft and flexible as a snake. The soft spear directly swished towards Ji Hao while sparkling with a cold light.

"I always dare to attack bastards like you."

Ji Hao gripped the Yan spear with both of his hands and waved it hard in the air. Waves of hot air rose around Ji Hao's body, while streams of raging flames darted out towards every direction. Meng Ao's soft spear was sent flying straight away by the power of the Yan spear. At the same time, the Yan spear let out a stream of golden flame from its spearhead, which then clashed heavily against Meng Ao's round shield.

The stream of flame exploded against the shield, causing the shield let out an intensive buzzing noise. Meng Ao was sent flying by the explosive power for around a hundred zhang, while screaming.

His round shield was made from the essences of a hundred

different kinds of metals of the Western Wasteland and was especially solid. Ordinary weapons would never be able to leave even a slight mark on it.

However, the flames of the Yan spear were able to burn down almost anything in the world. While flying in the air, Meng Ao looked bitterly at his round shield, into which a fist-sized hole had been burned. This shield was now completely destroyed.

Meng Ao heavily thudded against the ground while howling, but before he struggled back up, Man Man had rushed over with her pair of hammers raised high. The following moment, Man Man's hammers swooshed across the air and smashed onto his body, over and over again, just like how blacksmiths hammer iron blocks.

Within a moment, Meng Ao was smashed by Man Man's hammers for over an entire three hundred times and had become a soft piece of meat, lying on the ground while blood was gushing out of his mouth, alive yet unable to ever move again.

Chapter 223: Confession

In a cold and dark cave that was located in a primitive desert surrounded by plant-less mountains.

Meng Ao and his two assistants were thrown on the ground while howling in pain and fear, huddling up their bodies and rolling around in the cave

Each of their Magus Acupoints was wrapped up by a sphere of green mist, which was Yu Mu's secretly concocted poison. The poison had gushed deeply into their Magus Acupoints and was remaining firmly there, mixed up with their blood and life force.

Every time a new wisp of power formed inside their bodies, the poison would transform into a new stream of poisonous power, damaging even more muscles and bones around it. Finally, the faces of the three had turned green. They could feel being powerless and in great pain, barely having the last bit of power that allowed them to speak.

Ji Hao squatted in front of Meng Ao, grabbed his long hair and threw a series of heavy punches onto his face without saying anything. Ji Hao's solid punches smashed Meng Ao's nose into his face, and squeezed blood out in streams, which made Meng Ao let out another great howl.

"Why...do this to me?"

Meng Ao screamed, his tears even gushed out because of the pain. He screamed hoarsely, eyes filled with anger and confusion.

"In the past ten years, thirty thousand young girls have gone missing. When their bodies were discovered in the wild, their clothes were all ripped open and they all had been raped in an extremely cruel way." While speaking, Ji Hao punched on Meng Ao's eye sockets once again, then continued, "You have done all these."

"What?!!" Man Man let out a great growl in rage, "Did this guy kill all those innocent girls?! Let me smash him into a meat pie!!"

Along with a muffled swooshing sound, Man Man waved her hammer towards Meng Ao's head. Fortunately, Yu Mu had been standing right beside her and reacted especially fast. Yu Mu hurriedly grabbed Man Man's arm, the gigantic hammer then swooshed across the air, right in front of Meng Ao's face, leaving a deep pit in the ground.

Meng Ao was about to be driven crazy, he screamed and cried, "I didn't! No! Ji Hao! Don't you frame me! How could I possibly do something like that?!"

Pausing for a second, Meng Ao abruptly yelled out again, "You lied! No girl has gone missing in the Pu Ban City during the past ten years!"

Ji Hao pulled out his long black dagger, quickly piercing it into Meng Ao's leg. This black dagger was once a sacrificial ceremony dagger of the Gold Crow Clan, therefore, it automatically began sucking Meng Ao's blood greedily. Not long after that, Meng Ao's entire leg had turned a dead pale.

"We saw it, it was you. You raped and killed all those girls," said Ji Hao with a cold voice, "Thirty thousand girls have gone missing in the Pu Ban City, but no one has ever talked about this. Meng Ao, you're pretty good, aren't you? Which elder of the Magi Palace has been helping you to hide your crimes?"

Gotten stabbed for no reason and losing that much of blood, Meng Ao could now only murmur weakly with a ginger and bitter look, "Ji Hao, you have to be reasonable. I didn't do that, nothing like that has ever happened in the Pu Ban City. I didn't do such things, I didn't! But you, you have attacked the attendant of the Magi Palace, that's a capital crime!"

Ji Hao responded with an extremely cold tone, "I have witnesses, everyone here has seen you do all those things. If you want more

witnesses, I can find ten million witnesses from the Southern Wasteland. Over ten million Gold Crow Clan clansmen can be my witnesses, testifying that you have tortured and killed those thirty thousand girls."

He conveniently slapped hard on Meng Ao's face, and half of Meng Ao's teeth were sent flying out of his mouth by this violent slap.

Ji Hao remained cold and continued, "If you still want more witnesses, I can ask Prince Zhu Rong Tonggong to testify to your crimes."

Meng Ao had now nearly gone mad. His body was twitching madly and bouncing on the ground like a desperate fish.

"No! No! How can Gold Crow Clan clansmen be testifying to this?! They're not even in the Pu Ban city! You, you, Ji Hao, you... this... why does this have anything to do with Prince Zhu Rong? Zhu Rong...Tonggong, he, he is a prince, of God country, you..."

Meng Ao couldn't even let out a complete and logical sentence. He was really driven mad by Ji Hao.

"Eh? Can't Gold Crow Clan clansman testify to your crime? But, why did you believe those Rong Mountain Clan people and take their words as evidence?"

"Since you have framed us, I just want you to know what does being framed by others and not getting the truth straight out feels like."

Ji Hao sneered and continued, "Just cut the crap. Tell us what did Prince Wuyou and the so-called Prince Xu say to you after they had called you in."

Crooking his finger, the new leather storage bag tied around Meng Ao's waist was abruptly grabbed off by Ji Hao. Then tens of human-head-sized all-adapting magical crystals were poured out by Ji Hao, clanging against the ground and rolling around Ji Hao's

feet.

"Damn you! These are the magic crystals we found in that mine!" Feng Xing grabbed a piece of crystal and smashed it on Meng Ao's face with all his power, while yelling, "Bastard! How did you get these crystals? Were Wuyou and Xu's brains damaged that they would give you all these for no reason?"

Meng Ao's eyeballs rolled quickly inside his eye sockets, trying to come up with a reasonable explanation.

However, Ji Hao wasn't planning on giving him another opportunity for lying. He locked his fingers together and let out a spell, then pressed his finger hard against the middle of Meng Ao's eyebrows. Instantly, Meng Ao's shoulders began shaking - Ji Hao had nearly shattered his soul into pieces.

"Yu Mu, do you have any poison that can make him more sensitive? I mean, for example, with that kind of poison, if I cut him with my dagger, he would feel more pain than he would usual by hundreds, even thousands of times. I have read about something like this back in the Magi Palace, called 'nine-death soul-shattering poison', but I didn't have enough time to concoct it yet."

Yu Mu gave Ji Hao a simple and honest grin, then took out a bottle of poison from his sleeve and said, "I happen to have a bottle of that. Hm, I have also added thousand-ant grass, centipede-grass, blood-scorpion leaves, black-snake petals, white spider and a few other rare poisonous materials. Feed him this, then you don't need to do any extra work, he will beg for death."

Feng Xing subconsciously leapt away from Yu Mu, turned his head around while yelling at Yu Mu, "Damn you! Bloody fatso! So cruel!"

Hearing Yu Mu, Ji Hao gave a rather pleased look when took over that bottle and conveniently poured a small half of the bottle into Meng Ao's mouth.

Not long after that, a horrible heart-breaking scream came out from the cave. Meng Ao gasped quickly while screaming. Under the control of Ji Hao's soul attacking magic, Meng Ao's soul was nearly squeezed broken. Without any hesitation, Meng Ao screamed out everything that Gong Gong Wuyou and Prince Xu had asked him to do, in details, and with a high-pitched voice.

Just as Ji Hao had thought. Gong Gong Wuyou and Prince Xu first threatened Meng Ao with their family backgrounds, then gave him these crystals. Meng Ao easily agreed to do what he had been told, and had already informed the Magi Palace about Ji Hao and his teammates having fled away for their own safely when the campsite was attacked by wild beasts, then attempted to blackmail the Rong Mountain clan for their newly discovered crystal mine.

After this, Gong Gong Wuyou and Prince Xu would only need to push a little bit with their own powers and Ji Hao and his teammates, who had committed such a huge serious crime, would never be able to stay in the Magi Palace for another day. Even if Si Wen Ming guaranteed their innocence himself, Ji Hao and his teammates would still be kicked out of the Magi Palace.

After the Magi Palace would have kicked them out, with Gong Gong Wuyou and Prince Xu's power and backgrounds, they could just randomly send a few assassins and easily crush Ji Hao and his teammates. After all, they were just a few kids.

"Such a perfect plan." Ji Hao threw another series of punches on Meng Ao's face, then took out a piece of leather, cut Meng Ao's finger open and made him write his confession on that leather piece in details.

Ji Hao then did the same thing to Meng Ao's two assistants, getting three confessions in total, then he carefully put the three pieces of leather in his storage bag.

"Now, we have to go to the Pu Ban City and find a powerful person to support us. Without a powerful supporter, it still won't

be easy for us to get out of this shi**y trouble," said Ji Hao, after letting out a light sigh.

Chapter 224: Misfortune

Back in the Pu Ban City, stars were shining brightly in the sky and a gentle breeze was bringing dense sweet flower fragrance over.

From a tall tower, the singing sounds of young girls were coming along with silvery musical notes, sounding like streams of water and similar to the sound of gentle rain, which was pure and clean enough to wash away the dirt that had accumulated around the hearts of people.

A floating mountain with a radius of a few miles drifted slowly above the Ten Sun market. The floating mountain was covered entirely by a zhang-thick metal armor, which was crafted as an integral whole, without any opening, but thickly dotted with countless holes that made it possible for arrows to be shot out.

On the black leather-scale-like armour, countless palm-sized spell symbol were sparkling, like tens of thousands of fireflies. The faint glow of those spell symbols made the black armor seem especially dark, showering under the starlight, slowly drifting by up in the air, like a fierce devil.

Ying Yunpeng was standing on the biggest crossroad of the Ten Sun market, while gnashing his teeth and staring at that floating mountain that was moving slowly across the air.

This was a floating battle-fort made by a master craftsman of the Magi Palace. This floating fort was made from a natural floating mountain, on which the most powerful magic formation and puppet magic of the Magi Palace had been added. This floating fort might not seem like a big deal, but in fact it could block attacks that were launched by over a thousand Senior Magi simultaneously. Before the magic crystal that was providing energy for the floating fort was depleted, not even a Magus King would be able to break this fort.

One could see numerous these types of battle-forts surrounding the Pu Ban City. These battle-forts were the strongest line of defense of the Pu Ban City, and were the direct embodiment of Emperor Shun's great determination.

"Damn it."

Ying Yunpeng felt a sphere of angry flame was about to explode inside his heart. He raised his feet and wanted to stamp against the ground, but he soon suppressed his anger and put his foot that he had raised to stomp, gently down on the ground.

He had withheld his anger not because he was afraid of the rules set by the Magi Palace or because of the prohibition made by the King of the humankind that strictly forbade anyone to break the geographical formations of the Pu Ban City - all these were nonsense for him - but he was afraid of damaging the buildings of the Ten Sun market by accident.

With Ying Yunpeng's power, he could probably shatter half of the Ten Sun market into pieces by a single stamp and kill at least a hundred thousand servants and waiters. But would anyone compensate him for those losses?

"Calm down, peacefully, nicely..." Ying Yunpeng took a long and deep breath, slowly adjusted the streams of boiling raging blood inside his body. This method had been taught to him by a mysterious powerful man he knew. Whenever he felt angry or anxious, this heart-comforting spell would always help him to calm down quickly.

His boiling blood gradually cooled down, the hairs that were standing straight up fell back down one after another. Ying Yunpeng walked step by step on the wide road that was paved with soft and pure-white sands while holding his hand behind his back. With a dark face he went inside his headquarters office that had been set up in the Pu Ban City by the Ten Sun Country.

A few middle-aged men, whose faces were equally dark as that of

Ying Yunpeng, followed behind him. All of them were soaked in cold sweat that dripped to the ground along the corners of their long cloaks.

Drops of perspiration dripped continuously on the ground, leaving clearly visible stains on the shining and smooth stone floor.

"Don't be so afraid," said Ying Yunpeng with a bland tone, "This is not your responsibility, no need to be so panicked."

The little group of men sighed in relief and their tightened faces loosened up a bit.

A quarter of an hour ago they had received a message regarding ten gigantic-scaled Dragon-Turtle merchant ships, which were carrying all the incomes that the Ten Sun market had generated and embarked on their journey to the Eastern Westland from out of the Ten Sun market. The message mentioned meeting a crazy huge beast within the void at a distance of three millions away from the Midland.

All ten merchant ships were swallowed entirely by that terrifying gigantic beast of the void together with all the precious crystals, jade coins and other valuable cargo that was being carried on the ships and all the staff working on those ships. Only a Magus King, who had been responsible for escorting those ships to the Eastern Wasteland, had been able to retain his head and a small half of his upper body. This Magus King managed to return to the Pu Ban City with blood-escaping magic, reported the accident with his last bit of power, then died because of the breakdown of his soul.

Such a terrifyingly gigantic void beast had appeared less than three million miles away from the Pu Ban City and ran right into the Ten Sun Country's merchant ship fleet. Ying Yunpeng could blame no one but the extremely bad luck for this.

This was similar to when in a duel between two archers, both launched arrows from a distance of ten miles, but instead of

reaching their intended targets, those arrows flew away with some great gust of wind and accidently killed another man that was too ordinary to be even mentioned and was having his meal happily at his home, at a distance of thirty thousand miles away from the archers.

Only bad luck of such magnitude could explain what had happened to the Ten Sun Country this time.

"How much have we lost? I mean, apart from those officially registered cargo, how much did we actually lose?"

Ying Yunpeng walked into a hall, took a seat, and looked at the few middle-aged men with cold eyes.

These few men, whose tightened faces had just loosened, instantly thudded their knees against the ground.

Every year the Ten Sun market would send a merchant ship fleet which carried all the incomes made by the market during the past year back to the Ten Sun country. This kind of merchant ship fleet certainly had incomparably powerful protection. In total, over twenty peak-level Magus Kings and hundreds of lower level Magus Kings were sent out accompanying this fleet.

Besides, all the ten ships were made with the most advanced techniques available in the Pu Ban City. The defensive power of each ship was even greater than that of the floating battle-fort that had just drifted over them by thirty percent. And the thirty animals that had been pulling those ten gigantic ships forward had all been Magus King level ancient Dragon-Turtles.

Because of such a great protective and defensive power of these merchant ship fleet, the ship fleet was also entrusted with shipping some personal wealth of a large group of influential and powerful people in the Ten Sun Country.

The Ten Sun market was incredibly large. Apart from official stores that had been set up by Ten Sun Country, influential and

powerful people and top-ranking clans of the Eastern Wasteland had also set up stores in the Ten Sun market, selling special local products that were produced in their own territory. All of their incomes, materials that had purchased in the Pu Ban City, and large amounts of armors and weapons, were also all on those ships. That was an incredibly great amount of armors and weapons, enough to arm a million elite warriors, belonging to the few most powerful clans of the Eastern Wasteland.

"El...elder, please, help us," the few middle-aged men even screamed out, "Too...too much! Apart from official incomes of the Ten Sun market, each of those few big clans had large amounts of materials on the ten ships. Now all is gone.

Ying Yunpeng's body quivered. Although he was a peak-level Magus King, he still nearly spurted a mouthful of blood out.

"You...how on earth could this happen? Did someone send that void beast on purpose, or..." Ying Yunpeng looked in despair at the few middle-aged man, who were always trusted by him. At this moment, he truly wanted to pull out a sword and chop these few douchebags into pieces.

He would still be able to deal with it if he had only lost the official incomes of the Ten Sun market. It was easy to come up with an official excuse and let someone else take the blame.

But all the cargos belonging to those powerful clans had all been lost as well.

Those people would never accept any excuses or explanation, neither would they forgive Ying Yunpeng because he was an elder of the Magi Palace. If one lost one of their daggers, they would certainly cut tens of openings in his or her body. Now, Ying Yunpeng had lost all those weapons and armors that could arm a million elite warriors. Even if there were a hundred more Ying Yunpengs, those people would kill every single one of them and still feel it to be not enough.

While Ying Yunpeng was shocked badly and frightened by the total loss, a young man staggered up into the hall in a hurry, while yelling loudly.

"Elder! Elder! Great Gale Ling! He, he, he was drunk, fell into a pit, d-d-died!!"

The eyes of Ying Yunpeng popped wide open, paused for quite a while like a puppet, then finally spurted out that huge mouthful of blood which he had been holding in the whole time.

Chapter 225: Falling on Evil Days

Ying Yunpeng took the few middle-aged men and rushed to the east of the market of the Ten Sun market as quickly as possible.

The clear stream, which looked vivid because of the floating grasses in it, was flowing in a serpentine fashion across a beautiful mountain area. Lines of wooden buildings and stone houses were built in this area. This place was the luxurious part of the Ten Sun market, and one would be able to find the most beautiful women and delicious wine in this place.

Of course, this place was also filled with all kinds of possibilities that could stimulate the most primitive desires of people, encouraging them to spend their coins and energy lavishly. This kind of activities were either put on the table or hidden in the darkness. The annual profit of this small east market represented over thirty percent of the total profit made by the Ten Sun market.

Under a small hill that was covered by thriving plants, in a shallow aqueduct, Great Gale Ling was lying with a weird and frozen smile on his face. His body was now as cold as a piece of ice, not even a single wisp of life force was remaining inside his body. He had already died long time ago.

A few pure-white-haired elderly Maguspriests were standing beside the aqueduct. All kinds of insects and small-scale beasts that had great sense of smell were moving quickly around their bodies, trying to discover any possible traces that may have been left by the murderer who had killed Great Gale Ling. A few Senior Magi, who were especially good at tracking and assassination, were also carefully checking the shallow aqueduct and Great Gale Ling's body, trying to figure out whether Great Gale Ling had died naturally or murdered by someone else.

"Oi, that's Great Gale Ling, the most talented young archer of the Great Gale Clan!"

"Died just like this! Oh my god, those Great Gale Clan's elders are going to be so sad and frustrated."

"Normally this guy was extremely haughty and arrogant, but during the past few days he had been doing nothing but constantly drinking in the bar, here in the east market, for some unknown reason."

"Could it be that his girlfriend left him for another guy and he couldn't bear it, so decided to finish himself?"

Thousands of people with strange smiles were standing either close to the shallow aqueduct or far away from it, while looking at the body of Great Gale Ling. All these people were all guests of the east market... they were either from big-scale clans of the four Wastelands or the Midland and were all rich and powerful people. None of these people were afraid of the Ten Sun Country, therefore, they voiced their thoughts loudly, while pointing at the dead body of Great Gale Ling.

Pu Ban City was a peaceful place. It was the political center of the entire human world and was filled with all kinds of powerful Magi. It had also been well protected by all kinds of defensive magic formations and guarded by large amounts of elite warriors. Therefore, homicide cases filled with mysteries hardly ever happened in this city. Moreover, the Ten Sun market was controlled by the Ten Sun Country. People from all over the world knew how great the archers of the Ten Sun Country were. It was nearly impossible for someone to sneak into the Ten Sun market under their watch.

As for Great Gale Ling, he was a famous talented archer among the younger generation of the Ten Sun Country, and was quite influential in the Pu Ban city. During the past few years, Great Gale Ling and other few young Magi of the Ten Sun Country had created different-scaled conflicts against people from other clans many times.

Such a young, talented and potential Magus abruptly died in a small, shallow aqueduct that was less than a foot deep. Without a doubt, this was like a heavy slap that had been thrown on the face of the Ten Sun Country.

Many people were taking pleasure in this misfortune. It wouldn't matter if they discovered the murderer, because the death of Great Gale Ling had badly humiliated Ying Yunpeng and the Ten Sun Country.

Ying Yunpeng rushed over with the little group of middle-aged men while his face looked twisted and dark. He had even forgotten about the accident of the fleet for the time-being. Although the cargo that those ships were carrying was extremely valuable stuff that had been lost, it was lost without the possibility of retrieval. Ying Yunpeng could only accept such a result.

Besides, only the core members of the administrative staff of the Ten Sun Country knew about this accident. As long as they could keep this news from the others, the overall situation wouldn't become too embarrassing.

However, Great Gale Ling had died right in the east market, under the watch of countless guards of the Ten Sun Country. If Ying Yunpeng couldn't figure out how exactly this happened soon enough and execute the murderer in front of everybody through the most cruel ways, the death of Great Gale Ling would become a heavy smear on the reputation of the Ten Sun Country.

After all, so many people had witnessed his death.

Rushing angrily over to the aqueduct, Ying Yunpeng waved his long arms, which even reached his knees, and yelled harshly, "How on earth did this happen?!!"

Ying Yunpeng truly wished that he could make an excuse, such as Great Gale Ling was actually suffering from a serious disease for a long time and died because of the sudden attack of his disease. This kind of excuse could serve as a big leaf that could stop people from

doubting the Ten Sun market, or even the Ten Sun Country's power and status. Nevertheless, Great Gale Ling was a Senior Magus, what kind of diseases could Senior Magi have?

Senior Magi were like monsters that would never be defeated by the weather or disease. They had tremendous amount of life force that allowed them to have thousands of years of lives. If a young and strong senior Magus suddenly died, he was certainly murdered by someone or something, and couldn't possibly have died because of a natural cause. Therefore, Ying Yunpeng was not even able to come up with a reasonable excuse.

Ying Yunpeng could only yell angrily at those Maguspriests and Senior Magi, in both anger and shame, questioning the cause of Great Gale Ling's death.

An elderly Maguspriests quickly walked over, bowed politely and deeply to Ying Yunpeng and said, "Elder Yunpeng, we roughly have an idea what may have happened."

A group of people walked up to Ying Yunpeng and reported to him about what they had seen or heard about Great Gale Ling. Some of these people were waiters working in the bar, some of them were girls who had flirted with Great Gale Ling, some of them were warriors from other clans, who had gambled a few rounds with Great Gale Ling and had won thousands of jade coins from him.

Since Grate Gale Ling had been injured by Yu Mu's poison, released by Shaosi and gotten back to the Ten Sun Market, he had been doing nothing else but drinking in the bar. He had never been sober during the past few days, had always been staggering on the road and talking nonsense. Besides, he was extremely unlucky in any of the gambling games during the past few days. Every day he would lose over ten thousand jade coins. Finally, he had nearly lost all he had earned in the Pu Ban City during the past few years.

He had also started conflicts on many occasions with other young

men from other large-scale clans, just for the sake of a few pretty barmaids. Once, he had almost dueled someone.

Today, Great Gale Ling had lost another three thousand jade coins, walked out of the bar with empty pockets, while yelling at the owner of the bar, telling him to keep accounts. After that, he walked away with his entire body emitting a dense scent of alcohol. Many people had seen Great Gale Ling walking out of the bar alone, going down the hill along the small path that was paved with flat stones. About ten minutes later, Great Gale Ling was found dead in the aqueduct.

During these ten minutes, no noise that sounded like fighting had been heard by anyone. Neither had any sense of power been felt by anyone around here. None of those especially trained fighting birds of the Ten Sun Country, which were hovering above the east market, had sensed any abnormal sign.

A Senior Magus leapt up from the aqueduct, handed a thumb-sized scorpion tail to Ying Yunpeng, with a weird facial expression.

"Elder, we think, Great Gale Ling was badly drunk, and couldn't even stand steadily, so he fell into this aqueduct. By accident, this poisonous scorpion tail was buried in the white sand that was paved on the bottom of the aqueduct. The hook of this tail happened to be pierced into the vital spot back in his head, injected venom into his body, paralyzed his neuro-system and blocked his power, even disabling him from breathing. Therefore, he had died because of suffocation."

This Senior Magus looked at Ying Yunpeng with an extremely weird expression and continued, "We didn't find any traces that could prove the possibility of murder, which means, he was purely unlucky, fell into the aqueduct and got pierced by this fall off scorpion tail."

A Maguspriests said with a hoarse voice, "Judging from the appearance of this tail, it had been soaked in water for at least a

month. In other words, this scorpion tail was not put down their on purpose. It had been buried in the aqueduct for quite a long time before Great Gale ling had fallen in."

Ying Yunpeng opened his mouth, but was unable to utter any words.

This scorpion tail was actually not poisonous enough to kill Great Gale Ling, if he hadn't been that drunk.

However, he had been badly drunk, fell into the aqueduct and got pierced by the scorpion on the vital spot on the back of his head. The venom gushed into his body, mixed with the power of alcohol, accidentally yet actually killed this young and talented Senior Magus, who could have such a bright future.

"How on earth should I explain this to the master elder of the Great Gale Clan?!!" screamed Ying Yunpeng, "You, what do you want me to say to him?!"

Another Senior Magus darted over like a gust of wind, while yelling with a loud yet hoarse voice.

"E-elder! Ying Yun, he-he fell off from his battle bird, di-died!"

Everybody in presence was shocked by this news, and looked at Ying Yunpeng, whose face had suddenly turned deadly pale.

Chapter 226: The News of His Death

The bloodline power of Senior Magi was as great as a raging dragon. As for Magus Kings, their bloodline powers were as terrifying as hundreds of dragon ragingly fighting against each other in the ocean, which would even darken the sky.

Once he heard the news of Ying Yun's death, Ying Yunpeng let out a muffled moan, then streams of blood simultaneously darted out from his ears, nostrils and mouth. Accidentally, two close followers of his, who had been standing on each side of him, were hit by the streams of blood that had a slight mix of cyan color and had spurted out from each of his ears. Without even letting out a slight sound, the two peak-level Senior Magi were shattered throughly by the two streams of blood.

"Damn it!"

After all, Ying Yunpeng was an elder of the Ten Sun Country, who had been sent to the Pu Ban City and was in charge of all the administrative work of this Ten Sun market. He suddenly lost control of his own blood and accidentally killed two of his most trusted followers. Seeing that the streams of his blood were spurting even further and were about to cause more serious accidents, he hurriedly opened his mouth and took a great deep breath.

Those streams of blood that had already spurted to over a hundred zhang distance were immediately sucked back towards his mouth along with muffled swishing sounds.

Thousands of people who had been standing around, all were screaming out. They were all frightened badly when Ying Yunpeng let out those streams of blood. A Magus King losing control of his blood could kill all living creatures within the area of ten miles in radius.

That was why the guests that had been watching this great show

in excitement hurriedly activated their life-saving magic talismans, which had been given to them by their own elders, in an attempt to survive the explosion of the bloodline power of Ying Yunpeng. However, Ying Yunpeng hadn't turned completely mad. He had instead sucked those streams of blood back. Those people who had activated their life-saving talisman, now began silently cursing him.

Even for a Magus King, it was extremely consuming to make a life-saving talisman that could block attacks launched by Magus Kings. To make such a life-saving talisman required large amounts of materials and energy. Each of those people had wasted a precious life-saving magic talisman. If it hadn't been for the fact that they were afraid of Ying Yunpeng's Magus King level of power, they would have leapt up, pointed their fingers at Ying Yunpeng and cursed him loudly.

Ying Yunpeng felt as if his heart had been slice into shreds. He took a glance at the poor two Senior Magi who had been shattered into pieces by the stream of blood. He gnashed his teeth and slapped the face of the Senior Magus who had come with this news of death.

A great part of this poor guy's face had instantly been smashed by Ying Yunpeng, but not so long after that, his blood of Senior Magus level gushed into his skull, healing it quickly. The Senior Magus who had been slapped into dizziness by Ying Yunpeng, thudded heavily onto the ground and screamed with a trembling voice, "Ying...Ying Yun had captured a gold-winged blood eagle a couple of days ago, and he had been training the bird during the past few days. Today he tried to fly that bird for the first time, but..."

Ying Yunpeng was quivering intensely as well, while darting towards where Ying Yun had fallen. He had instantly forgotten about the death of Great Gale Ling.

Great Gale Ling was not any important person but only a talented

kid of the Great Gale Clan. His death was not a huge deal, even unrelated to Ying Yunpeng at all. However, the young man called Ying Yun was the most beloved son of Ying Yunpeng. Ying Yunpeng had only this son in his nearly thousand years old life. Therefore, he had always been trying to take especially good care of Ying Yun.

When Ying Yun had still been in the womb of his Amma, Ying Yunpeng shed his own spirit blood to nourish his son, which allowed Ying Yun to have the intelligence that was no worse than that of any ten year old kids when he was a newborn baby. Besides, Ying Yun was able to walk and run right after his birth and had peak Junior Magus level strength.

Ying Yunpeng had awakened all Ying Yun's inherited power meridians with his own power, and had fed Ying Yun with all kinds of precious magic medicines and nourished him with countless natural treasures. Ying Yun had awakened his first Magus Acupoint when he was only ten years old, after which, Ying Yun maintained the amazing record of awakening a Magus Acupoints every ten or fewer days. Within only four years, Ying Yun had awakened over three hundred Magus Acupoints.

With those three hundred Magus Acupoints, Ying Yun was definitely one of the best among the younger generation of Senior Magi. Not to mention that, in order to strengthen Ying Yun's body, Ying Yunpeng had even risked his own life and went to the Far East Ocean and killed a pureblood evil dragon. He had showered Ying Yun's body with dragon blood, which allowed Ying Yun to reach the peak of the Senior Magus level at such a young age.

After he had killed the dragon, a conflict between the Ten Sun Country and the dragon-kind, living in the Far East Ocean, had been started. The dragon kind living in the Far East Ocean was seriously enraged. Billions of ocean creatures had brought up a tsunami and launched an attack on the Ten Sun Country. If it hadn't been for Emperor Shun who had gone to the Eastern

Wasteland himself and mediated the conflict, the Ten Sun Country might have suffered great damage.

Ying Yunpeng had put too many hopes and ambitions on Ying Yun. He even wanted to raise Ying Yun into the youngest and most powerful Divine Magus in the entire Ten Sun Country. He even wanted to push his son into the Divine Magus level before he broke into that level himself.

But all those hopes and ambitions had been broken today.

The cultivation Ying Yunpeng passed to his son that cost over ten years and almost all of his wealth had gone without leaving even a trace.

"Fallen and dead, hehe, fallen and dead," while walking, Ying Yunpeng murmured like a crazy old woman, "He had the body of a peak-level Senior Magus, over three hundred awakened Magus Acupoints, and was able to roll on the backs of those fighting birds since he was a little baby. My son, Ying Yun, how could he possibly just fall and die?"

To Ying Yunpeng, this was less possible than seeing real ghosts, ten-thousand times.

Ying Yun was a peak-level Senior Magus, even if he had been thrown down from the air millions of feet high from the ground, he would at most break a few ribs, but would never be killed just like that.

Did people have any idea how great the life force of Senior Magi was? Once, a human Senior Magus had taken a bet with a God, and had directly jumped down from the top of the Mountain Buzhou, which was called 'sky-holding pillar' back then. That human Senior Magi had finally fallen on the ground after a big half of a month. He was badly injured and nearly dead, but eventually survived.

A Gold-Winged Blood Eagle could fly five million meters high

tops. Could such a small height made a Senior Magus fall to his death? A Senior Magus like Ying Yun, who was fed with countless different kinds of natural treasures and been strengthened with the blood of a real dragon?

"All guards, servants, who have been staying with Yun these days, kill them, kill them all, along with all of their relatives, all of them," said Ying Yunpeng while walking fast, with his hands constantly shaking, "Kill, kill them all. Feed their flesh and soul to evil spirits, I want them all to perish, both their bodies and souls."

Ying Yunpeng abruptly spat out a big mouthful of blood, then began coughing. At the same time, two lines of blood-red tears gushed out of his eye sockets.

"Yun, my little boy, my boy...how could you just fall to your own death like that? You were murdered, must be murder...whom...who murdered, my poor little boy?" Ying Yunpeng had now completely fallen into insanity. In his eyes, Ying Yun was so powerful and talented, the one who had easily killed him must be a Magus King level person.

In his head he searched those Magus Kings who had a hatred for him and would dare to murder his son, but he helplessly discovered that there were quite many of them.

Ying Yunpeng staggered at a quick pace out of the Ten Sun market with a large group of people coming to the small hill outside the market that was thickly dotted with red and white flowers.

Beside the small hill, Ying Yun was stuck straight in the ground, with his head upside down. Between his straight-stretched legs, a purely golden-purple bamboo shoot that was covered with blood could be seen.

A group of Senior Magi had already begun checking the scene carefully. There were all extremely experienced. If anyone had done anything to Ying Yun or this area purposely, they could

certainly discover it.

After Ying Yunpeng arrived at the scene, a Senior Magus hurriedly kneeled on the ground, and while quivering, reported what he had discovered.

Ying Yun had been training the newly captured Gold-Winged Blood Eagle in the air, but accidentally, the eagle was stung by a poisonous bee on the corner of its eye. Therefore, the enraged Gold-Winged Blood Eagle began flapping its wings madly in the air, and slapped Ying Yun off from its back.

Ying Yun fell down onto the ground with his head upside down, which shouldn't be a big deal at all. Nevertheless, a purple-blood bamboo shoot that had grown out just last night was standing on exactly the spot he had fallen onto.

Ying Yun hadn't seen the bamboo shoot until he fallen very close to it. Out of shock, he didn't manage to react in time, therefore, the bamboo shoot punctured his entire upper body along his spine, instantly killing him without leaving any opportunity for rescue.

Chapter 227: Another Sudden Death

Purple-blood bamboo was a natural treasure.

It would take a thousand years for purple-blood bamboo to bloom, and another thousand years to yield fruits. The fruits would take a thousand years to mature, then stretch their bamboo-leaves-like wings, and fly up into the air along the wind. The bamboo fruits would then fly to the outer circle of the Midland, into the fierce natural power wind, and after ten thousand years, these fruits would gradually grow dense and heavy, falling slowly back to the ground.

After having fallen back to the ground from the fierce natural power wind, these fruits of the bamboo would sink into the ground three thousand zhang deep, where it would absorb the natural power contained in the ground for three hundred and sixty years, then sprout out.

After every time it was being nourished by the rain or thunder during spring, the roots of bamboo seed would increase a zhang length. In such manner, after three thousand times of rains and thunders during spring, the roots of the bamboo would have grown a few hundred zhang under the ground, after which it would finally emerge from the ground.

Before the bamboo shoot had emerged from the ground, no one would be able to find the slightest trace of it. However, once the bamboo shoot emerged from the ground, even powerful Magi at the level of Divine Magus would go all out to possess it. Usually they would occupy a large territory around the bamboo shoot, nurture it with all kinds of precious liquids, in order to make it grow as quickly as possible and eventually make it reproduce purple-blood bamboo wood.

Mature purple-blood bamboos were hundreds of zhang tall, slim and beautiful, and capable of gathering natural power. A small

purple-blood bamboo wood could naturally form a perfect cultivating ground. More importantly, these bamboos were incredibly solid and could even easily pierce through the bodies of Senior Magi. Also, this kind of bamboo had special spiritual power, which was destructive to ghosts and spirits.

The bamboo shoot that had killed Ying Yun hadn't been noticed by anyone before Ying Yun had fallen on it.

Obviously, this was a new bamboo shoot that had just emerged from the ground. It was even possible that this bamboo shoot had emerged from the ground at exactly the same moment when Ying Yun had fallen from the air. This sharp, straight and solid bamboo shoot directly pierced into Ying Yun's skull and came out from between his legs.

What kind of unlucky person would die in such a weird way?

The tender branches of any other magic trees or plants would never be able to kill a Senior Magus. The only plant that was capable of killing a Senior Magus when it first sprouted from the ground was this magical and powerful purple-blood bamboo.

Ying Yunpeng was standing beside Ying Yun's dead body, staring at the badly damaged body of his precious son, with a bland expression.

This beloved little boy of his, on whom all of Ying Yunpeng's hopes and ambitions had been resting, had died like this, in such a misfortunate, weird and accidental way, which might even make others want to laugh. If he was killed in the battle against non-human monsters by powerful enemies, Ying Yun could still at least have earned honor and reward for his family. However, he had died when training his own newly captured battle bird. He had fallen down from the air and been pierced to death by a bamboo shoot.

Ying Yunpeng couldn't even start to imagine how he should explain the death of his son to others... there was simply no way to

explain!

If next time, Emperor Shun asked him, 'Elder Yunpeng, I heard that your boy died, how did that happen? Was it that those non-human monsters had heard about his talent and achievements, and sent assassins into the Pu Ban City to murder him?

How would Ying Yunpeng explain it? He could only say, 'No, no, my Emperor, that stupid boy of mine was playing with his bird, accidentally fell down from the back of that and was poked to death by a bamboo shoot.'

What would happen after he told the truth? A series of loud laughter let out by the Emperor and the other elders and ministers?

Thinking about that ridiculous and extremely embarrassing scene, Ying Yunpeng truly wanted to pull out that inherited magic longbow of his, and use the string of the bow to strangle himself to death bit by bit.

"Yun...Itis not possible that he just fell and died like that," murmured Ying Yunpeng slowly, "Someone was jealous of him, for his talent. Someone was afraid that when he would grow into a powerful man, he would be a threat to their status... So they murdered him."

Ying Yunpeng then said to those Senior Magi, who were kneeling on the ground in front of him, without daring to move even a bit, with a bland tone, "Your mission is to find this murderer. I don't know who he is, but you have to find him. If you can't find the murderer who killed my son, you scums and all your relatives will die along with my boy."

Taking a deep breath, Ying Yunpeng continued, "Yun is dead, he must be so lonely. He will be glad to have some of his old friends to accompany him."

Those Senior Magi were terrified by the words of Ying Yunpeng.

Cold sweat was pouring down their foreheads in huge streams, some of them even lost control of their bodies and fell on the ground, with legs quivering intensely and egesta flowing out from between their legs. They had already checked the scene, but had failed to find any trace of a magic attack, neither could they detect any power of curse. In other words, they hadn't found any sign that could prove that Ying Yun had died by murder instead of it being an accident.

The whole thing was really an accident.

Although none of them could explain why Ying Yun had fallen down from the air, right onto a thumb-thick bamboo shoot, it did indeed happen and that was, without any question, a god**n accident.

Quite a few people riding on different kinds of fighting birds had flown over. They were hovering around and seeing what was going on with Ying Yunpeng and his people. The five senses of all Senior Magi were amazingly sensitive, which allowed them to see and hear clearly what was happening from tens of miles away.

Soon, the news about Ying Yun dying in an unbelievably weird way had spread out to every corner of the Pu Ban City. More people, who were gloating over Ying Yunpeng's misfortune, personally hated Ying Yunpeng, or simply liked to watch the scene of bustle, gathered from all directions.

All of a sudden, another Senior Magus rushed over while staggering. A fierce gust of wind was swooshing around him while he was running, and he had a pair of gigantic, cyan wings flapping behind his back. Apparently, he was coming from the Eastern Wasteland.

Before this Senior Magus had rushed up to Ying Yunpeng, Ying Yunpeng let out a great growl to him from a long distance

"What now?!"

The great growl transformed into a visible white airwave, fleetingly swished towards the Senior Magus along the ground. The poor Senior Magus rushed directly into the airwave and the following moment, his entire chest turned hollow, which made him vomit a big mouthful of blood and flew backwards for miles.

This Senior Magus struggled up from the ground with great difficulty, kneeled in front of Ying Yunpeng, then lied on the ground with his stomach downwards and screamed in a high-pitched yet hoarse voice, "Lord Ying Su died!! He, he, he was hanging out in the Regretting Beauty, ha-having sex with a little girl, who was sold to the Regretting Beauty, and...and suddenly, all of his spirit blood was sucked out of his body, he, he died just like that."

Ying Yunpeng instantly spurted out a stream of blood. An over ten-zhang in radius, and thousands of feet deep huge pit was opened up on where the stream of blood had fallen, while a gigantic cloud of dirt rose from the ground. Ying Yunpeng then dashed up to that Senior Magus with a single step, grabbed his head and carried him up from the ground.

"Ying Su is a peak-level Senior Magus, and can make his breakthrough into the level of Magus King anytime he wants. How could a little girl possibly suck all of his spirit blood out within a moment?!!"

That Senior Magus looked at Ying Yunpeng, with tears spurted out from his eye sockets and his eyes turned blood-red in fear, seeming even to be having a mental breakdown. He responded while trembling, "That, that girl, we just discovered, she, she had a slight trace of 'life-seizing beauty' bloodline in her... she, she was mixed-blood of human and a mysterious spirit creature. Lord Ying Su penetrated her body, and unexpectedly activated her hidden bloodline power, which sucked all of his spirit blood out of his body instantly."

Ying Yunpeng roared out towards the sky and threw a heavy slap

on the face of that poor Senior Magus, sending him flying away for tens of miles.

Chapter 228: Collaboration

Ying Yunpeng fell ill.

He had suffered from major blood loss and his soul was shaking badly, which meant as a Magus King, he had fallen ill, both physically and mentally, becoming completely bedridden like a vulnerable poor weak women. Huge vats of liquid medicines that he had taken failed to recover even the slightest bit of his energy.

A dense smell of medicines lingered above his house. Ying Yunpeng was huddled up under a thick fur of a bear with his face looking deadly pale. Two dim glowing green flames were sparkling inside his hollowed eye sockets. A few pretty maidservants were standing beside his bed, without daring to even move their eyelids.

An elderly Magus Mediciner was sitting beside the bed. He checked Ying Yunpeng's body with a pair of glowing eyes, then slightly shook his head.

"Elder Yunpeng, you are overly sad and anxious, so..."

"Piss off," said Ying Yunpeng with a cold and bland tone, while waving his hand.

The elderly mediciner instantly stopped working, hurriedly and silently stood up, leaving his bedroom as quickly as possible.

Ying Yunpeng wrapped his own body tight with that piece of bear fur, paused for a while then slowly let out a weak sigh, murmuring, "Yun is dead, fine, I can still have hundreds of sons if I want, but, Su, he...how should I explain his death to my big brother?"

Ying Su was the son of Ying Yunpeng's elder brother and was sent to the Pu Ban City by his father in order to improve his cultivation. The Ten Sun Country was quite powerful, therefore, Ying Su, as the son of an elder, had gotten some not-so-good hobbies. That was why he knew nothing about the abrupt deaths

of Great Gale Ling and Ying Yun. When Great Gale Ling and Ying Yun had died, Ying Su was happily having sex with some girl in Regretting Beauty, under the bright daylight.

No one would have ever thought that he would meet such a little girl who had a slight trace of the bloodline of 'life-seizing beauty' in her. Ying Su accidentally activated that evil and scary bloodline, which then sucked all of his spirit blood out. Within only a moment, even Ying Yun's soul was sucked out of his body and devoured by the bloodline power of the 'life-seizing beauty', completely vanishing from this world.

This way of dying was truly humiliating.

A real man should die in battles, for the future and honor of their clans, for the entire humankind. Even death that happened peacefully on bed because of natural consummation of life force was seen as a humiliation by Magi. However, Ying Su had died on top of a woman's belly.

Hearing about Ying Su's death, Ying Yunpeng, as a powerful Magus King, was struck down by anger and sadness, and ended up vomiting blood in front of tens of thousands of people, who were watching this show, then fell on the ground and fainted. Those Ten Sun Country's people, who had all been freaked out by this, hurriedly carried him back to the Ten Sun market, and fed him with countless kinds of magic medicines and finally managed to wake him up.

"How should I...what should I say to my big brother?"

Ying Yunpeng buried his face in his hands and ceaselessly shook his head. He felt like he had lost control of everything, and everyone had gone against him.

Great Gale Ling had died, a bit weirdly, but he could still barely accept it as an accident.

Ying Yun had died, in an unbelievable way, but he could still grit

his teeth and blame it on fate.

However, he just couldn't accept Ying Su's death, and the way he had died. The bloodline of a life-seizing beauty was a mysterious and evil kind of bloodline, and only had one in hundreds of millions of probability in this world of existing.

While he was sighing, a series of noises came from the outside. Ying Yunpeng angrily yelled out, "What the hell is happening out there?!"

A while later, a maid walked in shaking, knelt on the ground once she had walked into the room and said, "Elder, the mediciner who had just checked you was hit by a Single-Horned Crazy Cattle once he had left here. The cattle's horn had damaged two of his Magus Acupoints, now everyone is trying to save him!"

Ying Yunpeng was suddenly shocked, his old wrinkled face turned darker and darker.

Single-horned crazy cattle was a kind of beast to carry burden, in the most common use here in the Ten Sun market. They were incomparably powerful, and could carry amazingly great amounts of cargos, while during wartime also serve as battle beasts. The few leader cattle working in Ying Yunpeng's yard were all Senior Magus level beasts. Being hurt by these horrible animals, that poor elderly Magus mediciner, who didn't have too much fighting experience to begin with, must be suffering like hell.

"What? Why? Why on earth are all kinds of bad things happening to me all at once? Why do I have such a terrible misfortune lately?!"

Misfortune?

Ying Yunpeng quivered suddenly. His eyes abruptly glowed, then he threw a heavy slap on the huge bed of his, which was carved out of a gigantic piece of stone. Along with a thunderous boom, the stone bed was shattered into ashes, and Ying Yunpeng shouted out

in both rage and shame, "You old Candle Dragon bastard, damn you!! You old piece of shit! You accepted my money, but still did this to me!!"

Ying Yunpeng thought back to a few days ago when Great Gale Ling had returned with Yu Mu's poison still lingering within him. Then Ying Yun, Ying Su, and few other kids were there helping him to heal. All those kids had been in contact with Great Gale Ling physically.

But that old man, master Candle Dragon! In order to make him check the two kids who had suddenly been cursed to death in the Magi Palace, Ying Yunpeng had spent quite a fortune and putting his own dignity aside, bribed and begged quite a few powerful men. But once Great Gale Ling had returned, master Candle Dragon had instantly run away, without leaving so much as his fart behind.

The weirdest thing was that, Ying Yunpeng had ignored this himself, as if this hadn't been a big deal at all.

As for Great Gale Ling, he seemed quite confused when he returned. He didn't tell the others what he exactly had been through, only telling them that the mission had failed. He failed to kill Ji Hao and his team. On the contrary, Great Gale Ling's own teammates were all killed by Ji Hao's team.

While Ying Yunpeng was considering how he would extract revenge for Great Gale Ling, he was told to arrange the shipment of the annual total income of the Ten Sun market, therefore, he had temporarily put the revenge plan aside.

After hearing the accident that happened with the fleet of ships, he had also heard about the death of Great Gale Ling, Ying Yun and Ying Su.

"No, they were not the only three who had been in touch with Great Gale Ling. A few other boys that had been in touch had all been in that fleet of ships! The fleet of ships was swallowed by the

void beast, with only a Magus King surviving!"

Ying Yunpeng gasped in shock, leapt up from the bed.

"It's me! I somehow have ignored all these! Curse! Curse! What kind of curse could make me forget about all that, Great Gale Ling was seriously injured and his team was wiped out?!"

"So horrible, so terrifying! Even I fell into the curse, what about, what about Yun and Su? Those boys?!"

Cold sweat gushed out from his back, and Ying Yunpeng murmured, "If I hadn't been this powerful, I might have already died in some ridiculous accident, just like those boys!"

"Good, good, good, you old Candle Dragon bastard, it's all because of you!"

"And you bunch of little bastards! Shaosi? Taisi? Who else? Hehe, you bunch of little bastards! Hehe, I know all these are related to you, how could I let you live?!"

A slightly trembling voice came from the outside.

"Elder, Prince Xu from the Lie Mountain Family wants to see you."

Ying Yunpeng paused for a second, frowned, then suddenly raised his eyebrows and laughed out loud, then said, "Ah! Prince Xu from the Lie Mountain Family! Rong Mountain Clan belonged to the Lie Mountain Family. I seem to remember that those few little bastards had gone to the Rong Mountain Clan a while ago!"

"Hurry up! Let Prince Xu come in! No, no, no, I will now go out to greet Prince Xu myself!"

Chapter 229: Ku Quan

Inside a large hall, which was lit up by a dim candle light, the waxed floor paved with thick wooden boards looked so bright and smooth that one could even see the clear reflection oneself in it.

The arc roof was supported by twelve thick and huge pillars, which were built in two lines, with each having bronze candle holders. Thumb-thick candles, which were made from animal oil, had been blazing and letting out sizzling noise. Every time the oil popped in the flame, the candle light would abruptly grow a slight bit brighter.

Under each pillar, a few fully armed warriors were standing there, while holding their hands in front of their chests, each carrying a long sword. From under their thick metal masks, one could hear their beast-like heavy breathing.

A few maidservants, who were wearing white long dresses, gently and cautiously walked out from behind a screen in that hall, without making any sound. They silently walked across the smooth floor like ghosts, and quickly placed tens of plates of food, fresh fruits, and wine pots on the stone table, in front of Ying Yunpeng and Prince Xu.

Because Prince Xu was an honored guest, Ying Yunpeng had generously served all the rarest, most luxurious and precious food on the table. This was a feast worthy of the gods. The ingredients were from many kinds of magical and rare animals, including the liver of a dragon and the marrow of a phoenix, and all kinds of rare, fresh fruits. Even not mentioning the others, the hundred-fruit wine, contained in jade wine pots that were placed in front of each of them, was an extremely rare and valuable wine. This wine was produced in the Northern Wasteland by a mysterious non-human clan, called Spirit Hall. Within the translucent jade pot, the originally amber-colored wine now looked beautifully green, even glowing faintly. This was so because Ying Yunpeng had put the

cholecyst of a dragon in each of the pots. All this, just to make Prince Xu feel like a truly honoured guest.

In this world, the dragon and phoenix kind were the two most powerful beings. Both of them were legendary, mysterious, and free from vulgarity, hardly ever making any connection with other kinds.

The cholecyst of a dragon had innumerable amazing effects. It even truly nourishing even for Magi at the Divine Magus level. Each cholecyst was extremely valuable. Hunting a real dragon down to dig its cholecyst out was extremely hard, not even mentioning that even if you did manage to hunt one down, the terrifying revenge of the dragon race should be expected if they discovered it.

A pot of wine that had a cholecyst of a dragon soaked in it would be treasured even by Emperor Shun himself. Without a doubt, there was no possible way that Prince Xu would express being dissatisfied by such a great treatment.

As anticipated by Ying Yunpeng, Prince Xu was indeed quite satisfied. He poured himself a glass of wine, then slowly and elegantly drank the glass of sticky glowing wine, honestly praising, "It's amazingly delicious, such a marvelous wine! Thank you my dear elder, thank you."

Ying Yunpeng let out a bland grin, then responded in a careless tone, "Just some small stuff, not even worth mentioning. Dear Prince Xu, is there anything I can do for you this time? Are you looking for some rare features? If so, the Ten Sun market is your best choice."

Prince Xu smiled, then shook his head and said, "Today, I'm not in that mood. Hm, elder Yunpeng, have you heard of Meng Ao, the Deacon of the Magi Palace?"

Ying Yunpeng raised his eyebrows, grinned and said, "Yes, I have met him a few times, and was quite impressed by that kid.

Although he is not working directly for me, that kid is astute and quite capable, with good communication skills as well. He is also a competent helper of elder Meng Jiang, from the Qiong Qi Clan of the Western Wasteland."

Ying Yunpeng poured himself a glass of wine and drank it up as well, then continued while smiling, "Elder Meng Jiang is a friend of mine."

"Ah, in this case, it's more than great. That Meng Ao probably died already," Prince Xu said.

Prince Xu's words made the pupils of Ying Yunpeng shrink suddenly. He remained silent for a while, then slightly flicked his fingers on the stone table and said in a deep voice, "Dead? How do you, my dear prince, know about it? You didn't watch him die, did you?"

Prince Xu shook his head again, then told Ying Yunpeng about everything that had happened in the new territory of the Rong Mountain Clan, even including the fact that he had bribed Meng Ao with a bag of magic crystals, telling Meng Ao to return to the Magi Palace and frame Ji Hao. He told Ying Yunpeng every single detail about the series of events.

"When Meng Ao left, I put some small magic on him. However, after less than an hour, the magic mark that I had left on his body disappeared suddenly. Therefore, I came hurriedly to you, my dear elder."

Ying Yunpeng couldn't help but sneer after hearing Prince Xu's words, "Why me instead of Meng Jiang?"

Prince Xu looked at him with a smile and said, "Elder Meng Jiang and those kids working for him have been more than healthy lately, but you, my poor elder Yunpeng, it seems that people who are close to you have all encountered some accidents. Although I don't live in Pu Ban city, I have, more or less, heard about things that happened around here. I know everything that I should be

knowing."

Ying Yunpeng drank up another glass of wine, then a third glass, then a fourth. Soon, a whole potful of wine was emptied by him. He even took that cholecyst of the dragon, which was specially processed with magic and had shrunk to a baby-fist-sized from being zhang-big, directly out of the pot and put in his mouth, chewing it slowly.

Prince Xu showed no sign of haste either, only elegantly pouring wine for himself while slowly tasting those rare and delicate dishes contained in jade trays and served on the table.

Ying Yunpeng remained silent for quite a while, without saying anything. However, a faint sound of footsteps could be heard outside the hall, causing the faces of both Ying Yunpeng and Prince Xu, to tighten simultaneously. With their status, except those guards who were working in this hall, who dared to walk directly in?

Anger could be seen on the face of Ying Yunpeng and he was about to yell, but suddenly, his wrinkled face was filled with a happy grin, like a blooming flower. At the same time, he hurriedly stood up and walked towards the middle-aged man, who was walking slowly towards them.

"Mr Ku Quan! You finally returned! You went away for nearly half an year. Without you, there were many problems that I didn't know who to consult with. This time, if you were here, I probably won't end up so..."

The one who had been walking slowly over from the outside, was a middle-aged man, who had jade-like glowing white skin, long hair that hung loosely on his back, and three strands of long beard on his chin. This man was wearing a crappy white flax coat that was thickly dotted with patches, and a star rope wrapped around his waist serving as a belt. His feet were bare and were white and tender, inches longer than the feet of any ordinary men, being

pure and clean without even a stain.

Prince Xu looked coldly at this middle-aged man, who was called Ku Quan, with eyes that were filled with pride.

Judging from the sense of power that was being released from the body of this man, Prince Xu could sense clearly that this Ku Quan was quite weak. His power was only equal to that of a newly promoted Junior Magus, who had still been a Novice Magus on day earlier. Prince Xu was quite confident that he could shatter this Ku Quan into pieces with a single blow.

If there was anything that seemed special of this Ku Quan, than that would be his eyes. His pair of eyes were especially bright, glowing with a magical light, which had formed half an inch thick halo around each of his eyeballs. But that was all. This Ku Quan seemed by no means powerful.

Once this Ku Quan had walked into the hall, he seriously fixed his eyes on Ying Yunpeng, looking at him from head to toe.

Abruptly, Ku Quan let out a sneer, then thrust his hand out. His fingers released beams of white light that were a foot in length, grabbing the air above Ying Yunpeng's head.

"Elder, have you encountered some weird people lately? Why does your luck seem to be depressed to such a point, and your soul is covered by dust? Even among your three souls and seven spirits, one soul and two spirits were lost. If you hadn't been carrying the jade talisman that I had given you, I'm afraid that you...," said Ku Quan.

Along with his move, a puff of black smoke suddenly gushed out of Ying Yunpeng's head, within which, a few extremely odd and ancient style spell symbols flashed across. After that, both those spell symbols and the puff of black smoke exploded, dissipating in the air.

Ying Yunpeng quivered and felt that a gust of cool and clear wind

blew right into his head and come out from the bottoms of his feet, then his mind, which had been quite confused all these days, instantly returned to being clear and peaceful.

Ying Yunpeng immediately let out a growl, "Mr Ku Quan! The few poor kids of mine, they, they're all dead! In such cruel, horrible ways!"

Three souls and seven spirits: Translated from three Hun(Chinese: ��) and seven Po (Chinese: ��). Hun and Po are types of souls in Chinese philosophy and traditional religion. Within this ancient soul dualism tradition, every living human has three different kinds of souls, which are, soul of life, soul of perception and soul of spirit. The seven spirits also have their different names and functions. After death, the soul of life and soul of perceptions will dissipate in the world, and the soul of spirit will reincarnate into another life, all seven spirits will dissipate as well.

Ku Quan as a name, literally means 'bitter spring' in Chinese.

Chapter 230: Special Abilities

Ku Quan's fingers released a bright magical white glow, instantly breaking the weird curse on Ying Yunpeng's body, which made Prince Xu feel a bit unpleasant.

Prince Xu had been sitting in front of Ying Yunpeng for such a long while, but had failed to perceive any abnormal sign coming from his body. However, a middle-aged man wearing crappy clothes, looking as weak as a chicken, and with an odd name that didn't contain any personal information of his, such as where he had come from, had noticed and easily broken the curse that Prince Xu had not even noticed. This made the middle-aged man seem more powerful than Prince Xu, and Prince Xu was not happy about it.

Sneering, Prince Xu held a glass of wine and gulped it down. Then he stood up, held his hands behind his body, and gave Ku Quan a serious and proud look.

He ignored the sorrowfully yells of Ying Yunpeng, and said with a cold voice, "Elder Yunpeng, this is?"

Ying Yunpeng gasped quickly and deeply. Several of his blood vessels were visible under his skin of his forehead. He silently chanted the spell that had a calming effect and was taught to him by Ku Quan, after which he gradually calmed down. He then smiled and said, "This is a magically powerful man and a very good friend of mine, Mr Ku Quan."

After pausing for a second, Ying Yunpeng then continued with a gentle voice, "During all these years, Mr Ku Quan has been helping me with building this Ten Sun market. Without his help, the Ten Sun market would never grow into such a thriving market."

Prince Xu glanced at Ku Quan scornfully, while keeping his cold look and said, "Help you? Elder Yunpeng, you are supported by the Ten Sun Country and you hold the resources of all the productions

of the majority of the Western Wasteland. With such amazing resources, the Ten Sun market would have grown by itself anyway, why do you need any help?"

Shaking his head, Prince Xu continued, "From such a lowly person?"

Ying Yunpeng smiled, but remained silent. Ku Quan bowed slightly to Prince Xu, and seemed very peaceful and friendly. He was not angry at all.

Before Prince Xu said anything else, Ku Quan put his hand into his sleeve, and took out a piece of stone.

He slightly blew towards that stone, removed a layer of dust covering it, then threw it up and took it back for a few times, after which, he showed the stone to Prince Xu and said, "This, my respectful guest, this is a piece of stone."

Prince Xu angrily yelled, "This is indeed a piece of stone, I am not blind!"

Ku Quan grinned, slowly and gently nodded at Prince Xu, still not angry at all. He then slowly blew towards the stone once again, but this time, the air breathed out of his mouth had a faint gold color. Countless gold particles mixed in the air blew out of his mouth and spread on that stone. Instantly, the stone held in his hand let out wisps of golden lights. Within one to two breaths, the piece of stone remained exactly the same shape, but its complexity changed in quality.

At this moment, the object held in Ku Quan's hand was a piece of pure gold. It had exactly the same shape as that piece of stone, even retaining all the natural patterns and cracks on it.

Ku Quan walked up to Prince Xu with a satisfied look. They eyes of Prince Xu had popped wide and his mouth also hung wide open. Ku Quan handed this piece of gold to him and said, "Now, this is a piece of gold. I, Ku Quan, guarantee with my own life that this is a

piece of pure gold that is without any impurities and doesn't need any purification processes."

"This, this," Prince Xu was totally stunned, while staring at this piece of gold, without being able to let even a sentence out.

All Senior Magi had incredibly great and destructive power, and an amazingly strong life force. Maguspriests were capable of using all kinds of weird magic, which could achieve all kinds of magical effects. Some powerful Maguspriests were even able to change the seasonal weather of an entire area, which had a radius up to a million miles. Through blood offering ceremonies, they could even move mountains and oceans with only a thought.

However, with Prince Xu's knowledge and experience, he had never heard of people capable of such things. Turning a stone into gold!

That was right, this special magic or ability should be called 'turning stone into gold'. But not a single Maguspriest he knew could do this. Besides, gold was a very important resource. It could serve as the most useful balancing metal that the processes of building all kinds of magic tools, weapons, and magic formations, even altars and large-scale weapons that were specially designed for wartime would require...they would all require great amounts of high-quality gold.

Therefore, gold mines were always valued by people, and had gained quite a high price through all these years. As long as you knew how to extract and purify gold and make high-quality gold with high-purity, wealth would come to you by itself.

What if...

Prince Xu's heart began drumming. If he had a few people who could do something like this, working for him, he would daily be able to turn a gigantic pile of stone into gold, into pure, pure gold. Stones were everywhere, but this kind of highest-grade gold... it was billions times more valuable than stones.

"Mr... Ku Quan?" said Prince Xu with a nice and friendly tone, and when he looked back at Ku Quan, his expression had turned much warmer than before.

Ku Quan smiled slightly and flicked his sleeves. Along with his move, twelve weirdly shaped platinum thorns that were all three-foot and six-inches long, flew out from his sleeve. These thorns were extremely sharp, had cyan and cold light faintly sparkling on their points. Ku Quan pitched one of these thorns and swept slightly across the gold piece in Prince Xu's hand. The piece of gold was immediately split into two.

The cutting edge was as smooth as a mirror, without any rags. The colour and texture of the cut surface showed clearly that this piece of gold was solid and whole, instead of some camouflage.

Prince Xu stared stunned at Ku Quan, and Ku Quan turned his wrist around, piercing that thorn hard into his heart. Along with a noise that sounded like a needle poking into a fresh fruit, the thorn went into Ku Quan's body and came out from his back, however, not a single drop of blood was left on that needle.

"This," Prince Xu shook his head. He didn't feel anything special about this at all. It was nothing but piercing a sharp object into a human body. Any ordinary Senior Magus would be able to do so. Senior Magi had great and thriving life force anyway, they could even quickly grow broken limbs back anytime they wanted, and Ku Quan had only pierced a needle into his own body.

But right after he had pierced the first thorn into his chest, Ku Quan silently pierced all the remaining eleven thorns into the vital body parts. Every single thorn had complete punctured his body and came out from his back, perfectly clean without any stain of blood. Ku Quan even pierced one thorn into his head, without showing slightest bit of pain on his face.

Prince Xu was stunned again. The brain being punctured by a sharp metal weapon, even Senior Magi wouldn't be able to

guarantee to survive doing so. After all, the brain was closely connected with the soul. Even a Magus King couldn't say for sure if his or her soul would remain unharmed after his or her brain had been punctured.

While grinning, Ying Yunpeng slapped his hands together, followed by which, four guards who had been standing in the hall, hurriedly walked over. They pulled out their long swords and started madly hacking towards Ku Quan.

Once again, Prince Xu was deeply shocked. Judging from the sense of power released by him, this Ku Quan was only a new Junior Magus, but facing the full strength hacks of four Senior Magi, a faint layer of white light slowly rotated around Ku Quan's body, and the four heavy metal swords brought up large amounts of fire sparks against the white light. However, not even a hair of Ku Quan was harmed by those swords.

The four Senior Magi hacked Ku Quan for an entire twenty minutes. Finally, when they were nearly out of breath, Ying Yunpeng told them to stop. After that, Ying Yunpeng told a servant to bring over a blazing ingle, which was a large metal bowl fully containing a blazing and sticky oil.

This kind of oil had been purified by special magic, which allowed it to maintain and strengthen the flame. As for the cyan colored flame, although it looked quite average, in fact, this flame was brought out from the earth core, and capable of melting almost all kinds of metal in this world. Even an amazingly solid body of a Magus King would slowly melt in this kind of flame, after being burned for a certain span of time.

Ku Quan kept his calm and peaceful look on his face and stepped into the flame bowl, showing absolutely no fear. He then sat down in the flame bowl with his legs crossed, looking at Prince Xu with a smile.

Being burned by the flame for half an hour, not even a hair of Ku

Quan was burnt. He showed no sign of having activated any protecting magic talisman or tools, which meant that he had been enduring the flame solely with his body.

Prince Xu was now sincerely convinced by Ku Quan. He bowed deeply to him and said, "Mr Ku Quan, please take a seat, please. We have this small problem that might urgentlyneed your help."

Chapter 231: Earl Chong

It was the first time that Ji Hao was walking into Pu Ban City.

This city was nothing like what he had imagined. There were no magnificent buildings to be found here, nor were there guarded palaces or mansions to be seen. Except the residential areas that were built by the large and powerful organizations, which had come from all the four Wastelands, like the Ten Sun Country, all the other parts of Pu Ban City were entirely natural.

The road paved with flagstones was over two-zhang wide, freely extending along the terrain. There were branch paths that led to smaller hills, woods, rivers and valleys. Under those smaller hills, within those woods and valleys, and beside rivers or streams, one could see a cabin, or a small building, or a few stone houses that were built in a circle.

Buildings here in the Pu Ban City were sparsely built upon the natural geographic features. People that had come from the same clan would build their residence close the houses of their clansmen, while people from different clans lived relatively far away from each other.

In Ji Hao's eyes, the Pu Ban City was a huge unit that consisted of smaller villages. It seemed as if a gigantic hand had conveniently grabbed thousands, even tens of thousands of villages, and had randomly thrown them on this beautiful and fertile Pu Ban City. With these small villages, the Pu Ban city was formed gradually.

Quack, quack!

A huge group of green-headed duck, which were all too fat to even move, walked over along the road. Nearly three thousand ducks were walking towards Ji Hao while swaying their bodies. The duck that was walking in front to the troop, which looked like a leader, proudly let out a few quacks at Ji Hao, even leaning its head forward in order to try pecking Ji Hao.

Ji Hao could only step aside and stand in the cluster of grass that reached his waist, and let those ducks have the entire road.

This group of fat ducks slowly walked past Ji Hao while swaying their round fat butts. A few female ducks abruptly raised their butts and quivered their bodies, letting out a few warm, green duck eggs on the grass.

"Eh?!" Ji Hao bowed happily, preparing to pick those few eggs up. He was planning to boil them later as his dinner, but two huge and slim dogs immediately rushed over, while wagging their tails. They practically rolled those few eggs with their tongues, right after which, a cute, tiny fluffy white donkey, carrying a big basket on its back, ran quickly over.

These two dogs gently put those duck eggs in the basket that was being carried on the back of the donkey, then thrust out their long and wet tongues, friendly licking Ji Hao's palm, leaving a quite fresh smell of duck's shit on his palm.

"Eh...nice...nice doggies..." Ji Hao became speechless while showing the whites of his eyes. He then rubbed the necks of the two dogs, as if they were old friends. Really nice doggies, they were both over six-foot long and had glowing, bright fur. You could clearly see their solid muscles under their skin, which seemed so powerful and healthy.

What had made Ji Hao feel even more speechless was that he could sense over ten Magus Acupoints, which were releasing a strong sense of power from each of the dog's body. These two dogs were both Senior Magus level beasts, and each had even double the amount of Magus Acupoints than Ji Hao.

The two dogs seemed to be liking the simple and natural smell of Ji Hao very much. They stayed around his body and continuously rubbed his legs with their necks. That tiny donkey remained standing quietly beside Ji Hao, slowly letting out its long pink tongue into the grass cluster, then quickly rolling a big strand of

purple-flower clover and white-tongue orchid into its mouth, which it then began chewing slowly.

"Ah...haha, my little friend here, both Big Flower and Small Flower seem to like you."

Followed by this voice, an elderly man, who was wearing a raincoat and a large rain hat that was made from bamboo, walked slowly over behind the ducks. He had a bamboo basket that was designed to carry fishes tied around his waist. A gentle breeze blew across his face, and some water drops fell on his body. The silhouette of this elderly man seemed to have merged with this entire piece of world, so natural and beautiful, just like an ink painting.

"I like them too." Ji Hao smiled and bowed slightly to that elderly man. Even the dogs of this elderly man were Senior Magus level beasts. It was quite easy to imagine how powerful this elderly man was.

"Hm, every kid who can be treated well by Big Flower and Small Flower is a good kid," said the elderly man while taking out a boiled Chinese yam-like piece of plant's root, and handed it over to Ji Hao, then said, "unlike some of the other kids, who would always be chased and bitten by Big Flower and Small Flower. Once they had nearly bitten the butts of those boys off.

Taking over the plant's root that was still warm, Ji Hao watched the elderly man hold his hands back behind his body, take the two dogs, one donkey and a huge group of ducks, and walk slowly away. He abruptly stood on his tiptoes and spoke out, asked, "Dear elder, do you know where Si Xi, the Earl Chong's home, is?"

The elderly man stopped walking, turned his head around and responded with a smile, "Walk straight forward for three hundred miles, past twelve villages. You will see a house with large amounts of dragon-skin plants growing around it, that's his home. Hm, he has been staying in recently."

Ji Hao thanked the elderly man, rushed out along the stone-paved road. Three hundred miles was quite a long distance for ordinary people, but it would only take a short while for a Senior Magus like Ji Hao.

Ji Hao walked past a few small hills and lakes, which were breathtakingly beautiful sceneries, and had exchanged greetings with a few locals. While walking, Ji Hao ate that still warm, piece of root. Once he swallowed that one foot long piece of root, the two flames that had already moved into the Magus Acupoint of Ji Hao's Dan Tian suddenly expanded to double their original size, and became a lot more condensed than before. At the same time, Ji Hao felt a stream of gentle and soft power gushing around his entire body. Soon after that, quite a few more Magus Acupoints of Ji Hao were awakened.

With a slight breath, eighteen spheres of firelight lit up on Ji Hao's body.

Even Ji Hao was shocked badly of himself. He turned his head back and looked into the hazy rainy air. Pu Ban City was as magical as people said. Every single person living here could be a great, powerful Magus. Even an elderly man who was leisurely farming ducks with two dogs and one donkey could carelessly give such a powerful natural treasure to Ji Hao as a small gift.

"This probably was his...lunch?" murmured Ji Hao.

It was a slightly difficult for Ji Hao to accept, but obviously that elderly man carried this piece of plant root with him merely as his daily food, which served simply as a stomach filler for him. Ji Hao had already awakened all his meridians, but this piece of root still awakened a few more Magus Acupoints of his. If he had been an ordinary Senior Magus, this piece of unknown plant root could have awakened at least two to three hundred Magus Acupoints of his.

"You old monster..."

Ji Hao murmured to himself, then kept moving forward along the road. He quickly walked across a mile wide river through a single-plank bridge. In front of him was a small valley, within which, a simple cabin that had a straw roof and a mud wall was clearly visible.

On the left side of that small cabin were five smaller cabins built in a line, serving as kitchen, storage rooms and other functional spaces. Tens of beautiful and proud roosters were pecking the ground. Behind the small cabin was a piece of field, which was around two to three hundred acres. Only one kind of plant was planted in the field, and that was the dragon-skin plant, looking like cabbages but had glowing golden dragon scale-like patterns.

A quite tall and impressively sturdy and muscular man, who had a seemingly reliable and square face and red skin, was holding a hoe and was carefully weeding that field. From time to time, he would pick up a worm from those dragon-skin plants and conveniently flick them flying into the yard. Every time he did that, those tens of roosters would immediately rush over and fight against each other for that worm.

A few big dogs, which had bright and shining fur, were lying in front of the small cabin. Seeing Ji Hao coming, those dogs stood up while happily swaying their heads and wagging their tails, letting out a few barks.

Ji Hao bowed slightly towards the man, then said with a loud and clear voice, "I am an apprentice of the Magi Palace, named Ji Hao, and have come to visit lord Si Xi, the Earl Chong."

Chapter 232: Presenting Himself Before the Emperor

The roof of the cabin was made from ordinary straw. The owner had probably changed those straws recently, because a nice herbal scent was still lingering from the roof.

The walls of this cabin were built with mud that was mixed with wheat bran. The scent of the wheat bran merged with the scent of mud caused it to smell natural and nice. Although it was not as appealing as the fragrance of flowers, it still was capable of making people feel peaceful when sitting in the cabin.

The floor was paved with flagstones, and in the middle of the room was a zhang square fireplace, within which, a thumb-sized fiery magical crystal had been placed in the flame to maintain the flame. Large pieces of firewood were blazing, and a water-tank-sized clay pot was hanging above the flame. The spring water contained in it was boiling happily.

Si Xi grabbed a handful of tea from a jar in the corner of the room, threw it into two wooden mugs, then sat back beside the fire, pointing his finger at the clay pot. Followed by his move, two streams of boiling water flew up from the pot and poured into the two mugs. Soon, two steaming and nice smelling mugs of tea were done. Si Xi handed a mug to Ji Hao, smiled and said, "Kid, drink! Haha, this tea was collected by me from the mountain this spring!"

The spring water was sweet and the tea had a dense and strong aroma. Although it tasted not as flavorful as other kinds of high-grade tea, it was intense and hot enough that once Ji Hao took a sip of that tea, he felt a gust of hot air gushing directly into his stomach. Soon, his forehead was covered with a thin layer of sweat.

"Uncle," Ji Hao put the mug down, saluted Si Xi politely and said.

Si Xi put his hand into the scorching hot charcoal ash in the fireplace and took out a few balls of mud from the pile of ash. He patted each mud ball for a short while, then flicked those mud balls, breaking them with his fingers and showing the well grilled, sizzling and oily white pigeons wrapped in the mud.

"Drink the tea, and here, have some meat! Oh, and, don't call me uncle."

Si Xi handed Ji Hao a grilled pigeon, which was grilled so well that even the bones had become crispy, then rubbed his own clean and tender chin that didn't have even a single strand of hair, and said to Ji Hao, "Don't call me uncle, call me brother Si Xi... hahaha, I'm not as old as an uncle yet!"

Ji Hao held that grilled pigeon, becoming quite speechless, while staring at Si Xi, without knowing how to even respond to that.

He called Si Wen Ming 'uncle Wen Ming' and this Si Xi here was Si Wen Ming's blood-related father... How could Ji Hao call him brother?

Si Xi look at Ji Hao with a big grin while completely wolfing his grilled pigeon, including the bones, only leaving the pigeon's head that didn't have too much meat on it. He then threw the head into the flame and let it burn. After that, he held the mug up, looking quite satisfied, and took a gulp of his tea, then grinned again and said, "Ignore that Wen Ming kid, he likes to be an uncle, let him be. I am totally different from him. You can just call me brother."

He then breathed a big mouthful of hot air out and said while smiling, "Well, Si Wen Ming has not been in the Magi Palace lately. There are some small troubles in Liang Zhu. He and his people went over there to keep the situation from becoming a real big trouble. You're Ji Hao, I know, I know about you... Wen Ming has told me. He asked me to take care of a few kids for him, and you're one of them."

Putting the mug down, Si Xi continued seriously, "Well, what

kind of trouble have you encountered? I know you wouldn't have come to me if it hadn't been a huge one."

Si Wen Ming went out of the Magi Palace for an emergency task, but he didn't forget to ask his own father to help look after Ji Hao. Ji Hao couldn't help but silently feel touched deeply by this as a stream of warmness gushed into this heart.

Calming himself down, Ji Hao told Si Xi everything that had happened to his team lately, from when they had left the Magi Palace to the Rong Mountain Clan, helped them with exploring and exploiting the new territory, then the Rong Mountain Clan turning against Ji Hao and his teammates for an all-adapting magic crystal mine, after which, Prince Xu and Gong Gong Wuyou stepping into all, framing his team together. Ji Hao told Si Xi every detail.

"Elder Wulong and the other elders seemingly have been called in Pu Ban City by Emperor Shun for an important meeting. I have failed to get in contact with them these days. Uncle Wen Ming had said that if I encounter any trouble that I couldn't solve with my own power, I could come to you, bro...brother Si Xi."

The corners of Ji Hao's mouth twitched slightly when he said 'brother' as it felt so strange.

Si Xi grabbed another grilled wild pigeon, wolfed it down as well, then drank up the tea in his mug. He wiped his hand with his own cloth, then grabbed the three written confessions made by Meng Ao and his two accomplices, which Ji Hao handed him over, and carefully read all three of them.

"Ha, what the heck? What a bunch of bastards!" said Si Xi, while gnashing his teeth, "When the Magi Palace was built in the beginning, the sole purpose of it was to preserve the knowledge that belonged to our humankind and to maintain and develop the culture of our humankind. Therefore, every generation of Kings of the humankind has spent quite an effort on supporting the Magi

Palace."

"What now? Look at that Magi Palace now, too many dirty things, dirty people have been hiding in it. Damn bastards like Meng Ao, who dared to even gang up with outsiders and frame our own apprentices. These kinds of bastards have taken rather important positions of the Magi Palace! How ridiculous is that!" yelled Si Xi while punched hard on his own lap, "If we still do nothing, our humankind will perish soon."

Ji Hao opened his mouth, but couldn't say a word.

He didn't really feel that Meng Ao framing him had anything to do with the future of the entire human race, but if this was connected to the current atmosphere of the Magi Palace, then indeed, it seemed related to the future of the human race.

"We can't let these bastards do whatever they want!" said Si Xi in a cold voice, "Do they think that this world is at peace? Ridiculous! If not that...Those people have forgotten about the terrifying and horrible things that happened long ago, but I haven't, and my clansmen haven't either!"

Swooshing up from his seat, Si Xi yelled at Ji Hao, "Ji Hao! Follow me! Let's go meet Emperor Shun!"

Ji Hao was so freaked out by Si Xi's actions and words that he instantly leapt up from his seat. He looked at Si Xi in both shock and confusion and asked tremblingly, "What? Bro...Brother Si Xi, did you say that we're meeting Emperor Shun? Have you actually said that or have I just misheard you?"

Si Xi looked at Ji Hao as if he was looking at a weirdo. Confused, he shook his head and asked back, "Why? Is there anything strange about meeting Emperor Shun? He is a human being just like you, with one head and two shoulders, exactly like you. He doesn't have two more fingers or one more eyeball than you, why do you act so strangely?"

Ji Hao was only as tall as Si Xi's waist, therefore, before Ji Hao could say anything, Si Xi had grabbed his shoulder and carried him up. He walked out of the cabin with big steps and instantly flew up into the air.

Ji Hao stared at Si Xi stunned. This was the first time that he was being carried into the air by a powerful Magus who was at a level even higher than Magus Kings.

Ji Hao didn't sense any movement of natural power in the air. When Si Xi was flying, all natural powers were as stable as usual, totally different from when Ji Hao gathered natural power, trod on clouds and flew. Si Xi was purely depending on the great power contained in his own body, excluding the gravity of the earth and pushing himself up into the air with a certain kind of magical power, which allowed him to fly in the sky like a free bird.

This was an instinct.

What was meant by this was when a Magus cultivated himself till he reached Si Xi's level, flying would become an instinct, just like walking, that could automatically happen without the help of any outside power. A powerful Magus like Si Xi could freely travel across the void anytime he wanted.

Ji Hao's head was suddenly filled with all kinds of thoughts. He thought of many things within a moment. He thought of the dragon race, which was born with the ability to travel across all kinds of spaces, and the phoenix race that were born with the ability to fly as well. He began wondering when a human cultivated himself until a certain degree and was able to instinctively fly like dragons and phoenixes, whether that was an evolution or a return to the real human instinct?

Si Xi was flying at a truly great speed and was countless times faster than Mr Crow.

Within only ten minutes, Si Xi had flown to a beautiful mountain area and landed in front of a large, seemingly residential area, with

featured civil architectures built in lines.

Ji Hao didn't have enough time to look around because Si Xi then carried him right into a huge wooden building, which was huge enough to contain tens of thousands of people for a meeting.

After having walked in, Si Xi loudly yelled out at a middle-aged man sitting in the middle of the hall.

"Shun! Someone framed my little brother! What do you think we should do?"

Hearing Si Xi's loud and unconstrained yelling, Ji Hao nearly vomited a big mouthful of blood out.

Chapter 233: Confrontation

Emperor Shun was sitting in the hall, wearing simple flax clothes and straw shoes. His long hair were made into a bun, stuck with the twigs of a chaste tree. Similar to how the ministers were sitting beside him, Emperor Shun was also sitting on a straw cushion with his legs crossed, looking nothing special, and neither was he showing anything different that might indicate his legendary high status.

His eyes were especially bright, with each eye having double pupils. When he looked at someone, one would feel as if they had gained an insight directly reaching their soul. This was the only specialty, which one would be able to tell from Emperor Shun's appearance.

He had a fresh and natural smell. Although he looked like a middle-aged, or an even older man, he smelled like the pine woods after a spring rain, which was very fresh and gentle, filled with thriving life force. Based only on this smell, one might have thought of him to be only a passionate young kid.

"Ah, Si Xi is here." Seeing Si Xi, who had yelled loudly, the Emperor smiled warmly and said, "I was about to invite you here. We have been discussing the Chi Ban mountain area in the North for two days now. We currently need to open up two ten-thousand miles long rivers in that area, corresponding with our magic formations. It is very urgent, so it must be done within seven days. Can you do that?"

Over a thousand people were sitting in the hall on straw cushions with their legs crossed and eyes fixed on a map, which was placed in the middle of the hall and made from golden sand.

A few Maguspriests, who were standing in front of the hundred zhang wide square map, injected their powers into that map, causing the fine golden sand to move, forming mountains, rivers,

jungles and hills. When the Emperor was talking, a Maguspriest waved his hand, right after which, two magnificent rivers appeared on the map, wriggling like two dragons along the geographic features, forming a square and powerful magic spell symbol in that mountain area.

Ji Hao was standing aside and was staring at the map, so stunned that the fine hairs on his back were even standing erect.

He could understand the content of the map just now. They were planning on opening two ten thousand miles long rivers artificially in a mountain area named Chi Ban. Doing so would connect all the water resources in that area, forming a gigantic spell symbol that would be able to gather huge amounts of natural powers, and would serve as a core of an unimaginably huge and powerful magic formation.

What an immense plan! What a magnificent and magical plan!

Ji Hao stared at the spell symbol on the map that was formed by the two rivers, continuously recalling those spell symbols and related knowledge he had learned in the Magi Palace recently. The more he connected his learned knowledge and spell symbols to this spell symbol on the map, the more magical and greater possibilities he found this spell symbol to contain. The longer he did this, the more cold sweat gushed out of his back.

"Seven days," Si Xi walked up to the map with big steps, flipped his fingers as if he was counting, then carelessly nodded and said, "Well, we have a natural river about seven thousand miles long. It's no big deal to open up two ten thousand miles long rivers artificially within seven days, no big deal."

Emperor Shun smiled and said to the other ministers sitting in the hall, "I told you, if we invite Si Xi here, he will sound like there'll absolutely be no difficulty for him. As long as we complete this gigantic-scale magic formation, which will be corresponding with those large-scale war machines, we will have nothing worry

about the Chi Ban Mountain.

Slightly slapping his hands, Emperor Shun continued with a smile, "As long as we can keep the enemies out of the Chi Ban Mountain area for half a month, until the few Northern clans have completed their harvest and have collected all the grain into the granaries, if they still insist on attacking us, we could just accept the battle."

Many ministers sitting in the hall smiled and nodded as well, loosening their tightened faces.

Wulong Yao was sitting not far away from Emperor Shun. Seeing Ji Hao, he abruptly yelled out, "Ji Hao, what are you doing here?!"

Once Wulong Yao yelled out, the other master Magi tutors, who were quite close to Ji Hao, stood up one after another and all yelled out as well, "Hey, you little kid, what are you doing here?!"

Before Ji Hao could say anything, Si Xi laughed out loud and yelled, "Ah, ha, what do you mean with what is he doing here, you bunch of old men?! Ji Hao was framed by some scums! Don't you know yet?!"

The faces of Wulong Yao and the few master Magi tutors changed instantly. They glanced at each other then looked at Emperor Shun simultaneously.

Wulong Yao said with a slight trace of anger, "Shun, Ji Hao had sent us a message, but we were busy attending this important meeting, so we told the outer palace to deal with this. This seemed to be quite a small case. We hadn't thought that he would go find Si Xi and Si Xi would bring him here."

Emperor Shun remained silent for a short while, the he smiled and looked at Ji Hao from head to toe, while nodding continuously nodded, and said, "Hm, he is a good kid, good kid. Hm, the Gold Crow bloodline? The Gold Crow Clan people haven't been travelling out of the Southern Wasteland for many years, isn't that

right, Master Libation?"

There was a young man,who had a breathtakingly beautiful face that could make the most beautiful women in this world feel embarrassed, yet was tall and study, wearing a luxury red cloak. Hearing Emperor Shun's words, this young man spurted large amounts of fire sparks from his pupils, then said blandly, "Hmmm, Ji Hao, I know about him, Man Man's little friend. He has saved Man Man's life once. What happened? Did someone frame you?"

Ji Hao looked at this young man who had a similar face as Man Man, clearly realizing that this young man was no one else but Man Man's father, the Fire God, 'old man' Zhu Rong. On behalf of both, Man Man and the Gold Crow Clan, Ji Hao politely saluted to Zhu Rong and said, "Yes, I have told Earl Chong all the details."

Si Xi was about to talk when a tall and muscular elderly man with dense curly beard and whose every single pore seemed to be spurting streams of power yelled out harshly,

"Nonsense! Are you saying that I, Meng Jiang, have sent out useless people?! This kid sent messages to elder Wulong and the others seeking for help. Those few elders were busy at this important meeting, so I, as an elder of the outer palace, had sent the most capable apprentice of mine, Meng Ao, to help him. What more troublesome could have possibly happened?!"

Si Xi let out a scornful snort, pointed his finger at Meng Jiang's nose and yelled, "You old stupid bastard, those douchebags sent out by you have messed up! What 'most capable apprentices'? Those were clearly cowardly scums!"

Before Si Xi had finished his speech, Ying Yunpeng walked into the hall with big steps and face filled with sorrow. After walking in, he shouted out instantly, "Shun! I have just discovered a shocking, unbelievably horrible fact. I had never thought that such a shameless, cruel and contemptible person existed in our Magi Palace!"

Ying Yunpeng raised both his arms in rage, waving towards the sky madly while screaming, "God! Are you blind? Why don't you just send down a lightning bolt and strike that little bastard, named Ji Hao to death? And his little group of flunkies, named Shaosi, Taisi, Yu Mu and Feng Xing."

Throwing a glance at Zhu Rong, Ying Yunpeng continued in a cold voice, "And a little bitch called Man Man! Those few little bastards fled away from danger, leaving those poor Rong Mountain Clan people to face groups of fierce wild beasts. They have ruined my reputation, which I can still cope with, but they tried to blackmail the poor Rong Mountain Clan, kidnapped and threatened an attendant of the Magi Palace!"

The face of Ji Hao tightened. Seeing Ying Yunpeng came in, Ji Hao realized how wise he had been to decide to go find Si Xi and seek for his help, instead of going to seek help back at the Magi Palace when he firstly sneaked into Pu Ban City.

Since Ying Yunpeng had claimed that Ji Hao kidnaped Meng Ao and the two fellows of his, he must already have heard about Meng Ao and the two young men not managing to return safely to the Magi Palace.

Zhu Rong stood slowly up, while staring at Ying Yunpeng with a pair of blazing eyes, sneered and said slowly, "Ying Yunpeng, do you want to die?"

Ying Yunpeng stared back at Zhu Rong, letting out a sneer as well and responded, "Can I ask, how I, a poor old man, did offend you, my dear Master Libation, and made you say something like this? I assume that our respectful Master Libation is clearly aware that, although you possess an incomparably high statues and amazingly great power, our Eastern Wasteland people, our great Ten-Sun Country, will not be willingly bullied by anyone."

Zhu Rong let out resonating laughter, showed a stateliness on his beautiful face, then suddenly released a great raging flame. His

entire body abruptly turned into a bright and glowing flame.

Watching Zhu Rong about to launch an attack on Ying Yunpeng, Emperor Shun helplessly let out a sigh, then finally began talking.

"Who can please tell me what exactly has happened?"

Libation: According to Daoist scripture, this is someone who offers oblation at a sacrificial ceremony. This was the title of someone in charge of inning taxes of grain, donations and overseeing road construction and other civil duties. According to pleco, one of the suited definition would be 'a high-ranking official in ancient imperial court'.

Chapter 234: Being Taken into Custody

Once Di Shun said that sentence, a natural and peaceful yet great stream of power spread out in the hall.

Zhu Rong, who had turned into raging, blazing flame, about to launch an attack, sniffed in disdain and transformed back to a beautiful young man in a red cloak, keeping his eyes narrowed, and sat back on his seat. However, judging from the cold and sharp light that leaked out of the corners of Zhu Rong's eyes from time to time, this hatred between Ying Yunpeng and him was rooted firmly.

Wulong Yao and few of the other master Magi tutors all took their seats as well, but with darkened faces. They straightened their necks and gritted their teeth, all looking quite angry and embarrassed.

Thy had indeed received Ji Hao's message, but they were too busy attending this extra important meeting and were unable to spare any attention to deal with Ji Hao's problem. That was why, according to the standard procedure of the Magi Palace, they could only let the elder of outer palace, Meng Jiang, who was also sitting in this hall, handle Ji Hao's problem.

However, somehow the problem got serious, to the point that Ji Hao had no choice but seek out the help of Si Xi, and Si Xi had taken him directly to Emperor Shun. No matter what had happened after Ji Hao reported to them, and whoever had been involved in this, all in all, as tutors of Ji Hao, all of these master Magi tutors felt greatly offended.

Whoever was behind this 'framing" issue had not only offended their dignities but also offended their powers as elders of the Magi Palace.

Therefore, when they looked at Meng Jiang, all of these master Magi tutors were showing their anger clearly on their faces.

Although Meng Jiang was a famous, powerful, and fearless person who belonged to the Qing Qi Clan, he felt tortured by those weird gazes of those few master Magi tutors, making his body twist continuously in his seat, as if he had thorns growing out from his back.

Si Xi sneered, slapped hard on Ji Hao's shoulder and yelled, "Ji Hao! Tell them what has happened!"

Ying Yunpeng instantly took a step forward, said to Ji Hao with a fake smile and a cold voice, "Ji Hao, you little bastard, you can still tell the truth. Our King might lighten you punishment, but, if you ever dare to call white black and try to set your bunch of little bastards free from your sin, don't' blame me for punishing you right here!!"

Ji Hao smiled, gave a measuring look to Ying Yunpeng, shook his head then seriously bowed to Emperor Shun, and said, "His Majesty, I, Ji Hao, a kid from the Gold Crow Clan, with respect, will honestly state everything that has happened to me and my friends these past couple of days."

Ji Hao was quite a talented storyteller, from Yu Mu and Feng Xing first accepting this task, and they leaving the Magi Palace for the Rong Mountain Clan, to when they escaped from that underground cave through an underground river, and had returned on the ground. After which, he had sent his messages to Wulong Yao and the other tutors, requesting the Magi Palace to redress the scales. Ji Hao told the whole story in full details.

At last, Ji Hao took out the three confessions, written by Meng Ao and the two young men, stepped forward and carefully placed those confessions on the small table in front of Emperor Shun.

"Please, His Majesty, we just want justice," said Ji Hao calmly, "Things wouldn't be so complicated if only the Rong Mountain Clan was involved in this whole event. According to our Southern Wasteland rule, which states that we pay back everyone who

helped us and make all enemies pay for their mistakes, my friends and I could simply wipe the entire Rong Mountain Clan out."

"Great! Clearly distinguishing kindness and hatred! Our Southern Wasteland boy very good!" said Zhu Rong while slowly clapping his hands.

But after throwing a sideway measuring glance at Ji Hao, Zhu Rong shook his head and let out a long sigh, then continued, "Hmmm...you're a nice kid indeed, but, wanting to be my son-in-law? You're still far away from that."

Ji Hao instantly fell into a great speechlessness, this old Zhu Rong...what on earth was he thinking about...

Ying Yunpeng, who was standing aside, hearing Ji Hao's words, yelled out harshly, "Such an evil, shameless little monster! Apart from making stories and framing others, how dare you just mention wiping the Rong Mountain Clan like that?! Do you even have any idea where you are?! And who you are talking to?!"

Letting out a hollowed cough, Ji Hao looked at Ying Yunpeng, sneered and said, "Of course I know where I am! Even in front of our Emperor I dare to say whatever I am thinking about! The Rong Mountain Clan have betrayed us for the crystal mine and tried to frame us, and even tried to kill us and seal the truth. Even if I truly wipe that clan out, it's totally reasonable!"

Drumming hard on his own chest, Ji Hao yelled back at him, "I, Ji Hao am a dignified man. I am responsible for every single word I said! If I dare to think about it, of course, I dare to talk about it!"

"Good! Good kid!" An old and hoarse voice came from a corner of the hall, "Good talk! Eh, kids in Pu Ban City now are all weird, like...those little pussies, eh, call themselves princes, magnates, and things like that. Yhey're not even a little bit manly. This kid, Ji Hao, ah, I, an old man, like him!"

All the ministers sitting in the hall turned their head back and

looked at that corner, after which, most of them immediately turned their heads back and remained silent.

The one who had been napping in the corner of the hall, and abruptly yelled out just now, was no one else but the old, old man, Master Candle Dragon, who had lived for at least ten thousand years. Even if he was talking complete nonsense, no one dared to argue with him in front of his face.

Only Ying Yunpeng popped out his eyes wide open when he saw Candle Dragon, he instantly went so mad with rage that even his eyeballs turned green. This old bastard had trapped him and indirectly let all those horrible things happen to him!

Emperor Shun shook his head and said blandly, "Ji Hao, you were talking about...Lie Mountain Xu."

Ji Hao looked at Emperor Sun seriously and said, "Not only him, but also Gong Gong Wuyou. If it wasn't because of the two of them, we would never ever disturb you, His Majesty, for such a small problem. However, now it seems that this elder is quite angered because of me."

While speaking, Ji Hao pointed his finger at Ying Yunpeng.

Ying Yunpeng showed the whites of his eyes, suddenly knelt down in front of Emperor Shun and began crying and showing, "His Majesty, please, please redress the scales for me! My, my poor little boy, Yun, and Su, my good nephew, and that talented kid Great Gale Ling, they, they all died, miserably! Poor boys!"

All ministers sitting in that hall were confused badly. Wasn't Ji Hao claiming that he was framed? But why did Ying Yunpeng begin crying here?

All these ministers hadn't left this hall for days and had been discussing about the Chi Ban mountain area. They didn't know what had happened outside yet, but at least, they had heard about the deaths of Ying Yunpeng's son, nephew and Great Gale Ling.

Emperor Shun frowned, deeply and harshly growled, "What exactly did happen?"

Ying Yunpeng's eyes showed intentions of killing, pointed at Ji Hao and yelled in a high-pitched voice, "Him! This cruel and evil little bastard and his team, for some small conflicts, they killed the few poor boys of mine!"

Ji Hao spread his own hands and let out a sigh, his face filled with innocence, and said, "What? You failed to frame me so you have decided to say whatever you want?"

Ying Yunpeng abruptly leapt high from the ground, waved his arm and threw a punch towards Ji Hao, while screaming, "Little bastard! Even if Emperor Shun will punish me, today I will avenge my poor boys!!"

Ying Yunpeng was a great powerful Magus King, whose punch was swooshing towards Ji Hao. If this punch truly landed on Ji Hao's body, Ji Hao would definitely be smashed into a wisp of smoke. Fortunately, Si Xi had been standing right beside Ji Hao all this time. He threw out a punch as well and struck straight onto Ying Yunpeng's fist. Their fists only touched slightly without making any noise, after which, both of them took a step back. Ying Yunpeng vomited a large mouthful of blood out, while Si Xi stayed perfectly fine.

Ying Yunpeng knelt on the ground and began crying again, while screaming, "Please, someone, show justice to us! To those poor dead boys of our Ten Sun Country!"

Emperor Shun remained absolutely calm, while only staring at Ji Hao from head to toe.

Remaining silent for a short while, Emperor Shun said with the same bland tone, "Where is Hao Tao? Come, take Ji Hao and Ying Yunpeng both into custody. After we have found out the truth, we will deal with both of them."

A strong man, who had a purple, square and august face, walked out from the crowd of ministers, grabbed Ji Hao's shoulder with one hand, while his other hand grabbed Ying Yunpeng's shoulder, walking out of the hall.

Chapter 235: Jail

Under the control of Hao Tao, Ji Hao had completely lost the power to resist. Unlike him, Ying Yunpeng was compliantly pushed by Hao Tao to walk out of the hall.

Hao Tao gave people an extremely upright and honorable feeling, and his face was as serious and stiff as flagstones. He took Ji Hao and Ying Yunpeng, and walked out of the hall onto a broad path for over two hundred zhang, after which, Ji Hao saw a wide and busy road.

When he had arrived here, he was being carried by Si Xi who was flying at a high speed, therefore, he hadn't even noticed this road. Now, taking a close look at this broad road, Ji Hao found many people hurriedly coming and going, and a heavy traffic on the road. This road was much busier than even the ten main paths of the Magi Palace.

On the roadside, there were over a thousand thatched huts, built in a line.

The so-called thatched huts were built by only four bamboos stuck on the ground, supporting a thin roof made from straw. All thatched huts were only a zhang squared in area, without any walls and completely empty, only a straw mat was thrown on the floor of each hut.

In many thatched huts, some muscular and scary looking men had been either lying or sitting on those straw mats. Occasionally, you would see some seemingly weak women or kids lying there as well. Seeing Ji Hao and Ying Yunpeng being brought over by Hao Tao, a few muscular men, who were releasing Senior Magus level of power, instantly leapt high from the ground, and excitedly began yelling while pointing their fingers at the two of them.

"Oi! New prisoners! What have you done?!"

These men were yelling and shouting, asking Ji Hao and Ying Yunpeng what they had done that caused them to be thrown into jail.

Ying Yunpeng threw a few cold and threatening glances at these men, and said blandly, "This old man standing in front of you is named Ying Yunpeng. I am the chief elder, accredited to this Pu Ban City, by the Ten Sun Country."

The muscular men, who had been waving their hands and were yelling at Ji Hao and Ying Yunpeng were all shocked, and lowered their heads one after another. They sat back on their straw mats, as if they had seen some horrible beasts, They kept their heads down and didn't dare to even look at Ying Yunpeng again.

Hao Tao pushed hard on Ying Yunpeng's back, sending him into an empty hut and said harshly, "Elder, please watch your language! You are currently indeed still an elder of the Ten Sun Country, but if we discover that you have done any illegal thing, such as framing others, then you will only be a prisoner."

Ying Yunpeng let out a sneer, narrowed his eyes and sat on the straw mat, remaining silent.

Ji Hao looked curiously at Hao Tao, then walked into another empty hut himself. On the road, some passengers began pointing at Ji Hao and whispering to each other.

"What a handsome boy, how could he be kept in here?"

"Hm, just wondering what kind of a serious mistake he made. Normally if people like us accidentally break some rules, they would at most reprimand and warn us... How could he end up here in this jail?"

"Such a great shame... what a pretty boy, looks young as well... but yet, the sense of power he releases is quite powerful. He will surely grow into a marvelous Magus. Why won't he learn to be nice and honest?"

"Well, kids can always be confused, it's impossible for kids to completely keep themselves in compliance of the laws... but an elderly man like this one, how could he end up in this jail as well? Must be a big old sinner!"

Soon, Ying Yunpeng became the topic instead of Ji Hao. The people stopped walking and were standing in such a way that they surrounded his hut and were discussing about him. Moreover, some of them even threw a few mud balls out from the crowd towards Ying Yunpeng's body. However, before those mud balls could touch his body, Ying Yunpeng slightly waved his hand and shook those mud balls into ashes.

"You people, don't cause yourselves disasters!" Ying Yunpeng didn't even open his eyes, sat on the mat and yelled fiercely," I am..."

Hao Tao interrupted his words and yelled harshly at him, "Ying Yunpeng! No one in this jail is allowed to shout! You are banned!"

While speaking, Hao Tao locked his finger together into a weird motion, then let out a faint growl, flicking his fingers as he pointed at Ying Yunpeng. Instantly, a wisp of black smoke rose from Ying Yunpeng's throat; he opened his mouth, but couldn't make any more sounds.

Ying Yunpeng was enraged, leaping up from the mat, he waved his arms hard but no one knew what he was trying to say.

Hao Tao looked at Ying Yunpeng with his head held high, and said word by word, "No matter how much power you have out there, once you get in here, I can execute you immediately according to the law if you don't listen to me. Please don't get yourself killed."

Speaking the word 'execute', a three-foot long dagger automatically flew out from the sheath, which hung around his waist. The bright and sharp edge of the dagger emitted three shrill sounds and released a bone-piercing cold power. Large amounts of

plants around the hut were instantly cut into pieces by the fierce power of the dagger; some of them were even stirred into ashes.

Ying Yunpeng immediately lost his rage. He grinned and cupped his hands, saluted to Hao Tao a few times, then sat nicely back on the mat.

Ji Hao looked at Ying Yunpeng's movements, slightly smiled and said, "Since we have already gotten into this jail, we must obey the rules of this jail. Hm, lord Hao Tao, I am certainly very mannered. But, aren't you afraid that prisoners would escape from this jail, I mean, you don't even have walls..."

When he had been a young man in his previous life, he was arrogant and imperious, never listening to anyone. Therefore, he had been sent to jails countless times. Facing a jail, especially a jail as rough and simple as this one, Ji Hao didn't feel any pressure; instead, he even felt quite familiar and warm.

The only question bothering him now was, with the cells made from four bamboos and a straw roof, could this even be counted as a jail?

Hearing Ji Hao's words, Hao Tao smiled, but remained silent. He raised his hand and slightly patted Ji Hao's head, then turned around and left.

A muscular man in the hut next to Ji Hao's hut laughed out aloud, waved his hand to Ji Hao and said, "Kid, what have you done to have been sent here? I assume that you haven't heard how powerful this Pu Ban City's jail is, have you? Not to mention, no one even dared to try to break out from here. If you intend to run away...hehe, I'm afraid that even Divine Magi couldn't possibly do that."

Ji Hao was slightly shocked by this, while looking at the surrounding area of this jail.

'Impossible to escape from here? Not even Divine Magi? Is this

jail really that powerful?' Ji Hao frowned, raised his hand and carefully reached a bamboo next to him. The bamboo felt smooth and bouncy, just like any ordinary bamboo, nothing special at all.

After which, Ji Hao slowly and carefully reached his hand to the air out of this hut.

When his finger was about to reach out of the hut, a sizzling sound suddenly rose from his fingertips, along with which, a lightning bolt flashed across the air in front of Ji Hao, burning his finger that even let out a puff of black smoke. After which, no matter how hard Ji Hao tried, he would feel an invisible power blocking his finger. Even when he used all of his power, he would eventually fail to reach the outer space with his hand.

"Wow, Pu Ban City's jail!" Ji Hao staring at Hao Tao's back and seemed to be thinking of something.

After he had learned Sky-Opening from the mysterious man, Ji Hao had gained a slight little bit shallow understanding of the great and magical natural laws. Within those lightning bolts, which had burned his finger just now, Ji Hao clearly sensed a trace of the natural laws.

This small hut looked simple and rough, however, as long as the King of the humankind set it as a jail, it will be the most unbreakable jail in the world. The spirit of the natural law lingered around here, and therefore, this jail was incomparably firm and unbreakable. Not even a Divine Magus could escape from it.

If he truly intended to break out from here, he could only try with the power of the Sky-Opening, discover a slim chance, and try to break the durance of this jail with it. Only in this way he would probably be able to break out from this jail.

"Extraordinary jail," Ji Hao sat on the straw mat and said. He then smiled to Ying Yunpeng, who had been sitting in the hut next to him, then asked "What have Prince Wuyou and Prince Xu given you that made you willing to frame me and my friends for them?

Or...do you just simply hate us?"

Ying Yunpeng's throat was still wrapped in a gust of black smoke, because of which, he could only stare at Ji Hao with an impressively resentful expression, but couldn't say even a word.

Chapter 236: Preach

The people of Pu Ban City were mostly simple and honest. People who committed a serious sin and were put into this jail were extremely rare. After those people had surrounded Ying Yunpeng's hut and discussed him for a while, they lost interest in both Ji Hao and Ying Yunpeng, shook their heads and went back to their lives.

Ying Yunpeng gave Ji Hao a few sneers, sat and crossed his legs, took a long deep breath and began cultivating.

Ji Hao hadn't noticed anything special during the daytime, but during the night, when the sky was thickly dotted with bright stars, Ji Hao clearly saw a relatively bigger star grow much brighter than the others. The star was shining brightly and even looked like a pentacle from Ji Hao' angle. Beams of extremely condensed, golden needles-like starlight descended from the air, continuously gushing into the Magus Acupoints of Ying Yunpeng.

Every beam of starlight was extremely pure and contained a great amount of power. The power contained in every beam of starlight equaled to the total amount of power contained in the Magus Acupoint of a Senior Magus. Within the span of only one breath, over ten beams of starlight would be absorbed by Ying Yunpeng's body.

Ji Hao stared at Ying Yunpeng in shock for a while. He suddenly realized the great, scary difference between Magus Kings and Senior Magi.

Raising his head and looking at the starry sky, Ji Hao silently shook his head. A Magus King's cultivation started from finding his or her own spirit star. From then on, he or she would be able to share powers with the spirit star, and every move of this Magus King would be improved by the special power, belonging to that spirit star.

Pondering over this for a while, Ji Hao began his own cultivation

as well.

The cell of the jail was only made from four bamboos and one straw roof, without anything to block people's eyesight. Therefore, even sleeping in this kind of cell would be quite embarrassing to Ji Hao. Except cultivation, he could think of no other thing to do.

Slowly activating all the power contained in his meridians, he transformed the streams of power into a sharp and solid drill, continuously drilling a new Magus Acupoint. The power contained in his meridians was relatively withy, perfect for awakening new Magus Acupoints.

As for the power contained in a awakened Magus Acupoint, which was way too condensed and great, could only be used in ordinary cultivation, instead of awakening new Magus Acupoints.

Because the new Magus Acupoints were as fragile as eggs, if the power contained in the already awakened Magus Acupoint would be used to awaken them, it would be easy to lose control of that fierce and violent power. This could result in smashing the new, tender Magus Acupoint into pieces, causing the Magus to lose a precious Acupoint.

Ordinary Senior Magi never cultivated their souls and spiritual power, therefore, they couldn't exert precise control over the great and violent power contained in their awakened Magus Acupoints. Ever since the magic cultivation system was invented, all Senior Magi would only use power contained in their meridians to awake their new Magus Acupoints, and all foundational power of their newly awakened Magus Acupoints came from their meridians, and had nothing to do with their already woken Magus Acupoints.

However, Ji Hao had been cultivating with the [Mantra Dan of Nine Secret Words] since he had been a little kid, which allowed him to freely control his soul and spiritual power, which was hundreds of times greater than ordinary Senior Magi. His spiritual power was sensitive, therefore, every time when he awakened a

new Magus Acupoint, he could always transfer a slight stream of power into the new Magus Acupoint from those already awakened Magus Acupoints. Therefore, every newly awakened Magus Acupoints of his would be slightly more powerful than the previous one.

One probably wouldn't be able to tell any difference when he had only ten or twenty Magus Acupoints, but when this number grew to a hundred, two hundred, a thousand, two thousands, even ten thousands, the power contained in Ji Hao's newly awakened Magus Acupoints at that time would be much greater than that foundational power contained in his meridians.

Step by step, and to rise abruptly based on accumulated power. Ji Hao had already surprisingly discovered that he now had a better foundation and body condition than the others.

Half an hour later, a popping sound came from his body, as a red spot lit up on Ji Hao's left shoulder - another new Magus Acupoint had been awakened. All power contained in his meridians and one percent of power contained in the three awakened Magus Acupoints, which were located near the newly awakened one, simultaneously gushed into the newly awakened Magus Acupoint. After that, this Magus Acupoint began expanding rapidly, and large streams of sweat gushed out of Ji Hao's skin.

"Little bastard," Ying Yunpeng opened his eyes and threw an angry glance at Ji Hao.

"Old pig," Ji Hao opened his eyes as well, showing the whites of his eyes towards Ying Yunpeng.

The two of them glanced at each other angrily, then closed their eyes simultaneously, continuing their cultivation.

This was a quiet night, no one stayed around the two of them except the two muscular men living in cells relatively close to Ji Hao and Ying Yunpeng, who were bored, and were staring at Ji Hao and Ying Yunpeng, their eyes filled with admiration.

The most powerful one among them was only a Junior Magus, and that too an elementary-level one, who had only over ten meridians filled with power. Not to mention Ying Yunpeng, Ji Hao was already a Senior Magus at such a young age, which made both of them be filled with jealousy and admiration. They couldn't describe the complicated feeling in their hearts.

One of them, whose face was almost covered underneath a mustache, abruptly let out a sigh and said, "If I can become a Senior Magus one day, I will go to the North and join the army. Even if I have to risk my life and fight against enemies, I would have a chance to earn an official position and a feudal land. That way, my life would be valuable. It's much better than staying at home and being yelled at by those damn women!"

Another muscular man threw a sideway look at this, laughed and said, "You? A Senior Magus? Yeah right, keep dreaming. Lazy douchebags like you who are even unable to distinguish one kind of grain from another, and know nothing but getting drunk and going back home to be beaten by your Amma and wife, you could only be a meat shield for others even if you really managed to join an army. Haha."

The mustache man was enraged by his words, pointed his finger at that man and yelled, "Bastard! Once I get out of this jail, I will certainly kill you!"

Everyone who had been put into this jail was not nice at all. The other man slapped his own neck, sneered and yelled back, "Come, kill me. If you can't kill me, I will chop you instead, then kill those old douchebags in your home conveniently. I have been fancying your wife since long ago!"

The conflict between the two of them had started a chaos, a few other men then joined this oral fight. Gradually, the entire jail was turning noisy.

"People, you are so pathetic, the bitter ocean is boundless. Turn

around your head, you will see the coast of the ocean."

A gentle voice came from afar. This voice was filled with a magical power that would make people feel extra peaceful. Those men, who had been yelling at each other, stopped instantly and turned their heads back to see who was talking.

The mustache man, who talked at first yelled out, "Kong Ye kid, what are you doing here, again? What nonsense bitter ocean? Who is bitter? You can't imagine how happy we are! Why are you always saying that nonsense?"

Ji Hao opened his eyes in curiosity as well and saw a young man, who was about fifteen or sixteen years old, only slightly older than Ji Hao, and looked quite handsome. This young man was wearing a roughly sewed flax cloth, bare feet, and was standing not far away from Ji Hao.

The young man been called Kong Ye had his long hair hung loosely on his back and had been releasing a magical sense of power that gave a sense of emptiness. He pitifully looked at the mustache man, and said in a deep voice, "You are trapped in this jail, don't you feel sad? You are not getting along well with your families, isn't that bitter? Your wife is not nice, haven't you been annoyed by that? You worked so hard, ploughed and sowed on the land, but your harvest could barely fill your stomach, isn't that bitter? You can never have what you want, tell me, isn't that bitter?"

Letting out a heavy sigh, Kong Ye continued gently, "Every creature in this world is living a bitter life, and the bitter life we have, is due to our sins of our precious lives. On and on, the bitterness will linger around us, and will never end. If you want freedom, the only way is to join us. Join us, you will learn the powerful secret magic, which will set you free from your bitterness.

Ji Hao stared at this Kong Ye, wondering how his words could

sound so familiar.

He let out an evil grin, then said in a deep voice as well, "The freedom is right behind you, you only need to slice yourself on the neck, then you will naturally be free."

Kong Ye looked at Ji Hao, responded blandly, "How could that be freedom? Even if you set yourself free from this life, your soul will reincarnate into the next like. Committing suicide is a serious sin... if you do that, you could only add heavier sins on yourself, and your next life could only be more sorrowful."

Ji Hao spread his hands and said, "Well, do you mean there is no way to break out from our bitterness?"

Kong Ye slightly and slowly shook his head and said, "Of course, there is a way that will set you free... you will learn that after you join us. Come, join us, you will have endless, true happiness."

Looking at Kong Ye's brightly shining eyes, Ji Hao ruminated for a short while, then blandly yet seriously said an incomparably dirty word to Kong Ye, which contained a bare insult to Kong Ye's biological mother. After which, Ji Hao closed his eyes once again and carried on with his cultivation.

Chapter 237: Xie Zhi

The dirty words Ji Hao had said were combined essences of all the dirty words he had learned in his previous life. They were both mean and cruel, extremely evil and so sarcastic that ordinary people would have no means of understanding the true content of what he had said.

At least, the muscular men in the jail, who had more muscles than brain, didn't get the meaning behind Ji Hao's words, not even a single word.

Ying Yunpeng frowned, pondered for quite a while, but no matter how hard he tried, he could only feel that Ji Hao's words were filled with mysteriousness. However, those words had sounded way too profound. Even though Ying Yunpeng was born in a famous and powerful family of the Ten Sun Country, and had been granted the most advanced education among the entire country, he still failed to understand Ji Hao's true meaning.

Only Kong Ye's face, which was white and tender, instantly turned as red as pig's liver. Then, the redness of his face even grew purple, and his two eyeballs nearly popped out from his eye sockets. He stared at Ji Hao straight in the eyes, while his slim body began to shake intensely.

"You, you, you're not, not even birthed by humans!" after trembling for quite a while, Kong Ye finally let out a complete sentence.

"I have a father and a mother, of course, I am birthed by human." Sitting on the straw mat, Ji Hao crossed his arms in front of chest, and stared coldly at Kong Ye, and said, "But you, persuading people to join your heresy for no good intention.... What do you think you are that makes you feel like you can save all those people from their bitterness?"

Abruptly activating the power contained in one Magus Acupoint,

Ji Hao yelled harshly, "Do you think you're a God from the heaven?!"

The thunderous sound waves transformed into thunder and quickly transmitted around, causing even the surrounding ground to tremble slightly. Kong Ye was indeed frightened by Ji Hao's growl, he embarrassedly staggered a few steps backwards, then stared angrily at Ji Hao for a while, then suddenly moved his body, transforming into a white beam of light that flashed across the air and disappeared.

Ying Yunpeng opened his eyes, grinned coldly at Ji Hao and said, "Ignorant kid, you antagonize randomly. As I see it, you will die within this year."

Ji Hao sat on the straw mat, looked calmly at Ying Yunpeng and said, "In this way, you and this Kong Ye knew about each other?"

Ying Yunpeng gave Ji Hao a frank look and said, "So what? I think, some of his words were quite correct. All living creatures are suffering in different ways. Like me for example, my bitterness is nothing in common with those lowly creatures, for sure."

Ji Hao was staring at Ying Yunpeng, while speculating a little bit. Ji Hao could look right into his mind or probably he didn't see through his mind, but Ji Hao clearly knew about people like Ying Yunpeng. He knew what they would worry about and what they were afraid of.

He mockingly laughed and said, "Your bitterness? I assume you're just afraid that when you run out of your life force, you won't be able to continue holding on to your wealth, luxuries and power. You'll lose all of your enjoyments when you die, therefore, you want to stay young and energetic... you want to have your current power, status, gold and those beautiful women forever."

Ying Yunpeng was obviously shocked by Ji Hao. His body quivered subconsciously, his eyes popped open, while he stared at Ji Hao and yelled coldly, "You Southern Wasteland barbarian, I

hadn't thought that you could be so intelligent and observant!"

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and gave a series of sneers. In this case, as a super observant kid, he had actually exposed the darkness and dirtiness deep inside Ying Yunpeng's heart using only his words. Apparently, this had brought Ying Yunpeng a pain that was similar as being peeped by someone else. This is why he would try everything in his power to wipe Ji Hao out from the world.

However, why would Ji Hao be afraid of him?

A silvery hoofbeat came from afar. A black kylin-shaped animal, which had a sharp straight horn on its head, looking honorable and stately, quickly and lithely walked over. This animal was over a zhang tall, and had a slim and long body. Under its black scales there were spiral-shaped wisps of fluff.

This creature opened its eyes wide, walked up to Ji Hao's cell, knocked the roof of Ji Hao's hut, then talked harsh words with its gentle voice, "Ji Hao, don't yell in this jail, otherwise, although you're not incriminated, if you yell again, you will be beaten with a solid rod ten times. It's not worth to suffer the physical pain for no reason. Since this is your first time, and you're young and ignorant, I will spare you from the punishment, but only this time."

Ying Yunpeng sneered while looking sideways at Ji Hao. Ji Hao was curiously looking at this weird, talking animal.

If the man who had put him and Ying Yunpeng into this jail was named Hao Tao, then this animal should be Xie Zhi, which was responsible for guarding this jail for Hao Tao.

"Xie Zhi, Xie Zhi, it's said that you're a magical creature that is able to travel freely across the heaven, the human world and the underworld, and is capable of seeing people's sin clearly. Please look at me, am I a sinner?" Ji Hao seriously asked Xie Zhi.

"Hm? You know about me?" Xie Zhi blinked its eyes and asked a

bit surprised. It remained silent for a while then said gently, "I am indeed able to tell if a person is guilty or not, however, how can I make the others believe my words? What I can do is guard this jail well, not make innocent people suffer and never let sinners escape."

"Whether a person is guilty or not, the Emperor and those ministers will correctly authenticate that."

"In this case, can you at least take a look at this old guy and see if he's a sinner?" Ji Hao pointed his finger at Ying Yunpeng while grinning and asked. Ying Yunpeng's facial expression seemed quite weird, he turned his eyes away from Ji Hao, looked at Xie Zhi, then turned back to Ji Hao. After that, he turned his eyes to Xie Zhi once again, as if this was the first time he had heard that Xie Zhi could tell if a person was guilty or not.

"This depends on how you define 'sin'," responded Xie Zhi while staring at Ji Hao with its eyes narrowed, "You have killed quite many people as well, but deep inside, do you feel that you're a sinner?"

"You crafty thing, you threw the question back to me," Ji Hao smiled and looked at Xie Zhi. He put his hand into the storage bag tied around his waist and rummaged for a while, then took out a fresh fruit that he had picked up earlier, threw it at Xie Zhi and said, "Here, I treat you with this nice fresh fruit, and I won't yell again."

Xie Zhi speechlessly bounced the fruit back to Ji Hao with its forehead and said, "Are you trying to bribe me? Or are you simply viewing me as those small fluffy animals, like rabbits or sheep, which you can freely feed with fruits? You're such an interesting boy."

Shaking his head, Xie Zhi warned Ji Hao, telling him not to yell once again, then harshly threw a glare at those muscular men who had been yelling at each other just now, turned around, and

walked away along with silvery hoofbeats.

"Xie Zhi," Ying Yunpeng abruptly let out a sneer and said, "A single-horned animal, guarding this jail for Hao Tao. God knows where Hao Tao has brought this animal from. In this jail, this thing is equal to a dog, guarding the house for a hunter. How special can it be?"

"Don't you know about Xie Zhi?" Ji Hao looked at Ying Yingpeng and asked in shock, "Is it true? Can't believe you actually don't know about him. Have you never heard that he is capable of seeing through the hearts of people, distinguishing kindness from evilness? Or has he just never showed those abilities in front of you people?"

The corners of Ying Yunpeng's mouth twitched intensely a few times. He looked at Ji Hao in a truly weird way, as if he suddenly thought of some bad things.

"It seems, quite many of you have fallen in a disadvantaged situation in front of him... well," Ji Hao sighed, shook his head, and said, "if I had known, I wouldn't have talked about these things in front of you. I just thought you all knew how amazing this Xie Zhi is."

Ying Yunpeng remained silent. A few other people walked along the broad road, but when they were walking past Ji Hao's cell, a girl suddenly stopped.

"Hm? How...why do you have this on you?!"

Xie Zhi(���): According to the legend, county magistrate Gao Yao had a unicorn goat called zhi, which he used in criminal proceedings, whenever he was in doubt. The animal instinctively knew the innocent from the guilty; it butted the latter with its horn. It is described by the scholar Yang Fu as a "righteous beast, which rams the wrong party when it sees a fight, and bites the wrong party when it hears an argument". It is also described in the Shuowen Jiezi as being "a cattle-like beast with one horn; in

ancient times, it settled disputes by ramming the party at fault". As an inherently just beast, the XieZhi was used as a symbol of justice and law.

Chapter 238: Gui Ling

Showering under rays of the sun and being blown by a breeze, bright-red flowers were flying over together with the wind from an unknown blooming tree.

After many, many years, Ji Hao would still remember this scene.

This was a turning point for Ji Hao. From this point on, he officially started his life in Pu Ban City, within this magical yet primitive Midland world. In other words, he had been pushed or had half willingly entered a huge, tremendous, and gigantic swirl that was crazy enough to turn the sky over.

The one who had just uttered those words was a girl, wearing a long white dress and a black, sleeveless leather coat upon it. Although she seemed to be only a young girl, she was pretty tall, even much taller than Ying Yunpeng, who was sitting beside Ji Hao. Her hair were hanging loosely on her back, a golden hair clasp wrapped around her forehead, and a black and brightly shining pearl was inlaid in the middle of the hair clasp.

This girl was quite beautiful, yet she had a pair of straight, sharp and dense eyebrows, which seemed like two heavy and sharp machetes, hacking towards her own temples. Her two phoenix-like eyes were naturally majestic. Every time she turned her eyes towards certain angles, it felt as if roaring tsunamis were swooshing over. A simple eye-contact with her was capable of making you feel as if a great pressure had been laid onto your chest, causing you to become breathless.

Ji Hao and Ying Yunpeng looked simultaneously at that girl, followed by her voice.

After that, the two of them, both seemed to have been punched hard by an invisible fist, suddenly leaning backwards. At the same time, they lost their eyesight and countless stars were flying in front of their eyes, sparkling in the pure darkness.

The eyes of Ying Yunpeng popped out in shock. If it hadn't been for the warning of Xie Zhi just now, he would have screamed out with the great amount of power he had. What the heck had just happened? As a respectful chief elder that had been sent to Pu Ban City by the great Ten Sun Country, and a great powerful Magus King, he had been unable to maintain eye-contact with a woman?!

As for Ji Hao, he was staring at this girl, even more astonished than Ying Yunpeng.

He quickly swept his eyes across her long dress, leather coat, the black silk belt wrapped around her waist, and the soft-bottom shoes she was wearing.

Especially the black jade Ru Yi held in her left hand, which was a feet long, leaning against her shoulder, and in her right hand she was holding a long horsetail whisk that had a lotus carved in the handle and was made from the beard of a Flood Dragon. This dress style was quite special and weird in this primitive era.

Besides, she was releasing a magical sense of power which was not violent and fierce at all. Instead, her power felt gentle yet great, natural and pure, as if her power could completely merge with the nature. In other words, her power was the same as the power of the natural law and could simply be called the power of Dao.

Ji Hao stood up, looked seriously at this girl, politely made a bow with hands folded in front, and said in a deep voice, "My dear friend, I, Ji Hao, am lucky to meet you here."

The girl, who had been maintaining a straight face all this time, started smiling instantly. Her smile felt like snow had melted and countless flowers started to bloom on the soil that had been frozen for thousands of years. A feeling of warmth and friendliness immediately blew across the face of Ji Hao, after which she said, "I knew you are a friend. You know our big brother, right? You have an object that has been made by him on you."

"Is is Brother Po you're talking about?" Responded Ji Hao, grinning as well while looking at the girl.

"Ah? bro-brother Po?" The girl glanced at Ji Hao with a slightly weird expression, then raised her head and looked at the sky. It seemed as if she was at loss regarding what to say for a moment, but not long after, she slowly let out a long breath and continued with a faint trace of bitter smile on her smile, "I was right, you're one of us. Do you know where he is now?"

"The Southern Wasteland, he was going to travel across the Zhu Rong Country. I assume he is still in the deepest area of the Southern Wasteland, but I don't know his exact location." Ji Hao kept his honest grin and asked, "Can I ask your name?"

"No need to mention the humble name, you can just call me Gui Ling," said the girl while looking at Ji Hao with a honest face. "I was a Black Turtle living in the Eastern Ocean. Luckily I met my dear Shifu, who helped me cultivate myself to gain a human body."

Ying Yunpeng abruptly sneered aside and said, "Well, It turns out you're nothing but a spirit animal. In the Pu Ban City, your kind can only pull the vehicles or clean the toilets... after all, you're all of a lowly kind."

Ying Yunpeng had seen Ji Hao and Gui Ling chatting quite pleasurably. It seemed the two of them were old friends; apart from that, this Gui Ling was mysterious and powerful to such a degree that even Ying Yunpeng couldn't tell exactly how powerful she was. Therefore, he decided to insult Gui Ling with his speech. After all, the friends of enemies were all enemies as well, Ying Yunpeng clearly understood that.

"Ignorant kid! You asked for this," Gui Ling growled harshly yet deeply, while flicking her left hand swiftly and sending out the black jade Ru Yi directly towards Ying Yunpeng's head.

Ji Hao instantly yelled out in shock, "No! Here is..."

Ying Yunpeng looked teasingly at Gui Ling, this here was the jail set by the Emperor himself, and was being supported by the great power of the natural law. In this jail, not a single prisoner could escape, and not a single outsider could attack the prisoners, unless they were holding some legendary magical weapons, which were beyond the power of nature law. Otherwise, no one could even touch a prisoner in this jail.

Along with a beam of black and cold light, the black jade Ru Yi easily flew into Ying Yunpeng's hut, heavily bumping against his face.

Followed by a loud bang, the black jade Ru Yi smashed a big half of Ying Yunpeng's face, hollowing it as if an egg had been hit by a gigantic stone. Even the teeth of Ying Yunpeng had all been broken and sent flying out along with a stream of blood gushing out of his mouth.

"Your mouth is filled with dirty languages, so I had to clean it for you." Gui Lin looked at Ying Yunpeng in disgust and said harshly, "If you ever dare to say something like that, I will directly kill you, as easy as I would kill a chicken. Please, be responsible for your own life."

Ji Hao was happily watching all this from the side. His eyes had even narrowed into a pair of slim lines on his face because of his big grin.

So violent, so imposing... this style of acting, Ji Hao couldn't love it more.

"Haha, aha, ha..." This girl called herself Gui Ling, and her big brother called himself Po, and Po had said the name of their Shifu was Taoist priest Yu Yu. While laughing, Ji Hao's face suddenly twisted into a mess, and became completely frozen.

Po? Gui Ling? Taoist priest Yu Yu?!

No, no, no, no way, this couldn't possibly be happening. Could it

be true? Are these people truly who Ji Hao thought they were?

Gui Ling took the black jade Ru Yu back, without taking another glance at Ying Yunpeng. Probably just as she had said, killing a Magus King was even easier than killing a dog. People like Ying Yunpeng were equal to ants in front of her. She could simply wave her hand and turn him into a puff of smoke,

The seriousness dissipated on her face, Gui Ling then smiled again. She looked at Ji Hao and said, "Why have you been kept in here? What have you done? Or, I can just help you out of that hut. Eh, this so-called Emperor of the humankind sometimes is so sloppy. He never is quick and clean when dealing with all kinds of issues."

Ji Hao was shocked by her words again, then slowly shook his head with a bitter smile. He thought, if this Gui Ling was the same one he thought she was, it couldn't be more reasonable for her to ceaselessly complain about Emperor Shun like this. At least, judging from age, she was much much older than Emperor Shun.

When Ji Hao was about to say something, he sensed a series of intense vibrations coming from his sleeve. He hurriedly took out a jade talisman and injected a trace of power into it. Immediately, Man Man's voice came out from it.

"Ji Hao! How have you been in Pu Ban city?! Have you found that old guy Count Chong?! We, we're in a trouble! The Lie Mountain Family has sent groups of assassins hunting us!! Ah! Damn, we have to run, no time to talk!!"

Not long after that, Man Man's yelling came out again, "Why on earth can they always find us?! We have been running so hard!! And, why isn't my Abba replying my messages?! Ahhhh!!!"

Ji Hao's cold sweat instantly started pouring down from his forehead. He abruptly raised his head, looked at Gui Ling and said, "Sister Gui Ling, can you do me a favor?"

Gui Ling paused for a second, then hurriedly nodded and said, "Your friends are in trouble, your friends are all my, Gui Ling's friends! I will certainly help them. Hand me that jade talisman, then you don't need to worry anymore."

Ji Hao threw that talisman to Gui Ling. She let out a long and deep growl, and along with the few younger boys and girls standing behind her, transformed into a beam of cyan light and instantly darted into the air, disappearing within a moment.

Ru Yi: Ruyi (����). Literally means 'as desired; as you wish'. Ru Yu is a curved decorative object that serves as a ceremonial sceptre in Chinese Buddhism or a talisman symbolizing power and good fortune in Chinese folklore. A traditional ruyi has a long S-shaped handle and a head fashioned like a fist, cloud, or lingzhi mushroom. Ruyi are constructed from diverse materials. For example, the Palace Museum in Beijing has nearly 3000 ruyi that are variously made from valuable materials like gold, silver, iron, bamboo, wood, ivory, coral, rhinoceros horn, lacquer, crystal, jade, and precious gems. The 'ruyi' image frequently appears as a motif in Asian art.

Chapter 239: Appreciate the Music

Five hundred thousand miles away from the new territory of the Rong Mountain Clan...

An entirely black, magnificent palace was floating in the air. This ten thousand zhang-in-square palace looked simple yet majestic. A thirty six thousand zhang tall watchtower was built on each corner of this palace, and under each tower was a black, Horned Dragon-Turtle.

Above the palace was a sphere of black mist that was condensed from the natural essence of water power, hovering and rolling above in the air, holding a cushion that was made from black jade.

Gong Gong Wuyou was sitting on that cushion with his legs crossed, with the three-stringed music instrument put on his knees. His fingers either pressed on the strings or plucked them, the three strings letting out a thunderously loud music, transmitting to tens of thousands miles away. Wherever the music reached, the sky would be shrouded by dark clouds and bone-piercing cold rain would fall from the air, dropping on the ground and condensing into small ice crystals.

An entire piece of land that had a radius of ten thousand miles was frozen by the rain of ice, which had been created by Gong Gong Wuyou. Large groups of wild animals that were lying on the ground with huddled up bodies were all sealed by thick layers of ice, and seemed to have completely lost their life force.

A hundred miles away from the Palace, the current generation of Fire God, Zhu Rong, had extended his body to the size of a small mountain, on a pair of thousand zhang long Magic Fire Snakes, his whole body wrapped around by raging fire. He was staring at Gong Gong Wuyou, who had blocked his way. Before the icy rain, which was falling from the air, could reach his body, it evaporated completely by his flame and disappeared completely.

"Gong Gong Wuyou, are you really going to stand in my way?" Zhu Rong, who was even more beautiful than the prettiest girl in this world, let out a sneer and said, his eyebrows were raised as if he couldn't hide his murderous intent anymore, "Do you truly believe that I don't dare to kill you, or that turtle-like old thing in your family will come soon enough to save you?"

Gong Gong Wuyou remained perfectly calm, looked at Zhu Rong with a smile and said, "Zhu Rong, why are you so angry? Well, if we count the generations from the first generation of Water God and Fire God, we're of the same generation. It is just that, that old monster in your family has died too soon, therefore, you're already the Fire God who can rule the entire Southern Wasteland and are also the Master Libation of Humankind, while I am still only Prince Wuyou."

While letting out a slight sigh, Gong Gong Wuyou continued slowly, "In fact, I have been expecting to have a nice chat with you for a long time. For example, I would like to ask you how it does feel to sit on the chair that only belongs to the Fire God?"

Zhu Rong laughed out aloud towards the sky, then said in a strange tone, "As long as you have the guts to kill that old bastard in your family, you will know how it feels to sit on the chair that belongs only to Water God Gong Gong. What do you think? Do you need help? I have a bottle of 'Nine-Skies Poison' brought out from the heaven. If you only could dare to poison that old bastard, I will be happy to burn him for you."

Gong Gong Wuyou hurriedly swept across the three strings with his finger while grinning and said, "No, no, if I really do that, our Northern Wasteland would face a deadly disaster. I am not as powerful as you, to be honest. I am younger than you, and my cultivation is weaker than you. Although I do want to become the Water God, I am not that stupid."

Zhu Rong yelled out in a cold voice, "You're already stupid enough! No need to be much more. You blocked my way! Are you

trying to turn against our Southern Wasteland?"

Gong Gong Wuyou quickly shook his head and said, "Why would I block your way? I am just inviting you to check my newly created melody, and by the way, my dear Master Libation, please give some reviews, whether you think if my cultivation has improved or not, compared to a hundred years ago."

Zhu Rong took a deep breath, took out a jade talisman and said in a deep voice, "Man Man asked for my help, she is being hunted by someone. If anything happens to her, I will certainly chop you into pieces."

Gong Gong Wuyou raised his eyebrows and said blandly, "Who's Man Man? Well, I have nothing to do with that. I am just wondering how much weaker I am than the current generation of Fire God, Zhu Rong."

He swiftly flicked his finger, as a result of which the three strings emitted an intense buzzing and jingling sound that shook even the sky. The freezing wind and rain instantly turned into countless wind daggers and sharp ice crystals, creating beams of cold light and swished towards Zhu Rong. Gong Gong Wuyou grinned again, and said, "Be careful, this is a new melody created by me, called Cold Winter Kill."

Zhu Rong's body quickly melted within the flame, and turned into a flowing stream of flame. The two Magic Fiery Snakes let out dragon-like growls and spurted out two streams of raging flame from out of their jaws.

Purple-red 'Earth-Core Magic Flame', which looked like sticky lava, swooshed across the air and evaporated all the wind daggers and ice crystals. The ten fingers of Gong Gong Wuyou stopped suddenly, causing the counterforce of the strings to create even sharper swords, while his white and tender fingers got cut.

Drops of blood gushed out of those bone-deep wounds on his fingers, and soon, both the hands of Gong Gong Wuyou were dyed

red by his own blood.

"Collapsed at the first blow, idiot." Zhu Rong let out a laughter, then rose into the air as a huge stream of blazing flame, darting towards Gong Gong Wuyou along with immeasurable great heat. This time, Zhu Rong didn't withhold his power. He was seriously intending to kill this Gong Gong Wuyou with only one blow.

Gong Gong Wuyou was staring at the great flame that was covering the entire sky, swooshing towards him, with a stiff face. He looked at those sharp ice crystals and wind daggers that he had brought up with both the natural and artificial water power, gathered by the great power of the large natural magic formation hidden in the palace underneath, evaporate suddenly.

Before he had come here, he had believed that with the help of the magic formation hidden in the palace, he could at least stall Zhu Rong for an entire day and night. After all, he always thought that Zhu Rong was far weaker than his father, the Water God Gong Gong, and therefore, he, Gong Gong Wuyou, should be at the same level as Zhu Rong.

However, once he started the fight, he fell into despair, realizing that he had been overestimating himself while underestimating Zhu Rong.

Facing Zhu Rong, he was like an ant that could be pressed into ash by him with only one finger. No matter how perfect his plan was, facing a definitely great power, and this Zhu Rong, who was so violent and with definite intentions of killing him without giving even a second thought to the so-called overall situation, Gong Gong Wuyou finally realized that all of his wise plans, thoughts and calculations had all been bull***it.

Eight black spheres of mist gushed out of the palace, transforming into eight gigantic silhouettes and blocked the flame, while shielding Gong Gong Wuyou behind them.

A shrill scream rose into the air, and a multi-headed serpent

thrust its head out of the black mist with a hideous grin on its face. The serpent suddenly opened its mouth and let out countless highly poisonous water arrows, darting towards Zhu Rong. Those water arrows clashed against Zhu Rong's flame, immediately letting out an ear-piercing noise, while poisonous air quickly spread over. Even the ground was corroded by the poisonous air and turned into puddles of mud.

"Xiang Liu, you want to die too?!" Zhu Rong yelled harshly, "Ha! You! A bunch of old bastards!"

"Zhu Rong, even though you're the current Fire God, as old ministers working for the Water God, we can't let you kill our prince," said the nine-headed serpent while laughing disgustingly and stirring up large clouds of black poisonous mist and black water, sending them towards Zhu Rong.

Immediately after that, one of the remaining seven silhouettes that had come out from the palace leapt high and turned into a Water Ape, whose body was covered in silvery fur and neck was ten thousand zhang long. He raised a gigantic pillar that was condensed from ice crystals, directly smashing it towards Zhu Rong's head.

"Good, Wuzhi Qi, you have come too." Zhu Rong growled out while a long spear condensed from flame darted out from the stream of flame transformed from Zhu Rong's human body.

Soon, the eight silhouettes encircled Zhu Rong and were continuously launching attacks at him. Gong Gong Wuyou laughed out pleasingly, then said, "Now, my dear Great Libation, please pay attention to my newly written melody, the Cold Winter Kill!"

He slightly flicked his fingers, dripped his blood on the three strings, and a resonating music rose into the air once again, instantly resounding through the entire area, spanning an entire ten-thousand miles.

Chapter 240: Finishing Meng Ao

"Kill, kill, kill!! Kill them!"

Over a thousand muscular men whose bodies were covered completely in black hair were yelling loudly while waving roughly crafted stone axes and spears, rushing towards Man Man. When they were still over ten miles away from her, seven to eight Senior Magi amongst these completely naked strong men threw their weapons out with all of their strength.

Those heavy stone axes and spears swiftly flew across the air along with muffled swooshing sounds towards Man Man.

Man Man popped up her watery eyes and silently raised one of her hammers, swinging towards those weapons. Followed by a few thunderous bangs, three to four stone axes and over ten stone spears was shattered into pieces, while Man Man's tiny body slightly shook as well, staggeringly taking a few steps back.

Huge drops of cold sweat gushed out of Man Man's forehead. Her body was slightly quivering and suddenly a stream of blood flowed down from the corner of her mouth, within which, a black thing that seemed to be alive was twisting and wriggling.

Man Man's other hammer had gone missing already, and her left hand was wrapped around by a faint layer of smoke. A stream of green light was revolving around her left shoulder, firmly blocking the black smoke and preventing it from reaching Man Man's heart. Her left arm was hanging softly on her shoulder; it could only slightly swing along with her movements, but was completely without strength to move even for a slightest bit.

On her left wrist were three visible pinholes. Wisps of black smoke continuously gushed out of those holes along with shrill noises. Every time that black smoke would rise into the air, one or two fierce ghost faces would appear within the smoke, then dissipate silently in the wind.

"Kill them all!!!" Those muscular hairy men shouted out once again, "Food! Animals! Weapons! Armors! And white, soft women!! Kill them, we will have everything!"

Ho! Ho! Whoo-hoo!

Over a thousand hairy men growled simultaneously, crazily rushing towards Man Man and the others. Another tens of stone weapons swooshed over, and this time, Yu Mu let out a great shout, waving his pair of huge fists while swinging his layers of fat and stepping forward.

His fists seemed as heavy as small mountains, bumping hard against those heavy stone weapons. Those weapons were instantly sent flying away, however, clear bone cracking sound came out from Yu Mu's fists. His fists were suddenly broken, after which they quickly were nourished by Senior Magus's life-force and recovered.

"Man Man! Hop onto my back! I'll carry you, let's go!" Yu Mu rubbed his own hands and said in a deep voice, "But first you have to throw your hammer away, I can't possibly carry this hammer of yours."

"No!" Man Man yelled while gritting her teeth, "They lied to Man Man! How could they?! Man Man was nicely trying to help them, but they grabbed Man Man's little purse away and poked Man Man three to four times with some damn poisonous needle! I have to smash them! Amma said, if anyone lies to Man Man, smash them!!"

Letting out a great shout, large streams of raging flame rose from Man Man's body, however, within a blink of an eye, the flame dissipated completely in the air, and only wisps of faint smoke remained.

Shaosi pressed her hand on Man Man's shoulder and said gently yet with her typical bland face, "Man Man, listen to us. At this moment, we can't fight head on against them."

Man Man gnashed her teeth and closed her cherry-like lips tightly, then dropped her hammer. Yu Mu grabbed her shoulder and threw her onto his own chubby soft back, then quickly locked his fingers together and changed a few hand motions. Wisps of green smoke spread over, and in the meanwhile, dark clouds gathered towards them.

A heavy green rain abruptly poured down from the sky. However, when those rain drops were still hundreds of zhang away from the ground, a fist-sized white pearl swished over from the side and circled in the air. Instantly, all the poison contained in the rain had disappeared, causing only clear and cold rainwater to drop on the ground.

Yu Mu let out an angry shout, turned around, carried Man Man up and immediately rushed out.

Shaosi glanced at that white pearl gloomily, grabbed Taisi and followed right behind Yu Mu.

Feng Xing was standing quite far away from them. He pulled his longbow open, quickly letting out large amounts of arrows that swished towards those hairy muscular men like a rain. Every single arrow would pierce right through one muscular man's forehead, and those men who had been continuously rushing over would fall on the ground one after another. Even their souls had instantly been shattered by Feng Xing.

However, none of those hairy men were frightened by the death of their fellows. They continued shouting and yelling while rushing madly over. Feng Xing ran out entire three quivers of arrows, and still failed to stop them from crazily chasing after Man Man, Yu Mu, and Shaosi.

He growled angrily, and slowly pulled his longbow open again. A cyan gust of wind-arrow condensed on the string, and followed by a thunderous boom, the wind-arrow suddenly darted out, transforming into a dragon-shaped gust of fierce wind, roaring

towards those crazy and muscular men.

Nevertheless, that white pearl descended from the air again, hovered around and stopped right in front of the gust of fierce wind. The pearl and the wind bumped against each other, the wind-dragon instantly exploded into tens of spinning whirlwinds, spreading out towards all directions.

Over a hundred barbarian-like men were rolled into two whirlwinds, their bodies stirred into pieces and large clouds of blood rose in the whirlwinds. The white pearl flew across the blood mist, but didn't get even slightly stained by the blood.

Feng Xing let out another angry curse, turned around three to five miles away from Shaosi and Yu Mu, fleeing towards a piece of jungle hundreds of miles away from him. However, the landscape of that piece of jungle was even more complex and dangerous and could provide hiding spots for more enemies.

From over a hundred miles away, another group of muscular men, whose clothes couldn't even cover their entire bodies, rushed towards them. From another few different directions, more weirdly-shaped, human-like creatures were quickly moving over. It seemed that these enemies were planning on encircling them.

These weird, hairy muscular men, who didn't even have enough clothes to cover the vital parts of their bodies, were all vagabonds living in the Midland, with complicated backgrounds. They didn't like farming, nor were they willing to engage in herding. Instead, they were more used to violently robbing others in order to gain their living resources. Just like carrion dogs, moving around the entire Midland without a resident area, and harming anyone who were living in their vicinity.

Because these people were used to robbing, they were quite powerful and had high battle efficiency. Therefore, sometimes some clans or organization would pay them a very low price for doing some evil things for them. Normally, some food, armors, or

poor women who were kidnaped from their homes could make these violent and animal-like men risk the lives of their all the warriors in their clan.

On a fiery cloud, floating in the air afar, Prince Xu and Ku Xuan were sitting side by side on an entirely red chariot, with satisfied smiles on their faces.

Ku Quan was holding a jade bowl in his hand that contained clear water. A lotus petal floated on the surface of the water, and the petal tip was pointing at Ji Hao's teammates all the time. He laughed and said, "Dear Prince, you should worry no more. With my secret magic, they will never be able to escape."

Prince Xu laughed out aloud for a few times, took a glance at Meng Ao and the two young assistants, who were standing on the fiery cloud, nervously and cautiously trying to grin at him, slightly waved his hand and said, "We have to prove them guilty. These few kids were evil and horrible, and for three fake confessions, they tortured you, and even accidentally killed you while doing that."

Meng Ao and the two young assistants suddenly popped out their eyes and leapt up from the fiery cloud. However, before they could yell out, a few fully armored warriors standing behind them punctured their chests with heavy swords from their backs.

"Dirt to dirt, ashes to ashes, you shall just die in peace. Sooner or later, those kids will all go down there to accompany you," said Ku Quan gently with a faint smile on his face. He then slightly waved his hand and continued, "Well, human lives are filled with bitterness. You're now luckily free from such bitterness.

Followed by a few muffled booms, the bodies of Meng Ao and his two young assistants fell from the fiery clouds, heavily smashing on the ground.

Chapter 241: Releasing Souls from Purgatory

Heavy rain was pouring down, and Yu Mu, Feng Xing, Shaosi, and Man Man were all instantly soaked by the rainwater.

The black soil had fully absorbed the rainwater, becoming incomparably sticky. Every step forward, their knees would sink deeply into the mud, requiring great strength to pull their legs back out. To Senior Magi, this was nothing, however, it indeed slowed them down.

Tens of thousands of vagabond men were madly shouting and rushing towards them from three different directions. Although they were vagabonds, their equipment were quite good. They had a few powerful longbows and a couple of skillful archers, who were shooting stone arrows out from over ten miles away.

Those stone arrows shrilly swished across the air. Yu Mu waved both of his arms, steadily slapping those flying stone arrows with his chubby and huge palms. Every single stone arrow that approached him was accurately slapped to ashes.

While slapping those arrows, Yu Mu murmured, "Eh, fatso, fatso, poor fatso, you ate so hard to grow your fat, but now you have to use it to block weapons. Such a great shame..."

Before he finished his sentence, a stone arrow abruptly flew towards Shaosi's right shoulder. Yu Mu swiftly turned his body and blocked that arrow with his own shoulder. The stone arrowhead heavily bumped on Yu Mu's body, making his thick and soft shoulder slightly hollow, then the fat around his shoulder slightly shook and bounced that arrow out, darting backwards.

Yu Mu instantly let out a blooming flower-like grin and hazily yelled, "Nice! All their arrows are crappy, can't even hurt my fat skin, nice, nice!"

More arrows swooshed over, but Yu Mu's facial expression now had become much more relieved. If he didn't have enough time to slap all the arrows away, he would directly block those arrows with his waist and arms, which were much more huge than the arms and waists of others. The arrows used by those vagabond archers were of low quality, and couldn't possibly break his skin. They all would bounce back because of his fat.

Feng Xing was still standing far away from them, quickly pulling his longbow open, without making the slightest of sounds. Sharp and lightning fast arrows darted out from his bowstring one after another. The bows of those archers amongst those vagabonds were all abruptly shattered by Feng Xing's arrows, after which, another sharp arrow pierced into the middle of each archer's eyebrows, and came out from the back of their heads. All archers were slaughtered by Feng Xing within the span of a few breaths.

"A-ma-zing!" Yu Mu showed his thumb up to Feng Xing from a long distance,

"Sure." Feng Xing responded blandly, and calmly accepted Yu Mu's praise.

Staggering and with lot of difficulty, Ji Hao's five teammates rushed towards the piece of jungle, and were about to get into the vast dark jungle.

Taisi, who had being dragged by Shaosi all the way and was embarrassingly running as hard as he could, abruptly his head, gnashed his teeth, showing a weird and creepy smile and said, "It's been many years since the last time we were chased so badly by others."

Although Taisi's body was almost being carried by Shaosi, swaying like a sack of straw, this didn't cause any difficulties for him to take out his bone cane and wave it. Smoothly letting out a series of a short and spooky spell, Taisi slightly waved his bone cane, after which, hundreds of vagabonds who had been madly

chasing after them silently fell on the ground, while the white pearl had completely no reaction to it.

In the next moment, the bodies of those vagabonds who had just fallen down suddenly exploded, their souls turned into hundreds of translucent and hideous silhouettes, screaming and rising into the sky, stretching their arms and flying towards their fellow warriors.

The white pearl, manipulated by Ku Quan, suddenly let out an eye-piercing white light. The streams of white light shone on the bodies of the evil souls and quickly corroded them, creating clouds of white smoke, just like when acid was poured on human beings. Along with shrill shouts and screams, these evil souls' bodies rapidly shrank and completely dissipated within the blink of an eye.

"Magic that is especially aimed at evil ghosts?" murmured Taisi while staring at that white pearl.

"Not magic, something else," said Shaosi while carrying Taisi and running quickly, in her typical bland tone, "It's totally different from all the magics we know about so far. It probably belongs to another system, which has nothing in common with our system. At least one amongst these people is capable of dispersing my power of weal and woe."

Pausing briefly, Shaosi seriously continued, "Although that's not his own power, but since he has indeed dispersed my power, it is still quite impressive."

Taisi's facial expression changed slightly, his pair of eyeballs turned directly pure black. A stream of pure black light began rotating slowly in each of his eyes, as if he was going to to suck everything in this world into his pair of deeply dark eyes.

Countless dark spell symbols swiftly flashed across his eyebrows, then dissipated within a moment. Occasionally, these spell symbols would merge into ferocious and terrifying devil-like faces.

However, each of these scary faces would shatter soon after they were formed, and every time when that happened, Taisi's body would quiver slightly.

"I have to be more powerful," murmured Taisi.

"Don't push it," said Shaosi in a deep voice.

The five of them quickly moved forward. With only a few more steps they could get into the dark and dense jungle, which had a much more complex landscape. However, a beam of white light suddenly flashed across the air overhead them, within which, a pretty and young girl, who had a pair of pure watery eyes and juicy lips appeared, leapt down onto the ground, and blocked the way.

This little girl was fiddling with a fist-sized leather bag which was sewed exquisitely and decorated with beautiful flame patterns. This was a powerful space magic tool that the Fire God, Zhu Rong, had asked a master craftsman to make for Man Man especially after she had arrived Pu Ban City. All of Man Man's life-saving magic talismans, magic treasures and tools were put in that little bag by her.

After being hunted and nearly killed by the Blood Tooth in the Southern Wasteland, Man Man was now much more cautious than before. She would never carelessly throw those life-saving treasures that Zhu Rong gave her in the corners of her palace. Instead, she had put all of them in her little storage bag and carried that bag with her everywhere.

With Zhu Rong's power and his love for Man Man, if those magic treasures he had given to Man Man were activated at once, the power and effect released by those treasures would definitely be great enough to wipe out a few large-scale Southern Wasteland Clans that were being protected by Divine Magi.

However, not long ago, this seemingly pretty and innocent little girl, who looked so young and naive that one wouldn't even possibly think of any evilness related to her, pretended to be

chased by a wild animal, staggered and fell outside of the cave where Man Man and the other teammates had been hiding. Man Man nicely tried to help her, but she grabbed the little storage bag tied around Man Man's waist, and swiftly pierced three poisonous needles into Man Man's left wrist.

After that, countless vagabonds rushed over like water of a tide. Shaosi carried Taisi, while protecting Man Man with Feng Xiang and Yu Mu, fleeing right away, and even helplessly abandoned their captives, Meng Ao and the two young men, in the cave.

At this moment, that little girl showed up again, and was calmly fiddling with Man Man's little storage bag. Man Man's eye immediately turned blood-red and yelled out,

"That's Man Man's little purse!!!"

"Well, now it's mine!" the little girl proudly looked at Man Man and said, "I am Pu Tong, tutored by Ku Quan. My kind Shifu said that although you're born in a Southern Wasteland barbarian clan, you're quite talented, and qualified to join us as an apprentice of my Shifu. After that, you will be able to set yourself free from the boundless bitterness, and enjoy the endless happiness."

Crooking her finger, she hung the little storage bag on her finger, and swayed it slightly. Pu Tong proudly continued, "My Shifu was nice and merciful, that's the only reason you haven't been killed yet. This is your only chance of surviving. Do yourself a favor and just join us."

Man Man angrily popped out her pair of eyes like a wounded young beast, spurted streams of flame out from her pupils and yelled hoarsely, "I will smash you all with my hammers, then throw your bodies in the wild to feed the most lowly creatures! You bunch of...jerks!"

Shaosi threw Taisi on the ground, each hand pulled out an alloy forged long spear out of the ground, silently and quickly walking towards Pu Tong.

Pu Tong let out a scornful snort, threw a sideway glance at Shaosi, then opened her mouth and spat out a sharp flying sword, hacking right towards Shaosi's head.

Chapter 242: Kang

A heavy rain was pouring abruptly on Pu Ban City.

Si Xi was standing on a mountainside that was covered in blooming white star-like orchids. The small piece of sky above his head was abnormally clear, without even a slight gust of the wind or a drop of rain. The dense and thick dark cloud, which had almost covered the entire sky, cracked above his head, letting the bright and magnificent starlight descend down in spiral form, shining on Si Xi's body, and also lighting the orchids hundreds of miles around Si Xi.

The white orchid petals were beautiful and transparent, reflecting the starlight and making the entire mountainside look like it had was covered in sparkling stars.

A breeze blew across the air along with raindrops, rolled up thousands of petals, lightly flying up into the air. Those petals slowly rotated in the air and gathered in front of Si Xi, abruptly moving inwards and folded, forming a square and serious face, who then opened his mouth and began talking.

"Abba, I heard that someone has been giving Ji Hao trouble?"

Si Xi nodded, looked at the face formed from the petals, let out a bitter smile and said, "Elder Wulong and the other master Magi tutors, they...they're not that good at intriguing. It's already quite impressive that they have managed to maintain the current stable situation of the Magi Palace. It's a bit difficult for them to well protect those kids, carefully selected and brought back by us."

Si Wen Ming, who had sent a wisp of his soul back from god knew how many thousands of miles away, forcibly manipulated the natural power at Si Xi's side to form his own face with the petals and talk to Si Xi, sighed as well and said, "Therefore, Abba, you have to stay in the Pu Ban City... can't go anywhere at this moment. We have way too few trustworthy people who can help

us right now."

Si Xi nodded, and worryingly asked Si Wen Ming, "What the hell is happening in the Chi Ban Mountain that made you redeploy so many people to that place?"

Si Wen Ming helplessly smiled, the face formed from petals seemed suddenly darkened, however, after only a moment, all the petals rose again and the face instantly turned as energetic as usual, then said, "The Emperor in power came from the Blood Moon Bloodline, Dishi Tian, his soul has recently returned to the Blood Moon, and Dishi Yanluo, who came from the Di Shi Family, has inherited the throne. According to Yu Clan's tradition, the new Emperor has to build enough meritorious achievements."

Si Xi's face immediately tightened after hearing Si Wen Ming's words, "Which means, the main enemies that the Chi Ban Mountain area is facing now is the Blood Moon?"

Si Wen Ming nodded and said with a deep voice, "Dishi Tian was relatively kind, he had been ruling their world for a thousand years, and within this period, conflicts that had over ten-thousand people involved in it had never happened between them and our kind. Not like him, Dishi Yanluo has been looking down upon our humankind with hatred all this time. He sees all the creatures except of his own race in the world as slaves and lowly animals. This coming great war...I assume that, many people will die."

Staying silent for a while, Si Xi said slowly, "So, this time, regarding Ji Hao and the other few kids...we can only clearly tell them that they have to accept the disadvantageous situation and prepare for the possible losses, is that right?"

Si Wen Ming took a deep breath, and said tiredly, "In a couple of days, when I return to the Pu Ban City, I will tell them myself. As for Ying Yunpeng, since he has initiatively come to us, we shouldn't worry that much. All archers in the Pu Ban city who have come from the Ten Sun Country have to obey the orders and

go to the Chi Ban Mountain in preparation of the war."

Si Xi narrowed his eyes, raised his head and looked at the starry sky for a while, then said slowly, "Just as you said. Zhu Rong has already caught all of their attentions, and I have sent Si Dao and his fellows."

"That's good, I can worry less if that is so," said Si Wen Ming deeply, "Kang has left for the Pu Ban City as well. I think it won't be too difficult to find out what genuinely has happened."

Another breeze blew over, dissipating the face formed from the petals. Si Xi held his hands behind his back, while his red face seriously tightened, eyes filled with nervousness and tiredness.

"Dishi Yanluo, if you insist on attacking us, I will fight against you with no fear. If you intend to destroy our humankind, then, let's see who will be able to last until the end." An earthquake-like muffled yet great sound came from Si Xi's body. It seemed that his entire body had merged with the land and the sky, and the sense of power released from his body had become incomparably great and stately. He then continued, "Our ancestors were born on this piece of land, have lived on this land and were buried in this land. Our humankind has been living and reproducing on this piece of land, from generation to generation. This piece of the world belongs to us, not you."

A nearly crazy thunder came from the heaven, and along with a dazzling lightning bolt struck on the ground. The dense and thick dark cloud abruptly merged back together, completely blocking the starlight pouring down from the crack above Si Xi's head. At the exact same moment, Si Xi disappeared completely under the dark sky. Even heavier rain poured down from the sky, tearing countless starlight orchids on the mountainside apart, which then withered immediately.

Within the heavy rain and roaring fierce wind, over twenty sturdy young men were walking slowly.

These young men had all bare upper bodies and long hair that were hanging loosely, fluttering intensely behind their bodies. Huge raindrops and sharp gusts of wind all were smashed when bumped against their muscular chests. Lightning bolts flashed across the sky and lightened their young and grinning faces. Step by step, they steadily and slowly walked on the ground, however, every single step these young men made could be more than a hundred miles big.

The four young men walking in the front carried a sword, an axe, a spear and a machete. Moving in the dark night and against the fierce wind and rain, they arrived at the Rong Mountain Clan's new territory. They were standing on a small hill in front of the new territory, and looked at the dark valley, which was occasionally lit up by lightning bolts.

"Big brother, shall we get start according to our old master's order?" the young man carrying a long spear grinned and asked.

"Si Qiang, don't ever mention the word 'old' in front of your master, seriously you should never ever mention that word, otherwise...do you want to be fed to those Jurassic beasts for another three months?" the young men carrying a machete grinned back and said, then he waved his hand backwards and continued, "Hmmm, they are here as well. Let's start then. Find out the truth as soon as possible, after which we can go back and make our report."

Another lightning bolt flashed across the air, and at the same moment, the silhouettes of over twenty young men suddenly merged with the rain and got into the Rong Mountain Clan's newly built village.

On the fence wall, tens of Rong Mountain Clan's night shift guards suddenly and simultaneously lost their visions before they could make even the slightest moan. An especially solid and powerful palm struck the back of each of their heads, directly knocking them down on the ground.

After that, in the two small camps behind the fence wall, a few Senior Magi, who had been leisurely chatting and drinking alcohol to warm their bodies, abruptly lost their eyesight as well, and were knocked down without even knowing what had happened.

Over twenty silhouettes swiftly moved inside the village. Wherever they moved past, those asleep Rong Mountain Clan clansmen would fall into an even deeper sleep, and the few elders who were living in a few mansions in the deepest area of the valley were silently moved into the mine that had been opened up earlier by Ji Hao and his teammates.

Iron Yan suddenly quivered and woke up from a nightmare.

He suddenly leapt up from the ground, and discovered with a shock that he wasn't in his cosy room where he should be in. Instead, someone had moved him into the cold, moist and dark mine without waking him up. Before Iron Yan shouted out, a heavy axe swooshed across the air and struck hard on his shoulder.

Loud bone cracking sound instantly came out from his body. Iron Yan let out a great howl, held his shoulder with the other hand, fell on the ground, and couldn't help but intensely twitch his body.

A long spear heavily thudded against his body, whipped him for a hundred times within the next moment, struck every single bone of his into seven to eight pieces, causing Iron Yan to nearly pass out from the pain.

A soft gentle light sphere lit up, from within which, a young man, who had a dignified and serious face, wearing a faint gold long cloak and a golden coronal, holding his hand behind his body, slowly walked out, up to Iron Yan. He raised his feet and threw a heavy kick on Iron Yan's chest, nearly smashing Iron Yan's entire chest.

"I am Lie Mountain Kang, the blood-related grandson of Emperor Yan, the last generation of the Emperor of the humankind. My friends call me Kang, you can also call me Prince Kang," said Lie

Mountain Kang while narrowing his eyes, harshly staring at Iron Yan, "I was with my warriors in the Chi Ban Mountain, preparing for the war against those non-humankind monsters. But you bunch of bloody bastards ruined our Lie Mountain Family's reputation, and also made me leave my warriors and come back from the Chi Ban Mountain to deal with this crap."

"Just tell me what exactly has happened, and I'll allow you an easy death," continued Lie Mountain Kang coldly, "Or, I'll wipe your entire Rong Mountain Clan out."

Chapter 243: Deluding Their Hearts

Pu Tong's flying sword swiftly hacked towards Shaosi, while Shaosi's long spear shrilly swooshed against it.

The long spear of Shaosi was accurately aimed at the flying sword, but she abruptly halted and looked at Pu Tong in shock. Her long spear had failed to hit anything, because the flying sword, which had seemed very sharp and powerful, was not real.

The flying sword that was supposed to be negated by her long spear roared down from the air and pierced right between her eyebrows with a high-pitched sighing sound while Shaosi was staring at it. She didn't seem to have felt any pain, only her body started to quiver, after which her face that always was cold and bland suddenly had a smile upon it, showing a trace of gentleness and warmth.

In Shaosi's eyes, the heavy rain and roaring wind around her had suddenly disappeared, and under her feet was thriving and juicy grass instead of dirty sticky mud. The fierce tramps, who had been chasing her so hard, had disappeared as well. The sky was blue, dotted with pure-white clouds, with a few beautifully green small floating hills drifting across it. A group of white and pretty gigantic birds flew out from one floating hill, happily diving down towards the jungle.

This was a small valley that looked very peaceful and thriving, filled with all kinds of plants, each emitting a nice fragrance. The grassland was thickly dotted with flowering azaleas, the flowers were fiery red, making the grassland look like an ocean of flame and covering quite a few small hills. A few hundreds of cabins in this valley were also wrapped by these fiery red flowers.

A short and scrawny Taisi was riding on a huge yellow dog, rushing past her while proudly waving a wooden stick, yelling and shouting towards a group of hens, pretending to be a very brave

warrior.

Shaosi had just learned to walk, she staggered and followed behind the huge yellow dog, babbling while waving her pair of tiny and tender hands, trying to make Taisi slow down and wait for her.

Beside the gate of the small yard was a beautiful and gentle woman, holding a small bamboo basket in her arm while looking at her beloved daughter and son with a smile. The bamboo basket contained newly picked bamboo shoots and mushrooms, and a few strands of wild plants.

A handsome man walked on the small trail in the ocean of flowers while grinning. Around his hand a long rope that was made from withy grass was wrapped, on which two fat and huge fishes were dangling. Grinning with a trace of embarrassment, the man let out three loud laughs from a great distance, then said, "Ha, haha,ah, today the rabbits living on the mountain were too smart. I tried for the majority of the day but failed to shoot even a hair of a rabbit. Eh, fortunately, I am a good fisher as well. Although we don't have any rabbits today, we still will be able to have these nice fishes! Right? Oi, Taisi, Shaosi, don't wander far off, come back for these fishes in a while!"

While chuckling, Shaosi happily turned her head back and waved her hands to her Abba and Amma, then continued staggering behind Taisi and the dog.

The yellow dog happily barfed as well, chasing behind the group of chubby hens, trying to push them into a dead end corner. Following behind the group of hens, Taisi and Shaosi slowly walked away, disappearing in the ocean of flowers.

Not long after that, the peaceful and beautiful small village was suddenly submerged in raging flames, huge amounts of blood nourished those flowers, making their colors become even more vivid. Four-eyed Jia Clan monsters were waving their gigantic

weapons while laughing hideously, slaughtering residents of the small village one after another, as easily and carelessly as if they were chopping off grass.

The spells incanted by the elders transformed into countless twisted black chains, flying across the sky and wrapping around those Jia Clan monsters. Tens of Jia Clan monsters immediately turned into dry corpses after letting out their last howl, then those dry corpses suddenly collapsed into dust.

However, right after that, a breathtakingly beautiful blood-red moon showed up above the village, with a few three-eyed handsome men in luxury cloaks floating in the air, letting out beams of blood-red bright light, killing those elders who were guarding in front of the ancestral temple and protecting the other clansmen.

Shaosi's face suddenly twisted in pain, then she began vomiting blood.

"Shaosi!" screamed Taisi. He instantly raised his bone cane and started incanting a spell.

Pu Tong gave a teasing smile, rose her flying sword into the air once again, throwing it swiftly in the middle of Taisi's eyebrows. Before Taisi could finish his spell, he had fallen into the delusion just like Shaosi. A warm and peaceful smile appeared on his face, while murmuring, "Abba, Amma, it's Taisi and the little girl...We miss you so much, and uncles, and grandpas..."

Suddenly, the body of Taisi quivered and large mouthfuls of blood spurted out from his mouth as well.

"You bloody woman!!" shouted Yu Mu ragingly, while rushing forward with Man Man carried on his back. At the same time, he grabbed his gigantic, especially crafted pot and threw it directly towards Pu Tong's head, along with a fierce gust of wind.

"Well, brainless dudes are the easiest to deal with," said Pu Tong

while laughing scornfully. Right after that, she opened her mouth and let out the flying sword once more. Similar to the previous two times, the flying swords accurately struck on Yu Mu's forehead. Although Yu Mu swung the pot on time trying to block the sword, the untouchable sword still pierced into his forehead without any difficulty.

Yu Mu paused abruptly and a weird smile appeared on his white and chubby face.

"Sister! You have to eat more and get fat, then you'll be powerful! Like me, I eat loads!"

Man Man turned her head around in panic, looking at Shaosi, Taisi and Yu Mu, who had all fallen into delusions, hidden deep inside their hearts, and seemed unable to wake up. Man Man had never seen or even heard about such kind of weird attacking method which could push enemies into becoming delusional and make them lose control of their own bodies. This was apparently a soul-attack that could take one's life without lifting a finger.

In the Southern Wasteland, fights between clans were always simple and straightforward, life and death would be decided by heavy swords and machetes. Even all those spells and magics were aimed at killing as much enemies as possible in the fastest and fiercest way.

Senior Magi never cultivated their souls or spiritual powers. Their souls were purely dependent on their physical strength, being nourished by their spirit blood and growing stronger along with their bodies. Ordinary Senior Magi could hardly achieve such thing as manipulating their own soul power, and therefore, soul-attacks were an unimaginably weird attacking method.

"What happened to you?!! Are you all bewitched?!" Man Man yelled loudly, to the point she even began roaring.

Judging from Taisi, Shaosi and Yu Mu's behaviour, what they were experiencing now was indeed similar to being 'bewitched' as

Man Man had learned about on that subject. In the Southern Wasteland, if some children would accidentally offend the mysterious creatures living in the jungle when they were playing in the jungle, then those mysterious creatures would invade into their bodies to punish them.

As far as healing those bewitched kids was concerned, there was a particular natural magic system in the Southern Wasteland created by those Maguspriests, but Man Man didn't know how to perform it.

But what Man Man didn't know was that even if she knew how to heal the bewitched ones, she still would be unable to defeat this weird soul-attack that Pu Tong had launched.

"Their minds were so fragile," said Pu Tong proudly while smiling, "So, you can either die for good, or come and join us, and become our fellow apprentice."

After finishing her speech, Pu Tong opened her mouth and let out the flying sword once again, darting towards Man Man.

When the flying sword was about to pierce into the middle of Man Man's eyebrows, a beam of fiery light suddenly dashed out from Man Man's forehead and shattered the flying sword.

From a great distance away, the white pearl that was being manipulated by Ku Quan quickly descended from the air and dissipated the fiery light spurted out from Man Man's forehead, after which, Pu Tong let out a raging shout, opened her mouth and let out another flying sword. This time, the sword accurately pierced into Man Man's forehead.

Man Man's body suddenly quivered, and her pair of brightly shining eyes instantly dimmed down, falling into a deep confusion.

Just like Shaosi, Man Man had fallen into a beautiful delusion, surrounded by blooming flowers and soft grass, and pretty young girls that were walking fast. Man Man was being held in the arms

by an unspeakably beautiful woman who had dark green pupils. The beautiful woman was gently humming a nice and peaceful melody.

"Amma, why don't you come back and look for Man Man..."

Man Man showed a faint smile on her young and tender face, seemingly obsessed in her delusion.

Chapter 244: Suppressing

"Killing is the most useless method."

Ku Quan was sitting on the chariot and said slowly with a mysterious smile on his face, while fiddling with a string of thumb-sized white pearls constituting of seventeen similar-looking white pearls. "Everything in this world is formed naturally and has its own usability. Even a solid rock can be made into a table or a chair and serve people or even a pile of dung can be buried into the soil and nourish plants."

"Therefore, with this incomparable supreme magic of ours, we can cast the natural or acquired sins away of every single one of our apprentices. We can make them concentrate fully on their cultivation, accumulate their merits and virtues, then bring this great magic to the rest of the world and save more people from their bitter lives. This is what called great achievement and contribution, which will bring you an unimaginably great happiness."

Prince Xu hurriedly nodded his head even though he didn't seem to have understood Ku Quan's words clearly. The variety of magic abilities that Ku Quan possessed had deeply shocked him, making him feel that even the majority of those old Maguspriests of the Lie Mountain Family were not as powerful as Ku Quan. Therefore, his admiration for Ku Quan had grown greatly and deeply in his heart.

But, sometimes Ku Quan would say stuff that would make Prince Xu feel truly confused, because he was unable to get the point and meaning behind those words of Ku Quan.

"This so-called great happiness, what exactly is that?" Prince Xu decided not to pretend that he had understood Ku Quan's words anymore, instead, he had thrown the question directly.

"Well, so-called great happiness, for example, is to have immortal life," said Ku Quan while straightening his waist and slightly

flicking his finger. Along with his move, a bigger white pearl that had just had broken the flame spurted out from Man Man's forehead and collaborated with Pu Tong, putting Man Man into delusion, rolled and instantly rose into the air, turned around in the air and darted towards Feng Xing, who was a few miles away.

Corresponding with the seventeen smaller white pearls held in Ku Quan's hands, when the bigger white pearl darted towards Feng Xing, the seventeen smaller white pearls let out a slight thunder-like sound. The short sentence that Ku Quan had said, while intentionally making a calm and blandly careless look, was actually like a series of crazy lightning that struck right onto Prince Xu's head, making him feel as if countless shining stars had blown up in front of his eyes and nearly pushed him down from the chariot.

"How could that be even possible?! To not die?!!" Prince Xu's voice had even changed, his gentle, jade-clanging-like voice now sounded like the screams of a few hens.

"Ordinary people will die when they are around a hundred years old, while Novice Magi will have about a hundred and fifty years of lives. After breaking into the level of Junior Magi, their lives will extend up to three hundred years, and when a Magus awakes his Magus Acupoints up and becomes a Senior Magus, he or she can live up to a thousand years. If they make a connection with a spirit star and absorb the star power, becoming a Magus King, as powerful and magical beings that have surpassed the limitation of humankind, they can live for up to three thousand years."

Taking a deep breath, Prince Xu stared at Ku Quan and said, "If, if a Magus activated all of his spirit star's power and absorbed all that power, he or she would become a Divine Magus. Divine Magus can live for ten thousand years. Beyond Divine Magi, even those legendary gods that we have only heard from ancient legends, even the five gods that once ruled the entire heaven, none of them were able to live forever!"

He then pointed his finger at the North and yelled harshly, "Do

you know Prince Wuyou? He possesses the Water God's bloodline, which is the noblest one among the entire god-kind, but from the beginning of the world till now, how many times the chair of the Water God hasn't swapped from owner to owner? To not die? Ku Quan, are you lying to me?"

Ku Quan narrowed his eyes, looked at Prince Xu with a smile and said calmly, "My dear prince, you're flurried. In fact, you have already believed my words, otherwise, how could you have become so agitated?"

Prince Xu opened his mouth and popped out his eyes, but was unable to say anything. He was staring at Ku Quan in shock, only feeling that he was looking right at a devil who knew clearly what was going on in his mind. Indeed, he had believed his words; at the exact same moment Ku Quan had let out the word 'immortal', he had believed him.

If it hadn't been for such a great lure, why would Ying Yunpeng cherish Ku Quan as if Ku Quan was his blood ancestor? Because he could turn stones into gold? Nonsense. Although gold was valuable, to people like Ying Yunpeng and Prince Xu, tens of, or even hundreds of gold mines were only equal to a strand of hair.

Only immortality could make Ying Yunpeng treat Ku Quan like that.

"The secrets of this world belong only to this world, dear Prince... you're still too young and have learned too less," said Ku Quan with a mysteriously faint smile on his face, and in a bland tone. "For example, who made this world? Who has bred those non-human kind monsters? Where did those ancient, first three generations of human Emperors go? Have all previous generations of Fire Gods and Water Gods truly died? Did the five legendary heavenly gods truly disappear?"

The body of Prince Xu quivered intensely, while he was staring at Ku Quan as if staring at a real monster. His mind was being filled

with countless thoughts but he couldn't let a word out.

All these questions that had been brought up by Ku Quan, Prince Xu didn't even feel like these were real questions.

Had this world not always been like this?

Hadn't those non-human kind monsters always been around?

Hadn't the first three generations of human Emperors died long time ago?

Didn't the positions of the Water God and the Fire God alternate naturally?

Didn't the heaven collapse already?

All these questions should be like common sense that was known by everybody, however, once Ku Quan asked these questions, Prince Xu was immediately shocked, and didn't know what to say for quite a while.

"I see, in this case, it's probably because your status, my dear prince, among your family is not high enough, which stopped you from reaching those real secrets of this world," said Ku Quan while maintaining that mysterious smile, "If my dear prince, you would be willing to become one of our apprentices, with your status and talent, you would naturally be invited to meet the two hierarchies. Then, you would certainly understand that this world is not as you think it is."

Prince Xu was so overwhelmed that he was even unable to talk, only swayed his body while staring at Ku Quan with a pair of brightly shining eyes.

As for Ku Quan, he slightly grinned, then suddenly took that grin back and deeply yelled, "You can indeed run very fast, but so what? People like you have never cultivated your souls, don't know anything about this world neither have you learned how this world will change itself. Even if you were born with great powers that allows you to defeat dragons, you will still corrode into a pile of

rotten meat after death. Duo! You're just a little kid, are you trying to challenge fate itself?"

Tens of miles away, Feng Xing was running with all of his power, fleeing towards Pu Ban City at his highest speed.

The white pearl had been chasing closely behind him, but Feng Xing's speed was too fast, he was almost flying with his feet barely touching the ground. The white pearl darted behind him along with a shrill swishing sound, but gradually the distance between it and the pearl was increasing. Every span of a breath, Feng Xing would run another ten zhang away from the white pearl.

However, along with a deep 'Duo' let out by Ku Quan, the seventeen smaller white pearls simultaneously transformed into white beams of light and darted out within the blink of an eye. In the next moment, the seventeen white pearls reappeared around the bigger white pearl that was chasing Feng Xing. Eight white pearls formed a circle in the air and suddenly merged into one, along with which, a beam of white light swiftly flashed across the air. Within the white light, a hexagonal pagoda, with eighteen floors, abruptly showed up in the air. Followed by a thunderous boom, the thirty-six zhang tall pagoda swooshed directly towards Feng Xing's head.

The speed with which Feng Xing was running instantly slowed down. An invisible power seemed to have stuck his feet and was pulling him backwards. No matter how hard he tried to activate more of his Magus Acupoints power, he could only make two to three zhangs far by every step forwards, but was unable to run as fast as a gust of the wind as he had been running just now.

Raising his head, he looked at the gigantic pagoda shining with a bright white light. Feng Xing could only let out a bitter smile while murmuring, "What the hell is this?"

Small buildings that had multiple floors were common in the Midland world, but pagoda-like buildings, he had never seen in the

Midland.

Boom!

The pagoda fell down from the air, firmly pressing upon Feng Xing's body.

Ku Quan let out a scornful smile and said blandly, "Just a little ant."

Chapter 245: Arbitrariness

The pagoda stood right on the ground and sank three zhang deep into the ground.

A cloud drifted over. Ku Quan slightly waved his hands, followed by which, the white pagoda slowly rose into the air again, showing Feng Xing, who was lying in the deep pit with his limbs stretched and being unable to move.

This pagoda seemed relatively small and light, but it was actually incredibly heavy. Being struck right on the head by it, all of Feng Xing's bones were broken. Many of his meridians were shattered as well, and even quite a few Magus Acupoints of his were nearly damaged. Lying in the deep pit filled with mud, Feng Xing grinned bitterly, while vomiting mouthfuls of blood out.

"Didn't manage to run from that," said Feng Xing after letting out a hollow and embarrassed laugh, "I'm...still a bit slow."

Ku Quan stood up on the chariot and looked down at Feng Xing, saying proudly, "Even if I let you run for over ten thousand miles at first, you will never be able to run from mine, Ku Quan's, hunt. Senior Magi like you know nothing besides fighting recklessly with that stupid strength of yours, how could you possibly understand how magical and limitless our great magic is?"

Pu trod on a gust of wind and flew over, with a misty cloud following right behind her. Man Man, Shaosi, Taisi, and Yu Mu all were lying on that misty cloud in a line. From a great distance, Pu Tong put her palms together and saluted Ku Quan, and said politely, "My great, powerful Shifu, how could such kind of stupid Magus understand your magnificent magic?"

Ku Quan gave a faint smile, dramatically waved his hands and said, "Well, well, let's not mention it. Pu Tong, you own a bit credit for catching these few kids. When we get back, as your Shifu, I will certainly reward you. Hm, these few kids are the ones who cursed

elder Ying Yunpeng's few boys to death. It's them."

Deep inside his pupils, a beam of greedy light flashed across. Ku Quan then laughed in a deep voice and said, "Well, these few kids would certainly die, however, this nature has its mercy, and we have our special magic. We should open our gate to the entire world, inviting all kinds of people to join us."

Pu Tong grinned and said hurriedly, "This is their luck to be able to become your, my respectful Shifu's, apprentices. They're blessed. Once they join us, they will become outsiders of this earthly world. Therefore, we don't need to punish them for what they have done earlier."

Prince Xu stood aside, let out a fake cough and said, "I'm just afraid that these few are naturally violent and rude, and probably won't become your apprentices willingly."

Ku Quan blandly smiled, threw a quick glance at Prince Xu then said quite proudly, "Our magic is unimaginably powerful. As they have already been caught by me, it won't be their decision whether to become my apprentices or not. After they been through thousands of different lives in their dreams and have gained a clear understanding of the sadness and bitterness of the world, they will cry and shout, begging me to take them as apprentices."

Speaking of this, Ku Quan couldn't help but proudly laugh out loud, then continued, "My dear Prince, you can just relax. After I take them as apprentices, they will go on their own initiative to the Magi Palace and tell the truth about the crystal mine, which is certainly discovered by your, my prince's, clansmen, and that it didn't have anything to do with them."

Prince Xu gave a faint smile as well, and said, "Well, in that case that would be the best solution."

Narrowing his eyes, Prince Xu took a glance at the over ten thousand tramps who were standing afar, and said in a deep voice, "Well, I don't want to hide it from you. It is just that with that

crystal mine, I will be able to have enough budget to make those stupid things neat and clean."

Ku Quan narrowed his eyes as well, with a beam of cold and sharp light flashing across his pupils, glancing at those dirty muscular men as well, and said, "Indeed, but they're quite low in quantity. Only tens of thousands of people, how many Senior Magi could be among them? What important job could these things possibly do?"

Hearing his words, Prince Xu instantly laughed out loud and responded, "About that, Mr Ku Quan, I think you got it wrong. This bunch of idiots, of all those tramp groups that I have conquered, is only equal to a hair of nine cattles."

Ku Quan paused shortly, then looked at Prince Xu and let out a loud laughter and said, "Dear Prince, you're quite a wise man who can certainly learn all the essential parts of our great magic."

Prince Xu took a deep breath, held his breath in his lung but didn't let it out for quite a long time, while seriously looking at Ku Quan and said slowly, "If I can truly be spared from death and enjoy my great life forever, I would be willing to do anything."

Ku Quan proudly laughed out again and said, "If you really willing to do anything, to live forever will only be a small case."

Staring at each other in the eyes for quite a while, the two of them simultaneously laughed out loud again. Gradually, they couldn't even stand still because of the intense laughter. They swayed their bodies and their faces turned blood-red, even tears gushed out of their eyes.

All Prince Xu wanted was to live forever and never die. Just like Ying Yunpeng, he only wanted to enjoy his wealth and high status forever, as for Ku Quan, what he wanted was what could be brought by the power and wealth of Prince Xu and Ying Yunpeng.

Prince Xu and Ku Quan could perfectly meet each other's needs

without any disharmony, therefore, the longer they stared at each other, the more they liked each other, even began appreciating each other because of their shared interests.

"Just let me take them down with my magic one after another." Having laughed for a while, Ku Quan gave a close look at the few kids, who had been put in deep sleep, and said. He then suddenly thrust his hand out, grabbed towards Shaosi and said, "This girl is quite talented, unspeakably powerful. She will certainly be able to take some great responsibility as my apprentice."

His five fingers let out a bright white light, and a faint white lotus appeared on his palm, Ku Quan then pressed his palm directly onto the forehead of Shaosi.

Suddenly, a small stone fell straight from the air and hit Ku Quan's hand. Ku Quan instantly let out a cold sniff, let out a brighter beam of white light from his finger and conveniently flicked the stone, while raising his head and yelling harshly with a fierce smile, "Who is that?! How dare you..."

Along with a loud cracking sound, the stone smashed Ku Quan's hand into pieces. Ku Quan howled out in pain, held his wounded hand and quickly stepped backwards. At the same time, the eighteen white pearl wrapped around his wrist immediately rose into the air, transformed into a white pagoda and floated right above his head, letting out beams of white light and shielding him entirely inside.

Pu Tong, the little girl who hadn't yet perceived the danger, screamed out in a high-pitched voice, "How dare you! How dare you offend my respectful Shifu?! Just show your face immediately and prepare to die!"

A breeze blew over and Gui Ling, who was tall and extremely beautiful, abruptly appeared right in front of Pu Tong, conveniently throwing a heavy slap on Pu Tong's face. Pu Tong's tiny, slim body was instantly sent flying while rotating, tens of

zhang away. After that, she thudded against the ground with her head upside-down, eyes showing the whites, causing her to faint.

When Gui Ling had slapped Pu Tong away, she had also grabbed the small leather storage bag tied around her waist which actually belonged to Man Man.

Turning around, Gui Ling took out the horsetail whisk and waved it slightly. She stared at Ku Quan with a pair of bone-piercing cold eyes and said harshly, "Tell me the name of your Shifu. Forcibly taking apprentices with these shameful confusing small magic, do you even know about the agreement that was made back then on the top of Sky Pillar?!"

Ku Quan paused briefly, gave a measuring look to Gui Ling, gnashed his teeth and said coldly, "My friend, don't you think that you are worrying too much? This is not the same era when that agreement was made. The world has been changing, our methods should naturally change along with it... this is the rule of nature. I assume, my friend, you must understand this."

"Change of the world? Rule of nature?" Gui Ling frowned, raised her pair of dense and sharp eyebrows and said straightforwardly, "I'm not as good at talking as you, so I won't be wasting my time on arguing with you. These few kids are apprentices of ours, attacking them is equal to provoking us. Get lost! Or stay here forever!"

Ku Quan laughed out in a great anger, popped his eyes, glared at Gui Ling and yelled, "How can you, my friend, be so arbitrary? When and where did they become your apprentices?"

Gui Ling suddenly lifted her left hand, threw out her black jade Ru Yi, which darted out like a lightning bolt and directly smashed the pagoda that was floating above Ku Quan's head, heavily striking on Ku Quan's head.

Ku Quan's head was instantly broken and blood gushed out in streams. He even rolled for tens of rounds on the ground. Without saying anything, he held his wounded head and abruptly leapt up

from the ground, trod on a white beam of light and fled swiftly away, leaving Pu Tong, his own apprentice, behind without any hesitation.

"Arbitrary?" Gui Ling smiled faintly and coldly, then said, "You realized just now?"

Chapter 246: Twisting the Situation

Pu Tong and the few other apprentices of Ku Quan ran away in helter-skelter. As their Shifu was beaten down by Gui Ling with a single attack, these few apprentices didn't even dare to ask Gui Ling's name before they hurriedly turned into beams of white light and fled away.

Prince Xu stood on his chariot, having a proud look and staring down at Gui Ling. Although Ku Quan had run away, Prince Xu was still very confident. He thought that Ku Quan had fled away because he was not powerful enough to compete against Gui Ling, but he, Lie Mountain Xu, didn't even need to know how to fight. As long as he gave his name, he could solve any problem in this world.

"You, woman, you're way too unreasonable. How dare you..." Prince Xu said to Gui Ling harshly and seriously.

"Too much talk."

The black jade Ru Yu darted out at a lightning speed from Gui Ling's hand. Although she was hundreds of zhang away from Prince Xu, the black jade Ru Yi immediately slapped Prince Xu's face along with a cold beam of light, as if her hand could extend unlimitedly. Prince Xu's face was instantly covered in blood, continuously coughing and spitting out shattered teeth while falling on the chariot.

"How dare you!!" Hundreds of fully armed guards who were standing behind Prince Xu shouted out together, pulled out their weapons simultaneously and rushed towards Gui Ling.

"Well, I have always been a dauntless one, didn't you know that till just now?" Gui Ling frowned her thick, sharp eyebrows, quite helplessly looking at those armed guards, who had been shouting and yelling, rushing towards her, and continued, "My Shifu only allows us to spread our spirit, never permitting us to kill people. Whether you're monsters or any kind of evil creatures, I can just

simply take you all out, but why are you all pure-blood humans? I can't kill you... I can only punch your faces."

While speaking, Gui Ling thrust her horsetail whisk and the black jade Ru Yi into her sleeve, then flicked her hand, letting out a bronze longsword, which was embossed with turtle-shell-like, eight-diagram pattern, which instantly rose into the air and was gripped by Gui Ling, after which, she fiercely rushed into the group of guards.

Along with a loud sizzling sound, Gui Ling stepped on a special spot, waved the long bronze sword and brought up long streams of sharp and freezing light, which faintly formed an eight-diagram formation pattern in the air.

Hundreds of Prince Xu's guards were locked inside the formation pattern, unable to fly into the air or escape underground; neither could they move forward nor backward. Every single move of theirs would make them fall hard on the ground, and every time they fell onto the ground, their head would feel a great pain. Soon, beams of sword light struck on their bodies like a heavy rain, without any mercy. Although not a single beam of light had harmed the vital parts of their bodies, long and deep wounds would still appear on their bodies one after another. If someone would take a closer look at the wounds, they would find that those wounds were shaped like an eight-diagram pattern.

Those eight-diagram-pattern-looking wounds absorbed natural power, turned into a magical and powerful seal, firmly suppressing the powers of these guards. This disabled them from activating even a single stream of their powers, and made their entire bodies powerless and soft. They fell onto the ground one after another, then simultaneously losing consciousness.

"A bunch of useless things, why did they act so arrogant earlier?" Taking her sword back, Gui Ling stepped on Prince Xu's chariot, threw a heavy kick on Prince Xu's head, and said in a despising and disliking tone, "When this world was ruled by the first three

generations of emperors, the humankind was simple and kind. They had combined their efforts to surmount all kinds of difficulties and fight against none-humankind monsters."

Bending her body, Gui Ling rubbed Prince Xu's silk cloak with her fingers and continued teasingly, "Look at you now, wearing luxurious clothes, eating precious food, sitting on this kind of exquisite chariot when you're out, and being surrounded by hundreds of followers. You bully young, weak people, turn black into white...Are you really offsprings of the ancient human beings that I have learned about?"

Prince Xu was staring at Gui Ling in both anger and shame, wanting to say a few bad words very much, yet didn't dare to.

Gui Ling's words were pretty shocking. Judging from her words, she was alive from the era of the first three generations of emperor which was countless years ago. Who would dare to provoke someone who had lived such a long life? At present, amongst the entire Pu Ban City, Master Candle Dragon was the only one who had been through that legendary era and was an old bastard bully that no one dared to even argue with.

As a prince of the Lie Mountain Family, Prince Xu still proudly gnashed his teeth, stared at Gui Ling and said, "You won, you can say anything you want, just that..."

Gui Ling coldly snorted, gave a slap on Prince Xu's face, sealing the last part of his words in his mouth, then turned her head to the East, looked at the sky and said harshly, "You have been hiding for quite a while, still not planning to show your face? Do I have to pull you out myself?"

No one responded, the piece of sky that Gui Ling was staring at, only had a few faint clouds drifting over.

The face of Gui Ling instantly darkened, and she suddenly opened her mouth to let out a white-red pearl, which brought up an especially fierce beam of light and was about to dart out towards

that particular piece of sky. Immediately, a few howls came from the sky, along with which, a couple of silhouettes appeared from out the clouds.

"Please, take that treasure back. We are not capable of withstanding an attack that was launched with such kind of powerful natural treasure." An over a zhang tall muscular man said while grinning. This man had a pair of cyan-purple wings, which were over two zhang long, and wrapped by fierce wind and dazzling lightning bolts, and was holding a long spear in his hand. He then continued, "This sister, your temper is truly not so good."

Feng Xing, who had been lying on the ground, with every single piece of bone smashed, and only a pair of eyeballs that could still move freely, said in a weak and ghost-like voice, "Look at them, like huge birds. They're feather people from the Eastern Wasteland, close guards of the Green God. Now, in the Pu Ban City, only Emperor Shun has groups of feathered guards working for him, who were sent over by the Green God's clansmen."

The handsome muscular winged man grinned again and said, "Kid, you're quite knowledgeable. I am Qing Lei, defense minister of Emperor Shun. In simple words, I'm the leader of Emperor's personal army. When Ji Hao told Emperor Shun about being framed, we came straight over."

Pointing at Man Man, who was lying on the ground with her sweet face filled with a happy smile, Qing Lei smilingly continued, "Although the truth hasn't come out yet, we don't dare to let anything happen to the little girl of Zhu Rong. Well, it seems that we don't need to investigate anything anymore. We have already discovered what we should know."

Prince Xu's face suddenly turned deadly pale. Qing Lei, that name, anyone who had been to Pu Ban City should have heard about it. Just as he said himself, he was the leader of Emperor Shun's personal army. Emperor Shun was the Emperor of the entire humankind, also known as the great chairman of the

alliance of all the human clans. Without a doubt, he had an incredibly great and powerful army, just like his personal properties, slaves and guards.

Qing Lei was the leader of his personal army, one of the most trustworthy ministers of Emperor Shun. Qing Lei showing his face here equaled to Emperor Shun showing here himself.

From a long distance, Kang's strong and manly voice rose into the air, "Xu! Iron Yan has told us all the stupid mistakes you have made, what else do you want to say?"

Another cloud drifted over quickly, with over ten bronze large chariots roaring on it, and thousands of fully armored warriors standing around Kang, Si Dao, and his three brothers. Behind one chariot was Iron Yan and a group of Rong Mountain Clan's elders, who were tied up firmly with ropes that were made from beast tendons.

Prince Xu's face became even more twisted than before, he stood up while quivering, politely and deeply bowed to Kang and said in a trembling voice, "Big brother..."

Kang walked up to Prince Xu expressionlessly and abruptly gave him a solid slap.

"Come to Pu Ban City with me and confess everything to Emperor Shun. Otherwise, I will call the elders to dethrone you as a prince of the Lie Mountain Family."

Chapter 247: Join the Army

While staying in jail, Ji Hao had completely no idea that Gui Ling, Emperor Shun, Ear, Chong and Si Wen Ming, who was in the Chi Ban Mountain far away from the Pu Ban City, and many more people, had silently made their moves.

Heavy rain and roaring winds were beating on the straw roof of his hut with only a thin layer of straw, but not even a single drop of rain or a slight gust of wind could get into this small space. Ji Hao was sitting on the ground with his legs crossed, staring at the sky. Through the gaps between the straws, he could even see large drops of rain falling from the sky, however, every single raindrop would be bounced away by an invisible power when they were still half-inch away from the roof.

The jail was releasing a strong sense of the natural law that was called 'Dao' by Ji Hao. Although this was only a slight part of the true natural law, just like a small tip of a huge iceberg, it still was very dense. Ji Hao tried silently to merge his body with this sense of natural law, while his Golden Dan was rotating slightly in his spiritual space, along with which, his soul power was improving bit by bit.

"Yeah just play your trick." Ying Yunpeng, who was sitting in the hut that was beside Ji Hao's, coldly and scornfully grinned at Ji Hao and said. He didn't know anything about the 'Dao'. In his eyes, a Senior Magus should only believe their one fist and violence, believe that their strength was incomparable, that they could even punch a hole in the sky and shatter the entire earth, and that was the fundamental of everything.

In the eyes of Senior Magi, there was no 'Dao'. Any so-called Dao, which represented the nature of humankind, was less useful than the strength of Senior Magi.

Ying Yunpeng's eyes were shining with a fierce light, while the

corners of his mouth were curved upwards from time to time, letting out a proud smile. He knew that Ku Quan was manipulating the whole situation out there. Ying Yunpeng had hundred percent trust on him. Even though he had seen Ji Hao asking Gui Ling to rescue Man Man and his other teammates with his own eyes, he didn't take Gui Ling seriously.

During all these years, Ku Quan gradually became a magical, totem-like being in Ying Yunpeng's mind. His mysteriousness, his magics, and all the benefits that Ku Quan had promised to Ying Yunpeng, made Ying Yunpeng completely obsessed with him, to the point that he almost blindly trusted him. He firmly believed that even if Gui Ling managed to find Man Man and the other kids, Ku Quan would already have gotten things done.

"Little bastard, you're about to die." Ying Yunpeng stared at Ji Hao from the side, while gnashing his teeth. He silently imagined all kinds of cruel and horrible tortures that he wanted to do to Ji Hao.

The sound of silvery hoofbeat came again. Xie Zhi slowly walked over, slowly touched Ying Yunpeng's cell with its horn and said, "Elder Ying Yunpeng from the Ten Sun Country, you can come out now."

A faint sense of power suddenly spread out from Ying Yunpeng's hut. Due to an invisible stream of power, Ying Yunpeng was easily rolled out of the hut. He was slightly surprised at first, then laughed right out, pointed his finger at Ji Hao and laughed so happily that he couldn't even close his mouth.

It was done, thought Ying Yunpeng. Ji Hao and his fellows were deemed guilty. From now on, Ji Hao and the other kids would become puppets under the control of Ying Yunpeng and Ku Quan, and would be unable to escape from their control for all their lives. With Ku Quan's charm, Prince Xu would certainly become their close friend and having gained such a powerful friend, the Lie Mountain Family of the Midland, the Ten Sun Country would

surely reward Ying Yunpeng. Without a doubt, Ying Yunpeng's power and status would rise to another level.

"Kid, it's too late for you to be regretting. You will soon know what a huge mistake you have made," said Ying Yunpeng with an evil and hideous grin on his face.

Xie Zhi threw a glance at Ying Yunpeng, as if it was glancing at a real idiot, shook its head, walked up to Ji Hao, touched his hut with its horn as well, opened the cell and rolled Ji Hao out with a gentle stream of power.

"Little one, you can go as well. We have already found out the complete truth about the Rong Mountain Clan's crystal mine... you will get everything you deserve," said Xie Zhi with a nice and gentle tone to Ji Hao, "It is just that someone has asked me to send a word to you, although our hearts are unwilling, the overall situation is most important."

Overall situation!

Ji Hao looked at Xie Zhi in shock and asked, "With your natural quality, don't you feel nursing a grievance when you speak something like that?"

Xie Zhi stayed silent for a while, then popped out its large sparkling beady eyes, grinned at Ji Hao and said, "Of course I do, but those things that you haven't yet witnessed have already been mentioned to me. Sometimes, although we have to choke our anger back into our hearts, if we try to achieve some particular kind of good results, we have to take the overall situation as the most important thing."

Shaking its head, those black shining scales of Xie Zhi suddenly dimmed down. He turned around, and slowly walked back into the rain, step by step.

Ying Yunpeng looked at Ji Hao in confusion, then suddenly rushed out, yelled out at Hao Tao, who was following behind Xie

Zhi, "What the hell? Why did you let this kid go as well?! What about his guilt?!"

Hao Tao gave a cold and bland look at Ying Yunpeng and said, "Ying Yunpeng, do you have any idea what my responsibility is in this Pu Ban City?"

Before Ying Yunpeng could respond, Hao Tao took out a jade tablet from his sleeve and abruptly threw it on Ying Yunpeng's face. The jade tablet was five inches long, had the width of a palm, and was an inch thick. It was incomparably solid, even letting out a series of muffled bangs against Ying Yunpeng's face. Struck by that jade tablet, Ying Yunpeng immediately fell down on the ground, held his own head and began twisting his body.

"My duty is to punish sinners, spread the spirit of kindness and justice, hunt and kill murderers... these are my responsibilities. If your sin is serious enough, the next time, I will certainly kill you myself!" Hao Tao angrily shouted back at Ying Yunpeng, "As your punishment, you will be beaten by my jade tablet for thirty times. This is only a symbolic punishment. If I catch you another time, you should pray for yourself."

Stamping his feet against the ground in great anger, Hao Tao gave a serious glance at Ji Hao, then said in a deep voice, "Kid, do not go back. Don't let these kind of people stain your heart."

Sighing, Hao Tao turned around and left quickly.

The curtain of rain in front of Ji Hao was abruptly split. Si Xi walked over, with Si Dao, Si Fu, Si Jian and Si Qiang closely following behind him.

[TL note: The name of Si Dao, Si Fu, Si Jian and Si Qing, literally mean machete, axe, sword and spear, which means the four of them were named as their weapons.]

The five of them walked up to Ying Yunpeng, whose face was now covered in blood, and threw a jade slip, that was thickly

embossed with characters, and said, "No one will punish you for what you have done. The destroyed ship fleet of the Ten Sun market was destroyed by non-human kind monsters. You won't take too much responsibility for that, I will personally send message to the Ten Sun country elders regarding this."

"As for your son Ying Yun, nephew Ying Su, and the kid Great Gale Ling, they were all killed by assassins sent by those monsters. Combined with that lost ship fleet, you in rage have sent all Ten Sun country's archers of the Pu Ban City above the level of Junior Magus to the Chi Ban Mountain, to join the army in preparation of the war.,." said Si Xi blandly, "If you have any questions, ask now. I will only give you one more tip; Prince Xu has already promised that he will cover half of all the food provisions, supplies and gears that are required for this upcoming Chi Ban Mountain war."

Ji Hao laughed out loud and said, "In this case, the Prince has already confessed, so fast."

Si Xi looked at Ji Hao with a smile and responded while nodding, "He had to. We have spent quite an effort on it. Prince Xu possesses a fertile piece of land, especially rich and good for fighting beasts. This time, a bloody great war will happen in the Chi Ban Mountain area, and he will indeed make a rewardable contribution by covering half the amount of all the required food, fighting beasts, armors and other supplies."

Ji Hao understood clearly that the only reason Prince Xu had promised this was because someone had grabbed his weakness and forced him to donate his wealth for the war.

Although he didn't know how Si Xi and the others had made Prince Xu promise this, Prince Xu had indeed confessed, which was enough for Ji Hao.

As for the lost ship fleet and deaths of Ying Yunpeng's few boys, those were all blamed on those non-humankind monsters. This was an excuse that Si Xi had made for Ying Yunpeng, and also

served as a hidden threat to him.

All the Ten Sun Country's archers in the Pu Ban City who were at or above the level of Junior Magus were gathered together and sent to the Chi Ban Mountain to join the army. Ying Yunpeng's heart must be bleeding because of this.

Si Xi grinned, then said to Ji Hao, "Kid, Wen Ming said that they could use more help over there. You and those friends of yours should all go to the Chi Ban Mountain and cultivate yourselves in the war."

With a word of Si Xi, Ji Hao was sent to join the army as well.

Chapter 248: One Strike

High in the sky, blown by the fierce gale that was formed from the dense natural power of the Midland world, a black magnificent palace was shaking violently. All of its four high towers that were built on each corner of the palace were broken from out the middle and countless broken bricks were flying around in the air. Half of the broken towers smashed directly in front of the palace, nearly shattering the front gate.

Gong Gong Wuyou was sitting on his black jade cushion, with his luxurious clothes torn into shreds. All of his ten fingers were broken, exposing his crystal-like finger bones. Drops of blood were continuously gushing out on his three-stringed jade music instrument. The sound let out by that instrument now sounded hoarse and cluttering, just like the sound of a dying old man who had tuberculosis and was coughing; it was extremely unpleasant to hear.

Xiang Liu, the nine-headed serpent, had eight of its heads smashed, and only the middle head remained unwounded, and was still madly spurting sticky venom.

Wuzhi Qi, the gigantic ape, its silver shining fur that covered its entire body had now all been burned. This beautiful and huge ape now looked like a hairless rat, unspeakably ugly. Countless Fire Crows were madly circling around the ape and launched attacks onto him. Their wings, which were condensed from flame, slapped on its body and left large amounts of blisters and burns.

The other six ministers of the Water God, who had joint-handedly landed attacks onto Zhu Rong, were now all lying down on the ground. With their chest hollowed, limbs broken, ceaselessly vomiting blood, each of them looked quite embarrassing. Especially He Bo, who had a human body and a dragon head; his majestic dragon horns were broken violently, and one of his two long and withy dragon beards was pulled off. The

zhang long golden dragon beard was now wrapped around Zhu Rong's waist, serving as a pretty nice belt.

Inside the dark palace, within a large sphere of black mist that was condensed from water essence power, two gigantic black eyes were faintly sparkling, while a deep yet resonating growl spread out from the mist.

Gong Gong Wuyou was sitting on top of the black palace, while his body was slightly quivering, then abruptly screamed out, "Zhu Rong! Today I have finally learned how powerful you are! Good, good, you're indeed more powerful than us. I am willing to give up on this fight. Within the next three years and in this Pu Ban city, I will follow whatever you say. Me, and our Gong Gong family will listen to your command for the next three years!"

Zhu Rong let out a great laughter. He had been fighting excitedly and had directly taken off his red cloak and bared his tender yet muscular upper body. Zhu Rong threw a solid kick on the eyeball of Xiang Liu's middle head. Along with a thunderous boom, Xiang Liu's eyeball, which was over a zhang in radius, instantly blasted out. Streams of blood gushed out of its eye socket along with a sticky crystalloid. Xiang Liu burst out a series of crazy howls in pain, then fell onto the ground, unable to move any longer, just like the other six companions of his.

Seeing this, Wuzhi Qi, who had lost its beautiful fur, let out a horrified scream, while turning around and dragging its large stick in preparation for running away.

"Where are you going? I still have a big hug for you!"

Streams of flames spurted out from Zhu Rong's eyes and instantly reached thousands of zhang far, while his body suddenly flashed across the air and moved right behind Wuzhi Qi. He grabbed Wuzhi Qi's neck with his left hand, while gripping its long tail with the other hand and forcibly pulled it backwards.

"Ahhh!!!!"

Along with a shrill howl of pain, Wuzhi Qi's over a hundred zhang long tail was pulled off by Zhu Rong and blood sprayed out from its wound. Wuzhi Qi dropped its stick, pressed its palms on its butt and madly leapt around in pain, while tears were gushing out of its eye sockets in huge streams.

As an important minister of the Water God, Wuzhi Qi was in charge of all kinds of mysterious creatures in the Northern Wasteland jungle, possessing a high status and holding great power; none of the ordinary men dared to provoke it. However, in this fight against Zhu Rong today, its dense and shining fur was all burned, which still might have been bearable, but even its tail was pulled off by Zhu Rong. If the others knew about this, Wuzhi Qi would be too humiliated to show its face to anyone for at least a hundred years. This was way too humiliating, not only for Wuzhi Qi, but also for the other Water God's ministers. They would feel embarrassed because of this too as well.

Gong Gong Wuyou's face had even turned green. He had heard that the people of the Zhu Rong family were all violent and fierce, madly belligerent, but in his long and experienced life this was his first time facing the truly enraged Fire God himself. At this moment, he had seriously learned how powerful and terrifying Zhu Rong truly was.

Letting out a few hollow laughters, Gong Gong Wuyou dropped his stringed jade instrument, politely grinned to Zhu Rong and said, "This time, it was just..."

Zhu Rong laughed out loud towards the sky, then shook his body to get rid of the sweat, which actually was non-existent, then pointed his finger at Gong Gong Wuyou, smiled coldly, and interrupted Gong Gong Wuyou's speech, "One more useless word and I will kill you. Then I will take my Zhu Rong army directly into the Northern Wasteland, draw that old turtle out from his nest and kick his old turtle ass for good!"

Gong Gong Wuyou immediately shut his mouth, and didn't dare

to let out even the slightest bit of sound.

Laughing out again, Zhu Rong transformed into a streak of fiery light and darted towards the Pu Ban City. While diving down from the air, Zhu Rong didn't stop laughing loudly and outright. "Great! Such a great fight! A bunch of stupid useless scums intending to trouble mine, Zhu Rong's baby girl? Go to hell! It was nice to work out a bit anyway."

"Well, if not in consideration of Emperor Shun, I would chop you all into pieces and feed to wild dogs."

A thousand of miles long fiery streak seemingly burned the entire sky, and darted to millions of miles away in the blink of an eye, disappearing without leaving even a trace after a few moments.

Gong Gong Wuyou stood up with a darkened face, looked down and seriously pondered for a while, then smilingly shook his head and said, "Miscalculated. I had never thought that I and the Lie Mountain family together would have failed to psych this old Zhu Rong out. Well, in fact, although Lie Mountain Xu is a prince, he is only a distant offspring, and not a pure blood offspring of Emperor Yan. Next time, if we want to earn our dignity back, we have to find some more reliable allies."

From inside the dark palace, a sphere of water essence power drifted out, turned into a heavy rain, and showered on the eight badly wounded Water God's ministers. Along with heavy breaths, the rainwater gradually pushed the fire power out from the bodies of the eight of them, causing their wounds to start healing at a visible speed.

Gong Gong Wuyou's broken fingers healed themselves quickly as well, his face abruptly twisted and he hurriedly took out a turtle shell from his sleeve, which was as dark as ink. Streams of silver watery mist rose from the turtle shell, forming a few characters in front of him.

"Prince Kang has stepped into this? Lie Mountain Xu, that useless

bastard, and Ying Yunpeng, and that douchebag named Ku Quan! Lowly things! A bunch of trash! It's only been a couple of days, but all of them have either been defeated or caught. Useless! Useless, useless!!"

Gong Gong Wuyou was so angry that he was unable to maintain his elegant manner anymore. He only gritted his teeth and continuously yelled and cursed towards the sky.

Wuzhi Qi's long shining fur had quickly grown back, however, a huge scar was added on its butt instead of its long tail. It could be expected that its tail would take a long time to grow back. Wuzhi Qi screamed out in both anger and shame, suddenly transformed into a gust of black smoke and darted towards the Pu Ban City as well.

"Zhu Rong! How dare you humiliate me like this?! I have to kill one of yours! Let you taste the feeling!"

In Pu Ban City, Man Man and the other four rushed towards Ji Hao.

From a long distance, Man Man happily dashed towards Ji Hao, while yelling, "Ji Hao! Those idiots couldn't frame us! Haha! Have you heard that our share of that crystal mine has also been raised?!"

The air suddenly shocked, a sphere of black smoke twisted and spurted out from the air, from within which, an incredibly heavy and huge stick, condensed from ice crystals, swiftly swooshed towards the head of Man Man. Judging from the speed of the stick, this attack was aimed to smash Man Man completely.

"Ah!!"

Ji Hao immediately screamed out, while stretching his fiery wings and injecting all of his power into the fiery feathered boots. Along with this, his body suddenly moved, leaving shreds of afterimages behind. He punched Man Man away as quickly as he

could, right after which, the black and freezing stick struck on his back along with a great power.

Followed by a loud bang, hundreds of fist-sized cyan lotuses burst out from Ji Hao's tight armor, after which the entire armor suddenly shattered into pieces.

Chapter 249: Gift Giving

Black smoke was rising into the air. Wuzhi Qi leaned its head out of the smoke, showed its sharp silver-like tusks and golden shining eyes. It swung the freezing huge stick condensed from ice crystals with its long and slim arms, striking the stick on the back of Ji Hao, using all its power.

This ape intended to kill Man Man with this attack in order to punish Zhu Rong for pulling off its tail.

However, Ji Hao had moved way too fast. Wuzhi Qi's ass had been kicked by Zhu Rong quite hard just now. Its power had only recovered to less than one percent. Therefore, the speed and power of its attack was a lot slower and weaker than it should have been. The huge stick swooshed right above Man Man's head and solidly smashed on the back of Ji Hao, who had rushed over and tried to save Man Man.

The armor worn by Ji Hao, which was made by Po and repaired by Kuafu Yan, suddenly blew up, shattering completely into pieces. Countess clear light streams spurted out from the armor, forming a gigantic lotus floating above Ji Hao's head, holding Wuzhi Qi's stick off.

A small wisp of purple mist gushed out of the pistil of the lotus, rose into the air then split into black and white wisps of mist. Two wisps of mist wrapped around each other and quickly rotated in the air, smoothly forming the pattern of Taiji.

Po's simple and honest silhouette walked out from the Taiji pattern, with his left hand held on his back and right hand slowly rising and moving forward in a fist. He threw out a slow yet powerful punch towards the black smoke, in which Wuzhi Qi had been hidden in.

Far away, Gui Ling had been flying over in the form of a beam of light and saw Po's silhouette. She was instantly shocked and

murmured, "Did big brother value this boy this much? He had left a trace of his own soul in this armor?! Did he want to take this kid as his apprentice or turn him into our little brother?"

At the moment that Po's punch swooshed out, the space within ten-thousand miles in radius suddenly fell into chaos. Immeasurable natural power madly gathered over towards the small fist of Po's silhouette. The hazy silhouette of Po quickly became clear and solid, as if Po had appeared in person. This magical punch of Po had also brought up a few thin streams of light.

If someone would take a closer look, they would discover that within these thin streams of light there were stars circling in the sky, the sun shining in the air; there were oceans, and seasons changing in turns. Po's punch seemed to have contained all the secrets of this world, and could even reverse the time and open up a smaller and brand new world, just like Pan Gu had opened this world up back then.

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man suddenly showed up, opened his eyes, and observed this punch through Ji Hao's eyes. Slightly sighing, the mysterious man slowly dissipated in the air, leaving only a faint voice in the vast spiritual space.

"This punch is quite close."

Wuzhi Qi screamed out as well, raised its stick again and hit against Po's punch ninety-nine times within a single moment.

Having just being beaten up by Zhu Rong, Wuzhi Qi's power was now definitely at the lowest point, while Po's fist seemed to be containing all the great natural power and be nearly indestructible as if a smaller yet complete world was contained in his punch. Wuzhi Qi clearly sensed that if it couldn't hold this punch off, it would certainly die!

Screaming hoarsely, Wuzhi Qi even burned the most important three drops of spirit blood in his heart, which allowed its body to

suddenly expand for over hundreds of times. The sound made by its huge stick when it had been swung downwards was as thunderous as the explosion of a mountain, shattering the ground. Quite a few mountains were even blown up by the fierce black gusts of wind brought up by Wuzhi Qi's stick.

Loud and resonating alarm bell were ringing around Pu Ban City simultaneously, along with which, a raging growl came out from Emperor Shun's meeting hall.

Po's fist gently bumped against the ape's huge stick and in the following moment, Po's silhouette was shattered immediately, as well as the floating lotus above Ji Hao's head. An incomplete afterimage of that huge stick struck on Ji Hao's body, squeezing a howl out of Ji Hao's throat. Ji Hao felt as if all of his bones were broken inch by inch, and that he had been smashed into the ground for hundreds of zhang deep. He began vomiting blood, and a great pain that was about to kill him came from every corner of his body.

The huge stick was shattered as well. A stream of power that had originated from Po's punch shattered its stick and struck on its chest, making its chest explode, exposing his internal organs that were shining with a cold crystal like luster, and seemed as if they were forged from metals. The ape spat mouthfuls of blood out as well, howled in pain while leaping up into the air and attempting to flee.

Gui Ling snorted coldly, while her body flashed across the air and approached Wuzhi Qi in no time. She raised her black jade Ruyi high, threw it towards Wuzhi Qi with beams of freezing light.

If Wuzhi Qi dared to attack Ji Hao sneakily and seriously wound him, Gui Ling surely dared to kill him in front of everyone right in Pu Ban City.

A puff of black smoke abruptly appeared in the air, from within which hundreds of long hands that were wrapped up by the waves

of the ocean suddenly thrust out and slapped against Gui Ling's black jade Ruyi. Gui Ling teasingly smiled, while the black jade Ruyi transformed into a black dragon silhouette. It rose into air while roaring then dived down towards the gigantic hand.

A human-head-sized blue pearl held in the hand released an incredibly great watery light, transformed into a blue dragon and clashed fiercely against the black dragon. A dragon roar faintly came from the air, while the black jade Ruyi and the blue pearl transformed simultaneously back into their ordinary shapes. Finally they dropped back into Gui Ling's hand and the gigantic hand.

The black smoke rolled in the sky, while the gigantic hand quickly dissipated in the air. As for Wuzhi Qi, it had transformed into a beam of light and escaped already.

The body of Gui Ling quivered slightly, took two steps backwards, sneered coldly towards where the gigantic hand had disappeared to, while streams of power rotated around her body, which even made the air surrounding her to shake slightly.

"The ape named Wuzhi Qi? You dared to wound our apprentice so badly, this time you had someone to rescue you. The next time I see you, I will certainly tear your monkey head off!"

Ji Hao let out another few mouthfuls of blood out. Inside his body, his spirit blood was flushing quickly through his broken bones and healing them.

Taking a deep breath, Ji Hao came out of the deep pit that Wuzhi Qi had smashed him into, while he heard Gui Qing's words. He couldn't help but felt greatly confused. How did he become Gui Ling's apprentice? Although Po and Gui Ling certainly had huge, shocking and incredible backgrounds and had unbelievably powerful people supporting them, Ji Hao still hadn't prepared well to become an apprentice of their tutor. Why did Gui Ling just define him as one?

Coughing intensely and letting out a last few mouthful of blood, Ji Hao cupped his hands and saluted Gui Ling.

However, before he said anything, Gui Ling frowned and said harshly, "Since I have made a move, I can't stay any longer in this Pu Ban City. Ji Hao, I am so tired wasting my word on those idiots, the armor my big brother made for you was destroyed and that inherited magic armor of yours requires too much power to activate, making it very inconvenient."

While speaking, Gui Ling carelessly waved her hand, drew out a round and fist-sized turtle shell, which then actually fell into Ji Hao's hand.

The black tiny turtle shell was strangely heavy. Ji Hao could only barely hold it with all of his power. He couldn't help but be deeply shocked by this tiny shell that he could barely hold with his physical strength, which was many times greater than that of ordinary Senior Magi. This was quite amazing.

"This is my own shell that I had shelled off when I was a kid, and had been through the 'ninety-nine deadly tribulation'. I now give it to you as your temporary shield. My tool-making skill is rough, and not as good as that of my big brother, but this one is my own naturally grown shell. Although it has been struck by the great natural lighting and fire during the trial, and is a lot weaker than before, it can still be quite usable for you, as long as you don't feel it's too crude."

Raising her head and glancing at where Emperor Shun's meeting hall was located, Gui Ling nodded to Ji Hao, pointed at him with her finger, then trod on a gust of the wind that abruptly grew under her feet, quickly merging her body with the wind and disappeared.

Emperor Shun's majestic and resonating voice came from the meeting hall.

"Wuzhi Qi hasn't withdrawn his ferocity and intended to kill

within the Pu Ban City. He shall stay in and cultivate himself for a hundred years, with the door locked in front of everyone. Gong Gong Wuyou, you should restrain your ministers better...Do not let such thing happen again."

Chapter 250: Finalized

Wuzhi Qi attempted to kill Man Man, but ended up badly wounding Ji Hao.

The punishment given by Emperor Shun had failed to calm Zhu Rong down from his sky-burning rage. He directly rushed into Gong Gong Wuyou's palace located in Pu Ban City along with great roaring streams of flame. Terrifying waves that could even reach to the sky were brought up from the few great rivers of Pu Ban city, firmly circling around Gong Gong Wuyou's palace.

Great flames roared down from the air while countless exploding fire sparks madly boomed against those waves. Soon, eight volcanos abruptly appeared around Gong Gong Wuyou's palace, spurting out ocean-huge amount of boiling lava, which even covered the palace up.

The ground shook slightly and waves of screams, howls and cries came, capable of even disturbing the heaven. Within the flame, countless fully armored warriors were fighting against each other with all of their powers.

Sitting in Si Xi's small cabin, Si Dao and his three brothers were continuously bringing news regarding this great fight started by Zhu Rong from all directions. Zhu Rong had really gone mad, and even Emperor Shun could do no nothing about this enraged Zhu Rong.

Gong Gong Wuyou desperately sent messages to everyone related to him, requesting for help, but not a single one dared to show his or her face. A nearly crazy Zhu Rong was definitely not someone that you would want to provoke, not to mention that Wuzhi Qi's action earlier had indeed been way too shameless. He had attempted to kill Zhu Rong's little girl because he was beaten up by Zhu Rong, which had clearly broken the moral rule.

If all people dealt with their hatred in this way, all young kids

would probably be killed by the enemies of their older generations. After all, those young kids who hadn't grown mature yet couldn't possibly take even a slight punch of those old monsters.

Therefore, no one showed any empathy towards Gong Gong Wuyou. Even Emperor Shun pretended to not know about the actions of Zhu Rong.

As for Gong Gong Wuyou himself, he knew clearly that he had to take the blame for Wuzhi Qi's ridiculous action. Lie Mountain Xu and Ying Yunpeng, who had just ganged up with him, were all punished for the crystal mine event. At this moment, he couldn't find any reason to go against the raging Zhi Rong, and could only hide inside his room and let Zhu Rong do whatever he wanted.

After having smashed madly for half an hour, Zhu Rong directly broke into the palace, grabbed Gong Gong Wuyou out from his room and savagely beat him up. Until Emperor Shun and a group of old ministers finally showed their faces as peacemakers, this fight had not been ended.

"Well, this is how it went," said Si Xi while digging out a few mud balls out of the bonfire. He ripped them open and showed the well grilled wild chickens inside, "You're not harmed too badly, so Zhu Rong can't go too far. He just kicked a few asses and released his anger."

Slightly sighing, Si Xi murmured, "Emperor Shun is not easily sitting on the throne of the human Emperor. People are now complicated, they are not as simple and honest as in the ancient times. During the era of the first three generations of human Emperor, although the humankind was living a rough life, their hearts were tied together all the time. They would gather all their efforts together and work on conquering all difficulties. That was the peak time of our humankind."

Man Man didn't want to pay any attention to this kind of serious topics. She chuckled happily, seized a grilled chicken from Si Xi's

hand, handed it to Shaosi, then grabbed another one and threw it to Ji Hao, after that, she took the third one and began wolfing it down.

Ji Hao shook his head while smiling, looked at Yu Mu, who was drooling at that grilled chicken but was too shy to ask for one, tore his grilled chicken into a few pieces and handed to Yu Mu, Feng Xing, and Taisi.

Si Xi nodded and said with a grin, "Ah, we were planning on keeping you in the Magi Palace to learn more useful stuff, but it seems now that as long as Wen Ming and few other old men don't stay in the Magi Place, the Magi Palace will immediately fall into chaos. Kids like you wouldn't be able to even stay there."

"Rather than that, you should just go to the Chi Ban Mountain. You can still learn things over there, while accumulating your military exploits, which is even better for you."

"Not only you, elder Wulong and few others will go to the Chi Ban Mountain as well. After all, this time the Blood Moon seems to be preparing to dispatch their entire army force. We would suffer unnecessary losses if we aren't cautious enough. In the Chi Ban Mountain, you can ask any question regarding your cultivation to those few elders anytime, and will be able to put what you have learned directly to practice, which is a good thing."

Ji Hao nodded and said seriously, "You're right, Si Xi...brother, we wanted to stay in the Magi Palace and concentrate on learning some good stuff, take as many tasks as we could and accumulate some experience, besides trade cultivating resources with our credits; we only wanted to make ourselves stronger and more powerful. Doing so would allow us to contribute more to our humankind."

"However, looking at what happened this time, we never wanted to cause any trouble but trouble came looking for us. Rong Mountain Clan elder Iron Yan forgot about moral sense once he

saw the crystal mine, which is still reasonable. Elders from small clans can be shortsighted sometimes, and probably not be able to make decisions considering the long term effects. I can understand why he did those things to us."

"But, that Ying Yunpeng, hehe, and Prince Xu, hm." Ji Hao sneered and continued honestly, "People like that are holding high status amongst our humankind..."

Si Xi waved his hand, stared at Ji Hao right in the eye, then slowly glanced at Man Man and the few other kids, then said, "You have got one thing wrong. They're not holding high status amongst the entire humankind. They're only powerful amongst their own clans or families. The humankind is not what you think it is."

"Amongst our humankind, some people indeed value wealth more than moral sense and would betray anyone for their own benefits. These people are jealous and are used to turning black into white. If our humankind is a tree, then these people are the disgusting insects that are trying to eat us from the roots. However, more people are brave and fearless, willing to risk their own lives for the future of the entire humankind."

Si Xi then patted hard on Ji Hao's shoulder and said generously, "Never, ever be disappointed in our humankind, Ji Hao, and the five of you, never give up on your own kind. Otherwise, in this cruel world, you might..."

Si Xi pointed at the sky outside, grinned and continued, "You will encounter the darkness, occasionally dark clouds will block your eyesight, but eventually, you will see..."

"You will see me as a warm flame, lighting up the entire sky and bringing light and warmth to countless creatures." A clear and manly voice abruptly came out from the outside and interrupted Si Xi's words. Beautiful yet majestic Zhu Rong, wearing his symbolic red cloak, carried a huge calabash containing wine, walked into the

cabin in big steps.

Once he walked into the room, Zhu Rong threw a heavy slap on Ji Hao's head and said, "Kid, not bad, you have saved Man Man one more time. I like you more and more. But, you're still not powerful enough to be my son-in-law. Well, until you have become an invincible one amongst Divine Magi, you're not qualified to be with my daughter."

Ji Hao let out a few hollow and shaky laughs. He didn't dare to respond regarding this topic.

To be the son-in-law of the Fire God, Zhu Rong... this was truly a legendary topic for Ji Hao.

And to be Man Man's husband? Ji Hao glanced at the pair of gigantic hammers leaning beside Man Man and couldn't help but quiver intensely. Deep inside his heart, he had only seen Man Man as his little sister. 'Son-in-law? Zhu Rong, aren't you being too rushed? How old is Man Man?' thought Ji Hao.

Zhu Rong sat straight down beside Ji Hao. Man Man instantly raised her tiny and oily hand, grabbed a chicken leg and thrust it into Zhu Rong's mouth. Zhu Rong laughed aloud and swallowed the entire chicken leg along with the bones, then began talking.

"I blackmailed the old water monster for you. Well, not to mention the others, Ji Hao, in the biggest market in Pu Ban City, you now own ten shops. The Fine Jade Snow Palace, newly built beside the biggest lake of the Pu Ban City, the Divine Light Lake, by that idiot Gong Gong Wuyou, along with eight thousand maids and slaves working in it, now all belong to you."

Zhu Rong then waved his hand, stopped Ji Hao from talking, then continued, "In three days, you few will head to the Chi Ban Mountain, along with reinforcements send by the Magi Palace."

"Man Man, you too." glancing at Man Man seriously, Zhu Rong continued, "Don't humiliate our Zhu Rong family."

Ji Hao, Yu Mu, Feng Xing, and Shaosi immediately straightened their bodies and their face became especially serious. Only Man Man and Taisi were still focused on chewing their chicken, as if nothing important had happened at all.

Chapter 251: The Yu Dynasty

Three days later.

Emperor Shun had organized an offering ceremony on a high stage, worshipping the nature, the gods and all the spirits.

Tens of thousands of master Maguspriests had come from different big-scale clans. They were standing around the stage, incanting a blessing spell all together. Gusts of fierce wind were ceaselessly blowing from over from the west. According to legends, the west represented metal as one of the five basic elements of nature. It also represented the white tiger, which was the god of war, mainly in charge of slaughter and battle. Milky-white wind blew across Pu Ban City and shreds of long, sharp clouds drifted over, like countless sharp swords that sliced the sky open.

Gigantic and strong beasts were beheaded one after another. Their blood gushed out and was lifted up into the air by invisible streams of magic power, transforming into huge spell symbols. Beams of blood-red light spread out, showering onto the bodies of Ji Hao and all the other people who were standing in front of the stage. Everyone felt a strong, dense and hot stream of power drilling into their bodies, surging inside their bodies and merging with their own powers.

This was the grand war ceremony of the alliance of humankind clans. A hundred thousand big-scale beasts would be offered to the nature and mysterious powerful creatures living in this world, in exchange for help of the natural power. As a price, tens of thousands of master Maguspriests would lose their abilities of activating their power for the whole following year.

After being enhanced by that blood-red spell symbol, Ji Hao's physical strength was doubled, along with the speed of his movements and reactions and his agility. His body had become over five times more solid than it had been before, and his life-

force had increased many times over as well. Because of that, the recovery speed of his wounds had increased by many times by now.

With the power gifted by the blood-red spell symbol, the probability of survival in battle had increased by at least ten times now for Ji Hao. And the effect of the blood-red spell symbol would last for over a year.

Tens of thousands of master Maguspriests were sitting on the ground, each with a deadly pale face. Their eyes were closed while they were swallowing liquid medicines that had been prepared well ahead of time.

Emperor Shun was holding the sword, which represented his position as the Emperor of the humankind, standing high and looking solemnly down at the army, which was about to head to the Chi Ban Mountain. He didn't say too much, only held the sword before his face with both of his hands, and bowed deeply to those warriors standing in lines, who came from almost all human clans. After that, army commanders growled out resonantly one after another, along with which, this magnificent army began moving towards the North.

A hundred winged dragons were leading the way in front of the army. Each winged dragon was carried a powerful Maguspriest. These master Maguspriests waved their mountain-driving whips that had been passed down from their ancestors while incanting an old and mysterious spell. When their whips, which were shining with bright yellow light, were waved in the air, the ground would start to tremble and thick layers of soil would automatically split up, from out of which, ten miles wide and zhang thick gigantic flagstones would move up from the ground, one after another.

Not long after that, with the continuous upward movement of the huge flagstones from out of the ground, a ten miles wide broad road had been paved before the army. This road stretched directly to the north, without bending even a single time.

"Move! Kill all the monsters!!" A zhang tall man from the Kuafu Family roared while holding the banner of the alliance of human clans up with both of his hands. He was the first one to step onto this broad straight road, which was paved by magic.

The flying dragons that were carrying the master Maguspriests swiftly flew forwards, while those master Maguspriests ceaselessly waved their whips and extending the road.

Occasionally, there would be gigantic mountains blocking the way, however, along with harsh growls of those master Maguspriests, those mountains would automatically move aside and clear the way as if they were living creatures.

Along with a buzzing noise, tank-sized, multicolored spell symbols emerged from this flagstone road.

The yellow spell symbols represented the earth. With dense earth powers released by these spell-symbols, warriors walking on the flagstone road all felt as if they had inexhaustible powers and enormously strong life-force, which would never run out. On this broad road, every single warrior was able to keep moving forward at their highest speed without even taking a break.

The green spell symbols represented wood. The power of wood contained a bottomless amount of life force, with which, these warriors wouldn't feel hungry at all, and their bodies wouldn't get harmed in any way by moving over a long time. While walking on this broad road, everyone's body could maintain their optimum condition. The cyan spell symbols represented wind. The wind was light and fast. With the power of wind, the warriors were able to move faster than before by at least ten times. Ordinary Junior Magi could easily cover thousands of miles within a day. While absorbing the power of the wind on this road, they could now reach a hundred thousand miles far daily.

Ji Hao was sitting on the back of a horned dragon horse. He couldn't see the front of this army, neither was he able to see the

end of it behind him. This great army was moving forward on this magical and broad road at its highest speed, while countless spell symbols were sparkling on the ground, allowing the army to move faster and faster.

This was the power of the alliance of the human race clans.

Pu Ban City seemed like a peaceful countryside, but when its power did burst, it could shock everyone.

Since his wounds hadn't yet recovered fully, Ji Hao was sitting leisurely on the back of the dragon horse and took out a thick book that was made from jade slips, opening it carefully.

He hadn't wasted the past three days. With his own efforts and permissions of a few Magi Palace's elders, especially Si Xi, Ji Hao had gained the qualification of entering the precious storage room with ancient scriptures. He had found a few books regarding non-humankind monsters from it, and duplicated those few books with a special kind of magic.

These few books had extremely rich content, which was quite shocking and terrifying.

In order to gain access to these officially banned books before he was truly qualified, Ji Hao even had to make a quite terrifying vow, declaring that he would never leak this information to ordinary people.

He was going to join a great war against non-humankind monsters in the Chi Ban Mountain. Judging from the conversations between Si Xi and the other ministers, Ji Hao had learned that this war would be quite terrifying. Under these circumstances, it would be quite irresponsible of him towards his teammates if he didn't learn as much as possible about their enemies.

Strange shining characters slowly emerged from the book, which could only be seen by Ji Hao.

First of all, those non-humankind monsters were not indigenous residents of this world, but the book didn't explain where they exactly did come from. Clearly, that was a bigger secret than the information that Ji Hao was permitted to know. Even though Ji Hao had got a special permission from the elders, he was still not qualified to reach that highly secretive information.

Those non-humankind monsters were strictly hierarchical. From up to down, they were divided into the three-eyed Yu Clan, who possessed all kinds of magical powers, just like Maguspriests amongst human beings, the four-eyed Jia clan, who had incomparably powerful bodies and great fighting skills and were the most horrible enemies of the humankind, the five-eyed Xiu Clan, who were especially wise. Although the Xiu Clan knew nearly nothing about fighting, they possessed highly advanced technologies regarding magic formations, spell symbols, magic puppet crafting, tool crafting and medicine making. Their scope of knowledge had surpassed the humankind by far.

Even many of the magic formations and spell-symbol creation, medicine concocting, and puppet crafting technologies that were mastered by the human beings were actually sneakily learned from the the Xiu Clan at first.

The three-eyed Yu Clan's people possessed incredibly high social status, therefore, with the name of their clan, they had started a dynasty named the Yu Dynasty, which had a great influence in the Midland and a very long history. Before the human race was gathered together by the first three generations of human Emperor, during an undefined long span of time, human beings were actually slaves of the Yu Dynasty.

In other words, the alliance of the human clans could actually be seen as the 'traitors' of the Yu Dynasty.

The alliance of the human clans was founded based on powerful large-scale clans. The elders from these clans would together select the Emperor to lead and to guide the entire humankind.

Nominally, the Emperor of the humankind was the most powerful leader of the entire human race.

Different with them, the Yu Dynasty was divided into twelve branches according to their different inherited powers, which were the three 'suns' and the nine 'moons'. Each branch had an Emperor in power, who joint-handedly ruled the great Yu Dynasty.

This time, the throne of the emperor in power of the Blood Moon had changed its owner. The new emperor, Dishi Yanluo, intended to dye his throne red with the blood of the human race.

Chapter 252: Chi Ban Mountain

"Scums, all scums. I need to avenge myself anyway."

Di Sha was sitting on the back of a blood-smoke nightmare beast with an awfully darkened face, while aimlessly whipping the braces beside him with a small whip held in his hand. The hideous blood-smoke nightmare beast, which had goat-like horns and sharp teeth, screamed shrilly. Its countless small scales were all wrapped in dense blood-red smoke, hidden under a thick layer of fur and continuously letting out muffled, metal-clashing noises.

Behind Di Sha, there were three thousand Yu Clan elite warriors, fifty-thousand Jia Clan warriors, and large groups of slave warriors. This huge troop was moving forward in the dense jungle.

Di Sha only had a thousand elite Yu Clan's warriors and thirty thousand Jia Clan warriors under his direct command. But for this war, the new Emperor Dishi Yanluo had given his final order, making all the influential families of the Blood Moon send their elite family members to join the army.

His army force had abruptly expanded by a few times, therefore, Di Sha was now incomparably confident.

"Little bastard, you have killed my brother and humiliated my family... I can clearly sense that you're right here. Just wait for me to cut your head off myself!"

A beam of dim light flashed across the erect eye on the forehead of Di Sha, which turned the surrounding air into a sticky and muddy substance. Tens of Yu Clan commanders, who were standing right behind him, hurriedly lowered their head and didn't dare to look directly at his body.

Tens of dark-brown and dark-skinned non-humankind slaves, who had large speckles on their skin and looked like hairless monkeys, rushed over from the other side of the mountain. They

were rushing quickly down a cliff at the mountainside, stirring up clouds of dirt while dashing over.

These slaves were not good at fighting. They were only equal to ordinary third or fourth level of Novice Magi. At this moment, their entire bodies were completely covered in blood. The one rushing in the front had the heads of a few children tied around his waist.

"Lowly creatures!" Di Sha and his little group of commanders yelled out simultaneously.

These slave warriors were living a very low life and had shameless methods of fighting. What they liked the most was to bully and slaughter weak and young people. Judging from their appearances, they had probably accidentally rushed into a small village, got aroused by the kids in the village and conveniently killed a few.

"Enemies! Enemies!" The slave warriors who were rushing in the front screamed out at Di Sha, "He killed lots of us!"

Di Sha raised his head and looked at the small hill where those slave warriors had come from. These scouting slave warriors were sent out by him and should have been in a team of a hundred people, but now around over thirty of them made it back. Obviously, the majority of them had been killed.

The sound of armor clashing came out from the troop. Over ten Jia Clan warriors left the troop in a line and walked towards the small hill with big steps.

A few tall and sturdy silhouettes appeared on top of the hill. From the top of the hill they observed Di Sha's troop for a while, loudly punched their own chests and gave angry shouts. But right after that, they turned around and left instead of stupidly rushing down to risk their lives fighting against those Jia Clan warriors.

Di Sha shook his head in scorn, carelessly pointed his finger at

the small hill and said, "Send a squad over there and wipe their village out. Be careful, don't kill those who are worthy goods."

After all, Di Sha had worked as a slave trader for hundreds of years. Therefore, he instinctively kept his old habit as a slave trader. The few Yu Clan commanders were all his close followers who had worked for him for many years. They nodded silently and quickly gave the order to the warriors.

Five elite warriors of the Yu Clan and fifty Jia Clan warriors, along with three hundred powerful slave warriors and thousands of noisy weak slaves left the troop and quickly moved towards the small hill.

If someone would look down from up the sky, they would see at least a hundred of troops that were similar to the one being led by Di Sha. These troops looked like a multi-headed evil dragon, extending for miles. Wherever they passed through, they would leave wiped out villages in their wake, burning all the houses and robbing all the food and clothes. This enormous army, formed by hundreds of troops, wriggled towards the south.

In front of them, a gigantic mountain range was silently lying on the ground. This mountain range extended for over a million miles from the west to the east. Except for some ancient trees that were growing on top of a few peaks, not a single grass could be found on this mountain range.

Only smooth and solid cliffs and mountainsides could be seen on this mountain range. There was no soil that could be found between the peaks, only gigantic flagstones. Some flagstones were even ten miles squared, surrounded by mountains, naturally formed into a perfect battle ground.

What was even more shocking was whether it was the mountainside or the cliff, the flagstones or the sand in the river, all of them were blood-red in color. And because the sun reflected from these surfaces, it emitted a soul-shaking blood-red light.

At the first sight, the eyes would be filled with vivid blood-red color, which was the reason why this mountain range was called Chi Ban.

[TL note, 'Chi' literally means red in Chinese.]

Before Emperor Shun had taken over the throne of the human race king and the human world was being ruled by the last few generations of emperors, the Chi Ban Mountain range was the natural parting line between the Yu Dynasty and the human world. For many times, the Yu Dynasty army launched attacks from the north and the human army held the Chi Ban Mountain as a line of defense, firmly blocking the Yu Dynasty armies in the north.

For a very long time, too many warriors had shed their blood on this mountain range, which had made the blood-color of this mountain range even more vivid.

After the army had set off from Pu Ban City, all the people of the Magi Palace, including Ji Hao, were transferred onto the back of a gigantic mountain turtle. This kind of giant-scale animal could naturally merge with the great earth power, which allowed it to move faster than the army by over ten times. After ten days, they had arrived at the southern part of the Chi Ban Mountain.

Battling birds were hovering in the sky, while battling beasts were roaring. The barracks that extended for ten thousand miles had been built on the southern side of the Chi Ban Mountain. The warriors, who had come from over ten thousand different clans, had gathered here, forming a great allied force, preparing for this upcoming bloody war against the non-humankind monsters.

Standing on the back of the Mountain Turtle and looking at both sides, under the dim starlight, light spots in front of each barrack had formed a long sparkling line. The bonfires were blazing, while the nice aroma of grilled meat spread out for thousands of miles, which would make people drool by even taking a single breath of

it.

A group of warriors were wolfing the grilled meat and pouring delicious wine into their mouths. Their shouts and growls were as great as the roaring tide water and would even bring a great pain to the ears.

Occasionally, the battling beasts, which still were wild, would fight against each other, along with which, a great chaos would be created. The roars of the beasts which were fighting, and the yells of the humans who were their owners, mixed up together. This expanded quickly into a group fight, involving hundreds of people.

Elder Wulong and a few others who were standing on the back of the turtle had already been showing the whites of their eyes. Kuafu Yan waved his great hammer and cursed in a muffled yet resonant voice, "Who is in charge of this site? Why is it in such a mess? How can we fight with an army like this?"

The turtle didn't stop, but moved directly across the hundreds of miles wide barrack site, carrying Ji Hao and the others into the Chi Ban Mountain.

Moving into the rugged mountain area for a few days, past countless strictly guarded posts, they finally saw a gigantic blood-red flagstone, with thousands of fluttering banners. These banners had different totems painted on them and were floating above the standing flagstone. This was the base camp of the allied forces of the human race clans, which was especially constructed for this war.

Resounding horns were rising into the air and tens of large-scale fighting beasts darted out of the site.

Chapter 253: Special Army

Ji Hao didn't see Si Wen Ming.

All elders and master Magi tutors sent by the Magi Palace were called to the main meeting camp. There were too many important things that were in need of their efforts.

Ji Hao and his teammates, along with thousands of other apprentices of the Magi Palace, were led by an armed squad to a smaller campsite in the north-west corner of the base camp. When Ji Hao looked closer, he discovered that tens of banners that had different kinds of eagle totems painted on them were fluttering above this camp.

"Phew, such a rush. Just wondering what kind of jobs will they arrange for us to do since we now have arrived here." Yu Mu was leisurely patting his own belly, while carrying his fully repaired huge pot on his back. He was curiously looking around while moving forward.

"Hm, this is not a decent camp anyway." Feng Xing insisted on keeping zhangs of distance away from all the other apprentices, leaning his head like a thief and peeked into those tents through the apertures on the tents.

Ji Hao carefully sniffed the air and sensed a strong smell of medicines, which was especially used to cure wounds. He also sensed a dense bloody scent. Most of these tents were completely empty, and not too much sense of power was leaking out of those tents. Obviously, it had been a while since someone had lived in these tents.

As for tents that had people staying in, all of those people were either lightly or seriously wounded, and their wounds were mostly hard to deal with. Some of them had been releasing a strong sense of power. All these people were Senior Magi, but still, they were wrapped around by a dense medicinal scent. Obviously, their

Senior Magi spirit blood was not powerful enough to cure themselves completely.

The sky turned dark and was thickly dotted with sparkling stars.

In the middle of the camp, on a square was a bright bonfire, lighting up the space for miles around.

A young man, wearing a neat black shirt and heavy armor, possessing a square and handsome face that made him looks honest and highly esteemed, stood on the middle of the square. He looked at Ji Hao and the other apprentices of the Magi Palace with a frown.

Deep growls rose into the air. These apprentices, who were carefully selected by the Magi Palace, stopped walking and stood still, dividing into over a thousand small groups. The division happened according to how well they knew each other and were separated in the square. Everyone was curiously observing this armed young man, silently guessing who he might be.

"I am Huaxu Lie. From now on, you're all under my direct command." When all the apprentices had quieted down, this young man's voice resounded through the entire camp.

The groups of apprentices, who had stopped talking and walking just now, immediately began whispering to each other again. Was this a hoax? Was he really one of the Huaxu family members? The Huaxu family was an ancient and legendary family and they were very mysterious. Their people rarely connected with the outside world. Even in the highest meeting room of Pu Ban City, not a single elder of the Huaxu family had appeared.

The Huaxu family's people showing up in this great war, what did this mean?

Did the emperor and his ministers perceive something serious and were forced to use those strong powers that were hidden all this time by them? Or were there any other reasons?

Man Man was fiddling with her pair of hammers while murmuring, "Huaxu Country? That's a nice place. Their honey is so, so sweet, and has a nice aroma. Man Man loves Huaxu Country's honey jam the most."

Hearing her words, Yu Mu, who was standing aside, instantly swallowed a big mouthful of drool while his eyeballs turned greedy green. He glowingly stared at Man Man, with the fat on his face shaking from time to time.

Ji Hao shook his head, turned back to Huaxu Lie and focused on what he was about to say.

"You are all elites amongst the Magi Palace's apprentices and possess Senior Magus level of powers. Besides, what you have learned and mastered is way more than any ordinary warrior has ever learned. Every single of you can be ten times more destructive than the other warriors, maybe even hundreds, thousands of times more."

Huaxu Lie's eyes were glowing sharply, slowly glancing through each apprentice.

"Therefore, you won't be used as ordinary warriors, neither will you be sent to join an official army of the Chi Ban Mountain. From this moment on, you're soldiers of my special army, led by me, Huaxu Lie!"

"From now on, you can start your fights against the non-humankind monsters. Then entire Chi Ban Mountain will be your battlefield!"

"You can team up with anyone you want, use any method that you like, do whatever you can, to disturb those monsters... sneakily attack them, slaughter them! Their dead bodies will forge your medals!"

Along with a swooshing sound, a black and blood-red stone monument abruptly rose from the ground behind Huaxu Lie. This

thick stone monument was hundreds of zhang wide and over thousands zhang tall, covered by a sticky layer of flowing blood-red liquid.

Loud jade-clashing noises then came from the stone monument, along with which, thousands of palm-sized blood-red tablets darted out from the stone monument, stirring up sharp gusts of wind towards those apprentices. Ji Hao immediately raised his hand and gripped the tablet that zipped towards him. His finger was even cut broken by the sharp edge of the jade tablet. A slight stream of blood spread on that tablet, which instantly built a magical connection between Ji Hao and the tablet itself.

"Every time you kill an enemy, this tablet will record your military exploit credit for that."

Huaxu Lie then said harshly, "Kill one slave of those monsters, you will get one credit point, kill one slave warrior, you will get five credit points. One Jia Clan warrior, your credit point will vary from a hundred to no ceiling limit, according to how powerful that enemy was. Yu Clan warriors, your credit point start from a thousand to no ceiling limit."

"You can come to me and trade those credits for medicines, tools, weapons, magic treasures, slaves, fighting beasts, or beautiful women. If you have enough credit points, you can even earn a personal territory that is enfeoffed by the alliance of the human clan."

"If you're not interested in that stuff, you can trade for official positions with your credit points. From the leader of a five people squad, which is the lowest position among our army, to being the commander of a ten thousand people troop, and even like me, directly lead an entire army and command millions of warriors...As long as you have enough credit points, you can make it happen."

"If you're not interested in these official positions either, you can

trade for government positions with your credit points. Maybe, someone among you will sit in Emperor Shun's meeting hall in the Pu Ban City one day, and make decisions for the future of the entire human race."

Huaxu Lie stared at the groups of apprentices with serious and sharp eyes, then continued, "If you feel that none of these awards will satisfy you, I can promise you that as long as you can kill one of those emperors in power of the Yu Dynasty, the chair of the human Emperor will be expecting you! The more you do, the more you will earn!"

Ji Hao stared at Huaxu Lie in shock and couldn't help but shake his head.

He had read all the books he picked up in the Magi Palace during his journey here. By now, he had already learned what kind of scary beings those twelve emperors in powers were. Each of them possessed terrifyingly great power and were nearly invisible. Not to mention that they were surrounded by millions of incredibly powerful warriors at any given moment.

Even if the humans sent peak-level Divine Magi to sneakily attack one of those Emperors, they wouldn't be able to get even a chance to approach an Emperor by less than a hundred miles.

Indeed, the throne of the human Emperor was attractive, but to trade for it by killing an Emperor in command of monsters, it was not even possible.

Right after he had finished his explanation, Huaxu Lie gave his order straight away.

"You have just arrived from the Pu Ban City, and are all filled with powers and life-force. You're so young and passionate, you must be eager to chop some enemies and make your contributions!"

"Therefore, I will not interfere... you can just release your

passion as much as you want!"

"Everyone, grab your packs and get into the Chi Ban Mountain! Hunt as much as you like! Go build your achievements! For your clans, for the name of your families, for your ancestors! Bring glories back!"

"Do not humiliate your ancestors!"

A violent gale blew out from beside Huaxu Lie and across the camp. Ji Hao and the other apprentices couldn't even stand still as they all were pushed into the Chi Ban Mountain in the night by that roaring, hurricane-like gale.

Chapter 254: Experience

Taisi was lying on the bank of a river with his limbs stretched out, showing the whites of his eyes towards the sky.

Although he had already become a Senior Magus, his body was still as weak as that of an ordinary Novice Magus. Having rushed for only hundreds of miles, Taisi went so out of breath that he nearly puked his internal organs out.

Yu Mu was carefully looking after a bonfire, which had a few mud balls buried under it. Wrapped in those mud balls were freshly hunted pheasants. He had learnt this great cooking method from Si Xi. Lately, Yu Mu was quite obsessed in wrapping all kinds of food materials in mud and grilling them with the bonfire.

Shaosi, Man Man and Feng Xing were sitting in a line on a flagstone, staring at Yu Mu's bonfire. Wiping the drool off the corner of her mouth, Man Man murmured that all the pheasant legs should belong to her. Feng Xing narrowed his eyes while silently determining that he would certainly seize at least one leg.

Taisi was still lying on the river bank, but none of the others gave him even a glance. Especially Shaosi, she didn't even want to talk a word to this elder brother of hers, who had made her so embarrassed. It had only been hundreds of miles, and even Man Man, that little girl, covered it easily.

"Whoo, whoo, be careful! If you dare to run, I'll just kill you for good!"

Ji Hao was riding on the back of a pure black muscular tiger, swiftly rushing out of the woods like a great gale. This three zhang long tiger was breathing rapidly, with white saliva flowing out of the corner of its mouth from time to time. Occasionally, it would let out a roar, and every time after that, Ji Hao would immediately throw a heavy punch to its head.

Ji Hao's punches nearly knocked this powerful beast down. Finally, its limbs couldn't support its body anymore and it fell on the ground.

Mr Crow instantly cawed out, spurting out a thin stream of flame right at the head of the tiger. The tiger howled out and stood up while staggering. With shaky legs, it moved towards the river as Ji Hao ordered it to.

"Drink! Animal, can't you at least understand something that I say?" yelled Ji Hao while throwing another heavy punch on the tiger's head. The tiger lied nicely down beside the river, soaking half if its head into the river as it gulped the ice-cold water in big mouthfuls.

It was the third day after they had joined Huaxu Lie's special army.

The apprentices of the Magus Palace had separated a long time ago in countless small teams, disappearing in this vast Chi Ban Mountain.

Unlike those ordinary warriors, who knew nothing besides waving their weapons as hard as they could, amongst these apprentices, even the weakest one had mastered a special subject, such as medicine making, magic talismans crafting, magic formations or spell using, as well as communicating with mysterious creatures. They could manipulate animals and poisonous creatures, or even control the natural elements like the wind, or lightning or snow. These abilities allowed every single Magus Palace's apprentice to be more powerful and effective in battles than tens of, or even hundreds of ordinary warriors who were at the same level as them.

Thousands of carefully selected Senior Magus level apprentices were pushed into the Chi Ban Mountain. It seemed like a handful of small stones had been thrown into the ocean, not even worth one more glance, but these kids were actually all amazingly

destructive.

Not to mention the others, only Ji Hao's six-people team had destroyed tens of pioneering squads of those non-humankind monsters within the past three days, and killed over a thousand slaves.

The six of them corresponded perfectly with each other. None of them was especially weaker than the others and needed extra protection. If insisted on picking up the weakness of this team, it would be that Taisi's physical strength and body condition were both too weak; even if he was already a Senior Magus, he still was so weak that it nearly drove the other teammates speechless.

Therefore, Ji Hao used this short break time and went into the deep mountain, captured this strong tiger which was about to break into the level of Senior Magus.

"Taisi, Taisi!" From a long distance, Ji Hao laughed out and yelled, "I got you a riding animal, check it out! Very nice... like a furry big cat!"

Grabbing the skin of the tiger on its neck, Ji Hao directly pulled the tiger's head up and swayed it towards Taisi.

Taisi, who was still gasping, raised his head, saw the tiger and his eyes instantly began glowing. He hurriedly stood up, happily walked into the river, looking at Ji Hao, laughed and yelled, "Aha, ha, Ji Hao, I knew it! You're the only one who is nice to me!"

"Hm?" Man Man glared at Taisi while showing her little teeth.

"Dear brother, what did you mean by that?" said Shaosi coldly while given Taisi a sideway glance that couldn't have been any colder.

Feng Xing didn't say anything, only took out an arrow and silently aimed at Taisi's scrawny ass.

Taisi suddenly quivered, immediately raised both of his arms and yelled, "Ah, haha, haha, ha, we-we're all families! Eh, we're, we're

blood brothers, an-and sisters! Yo-you're all the best to me, I am so touched! I'm about to cry! Crying now!"

Shaosi lowered her head and buried her face in her hands, slightly sighing. Having such a big brother was the most humiliating thing that ever had happened to her.

Ji Hao shook his head and drove the tiger up to Taisi. The tiger's gigantic body leapt into the river and sent up large amounts of water blooms. Taisi hurriedly grabbed the tiger's furry face and happily rubbed it, even forgetting to wipe the water on his face out.

"Big kitty nice kitty, you should be a good boy from now on. As long as I have something to eat, I will certainly share it with you..." Taisi stared emotionally while staring at the tiger in its eyes, however, the tiger showed its sharp teeth and let out an unfriendly roar to him. After that, the tiger sneezed, spraying a full mouthful of sticky saliva on Taisi's face.

Tarsi's face suddenly darkened and his eyes turned into a pure-black colour, within which, dim scary dark lights began rotating, like a black hole that was about to draw the tiger's soul out. The tiger began moaning in fear right away, but its limbs seemed to have been disabled from moving such that it could only lie in the river, without daring to move anymore.

Taisi snorted and pointed his fingers towards the middle of the tiger's forehead. Along with his move, a great tiger roar came out from the tiger's head and a thumb-sized green light wrapped the hazy tiger silhouette, slowly flowed out from its head, into Taisi's mouth and was swallowed by him.

The tiger's body suddenly went stiff. When it looked at Taisi again, its eyes were filled with fear and despair. Just a moment ago, one could still see the remaining wildness and fierceness in its eyes, but at this moment it had all disappeared and the tiger became as behaving as a domesticated cat.

Ji Hao was relieved... Since Taisi had his own way to control this tiger, he would not have to worry about this anymore.

Patting the tiger's head, Ji Hao leapt down from its back, then slapped on Taisi's shoulder and said, "From now on, this cat will be your mount. This black big cat is about to break into the Senior Magus level and can run even faster than us in the mountain and the jungle. It will be a great assistant of yours!"

Taisi happily grinned while nodding his head. He then walked around the tiger while being satisfied, showing no sign of stopping at all.

Suddenly, the tiger raised its head and roared towards the woods across the river.

Ji Hao immediately dragged Taisi over and shielded him with his own body.

Feng Xing, who sat behind them, instantly leapt high, bringing up tens of shreds of afterimages, and darted into the jungle behind him into hiding. Yu Mu carelessly snorted, carried his huge pot up and walked towards Ji Hao. Shaosi murmured and incanted a spell, which brought a few extremely thin beams of white light down from the sky, forming a faint white spell symbol on each of her teammates' head.

A trembling voice abruptly came from the woods across the river.

"Don't attack! We're humans, we're humans! Not monsters!"

Out of the shaking branches, hundreds of elderly people, women and kids staggered out.

Chapter 255: Refugees

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Three shrill swishing sounds tore apart the silence of the woods and sounded like long and sharp roars of eagles.

Feng Xing hid in the woods on this side of the river and shot three roaring arrows accurately into the soft and moist soil, right before the foot tips of an elderly man. A few spell symbols of these specially crafted arrows lit up one after another. Along with wisps of black smoke that rose from arrows, a few horrible skulls were formed in the air, letting out scary laughs.

A great yet creepy power spread out from the three arrows, instantly shrouding the entire wood within a radius of a few miles.

The arrows that were shot out by Feng Xing were embossed with the spell symbols of the terror inducing magic, which were especially created by the Magi Palace. Once those spell symbols were activated, they would release a sense of power that could make the surrounding creatures feel extremely terrified. Being struck by the terror inducing magic, ordinary Junior Magi would usually scream out in fear and their whole bodies would become limp and powerless. They wouldn't even be able to stand steadily.

The group of people coming out from the woods across the river suddenly fell into chaos. Many women and kids began rushing pointlessly towards random directions while screaming and yelling.

However, the terror inducing magic was way too powerful such that their legs were even softened by the magic. Even though they had been screaming and crying, trying to run for quite a while, none of them actually managed to make ten-zhang far.

"Who are you, what are you doing here?" Ji Hao pulled out his long black stone dagger, and said while slowly stroking the edge of

the dagger with his finger. A black beam of light, which had a slightly trace of weird red light mixed in it, abruptly flashed across the edge of the dagger. After that, raging streams of flame darted out from the dagger to zhang far, even cutting a huge fissure on the surface of the river.

From within the rising clouds of steam, a tall and muscular man, whose body was entirely covered in half-dried blood and who was carrying a steel axe, walked over, directly stamping the three arrows shot out by Feng Xing, into ashes.

"We're warriors from the Gold Wolf Clan and these are Cyan Wolf Clan's clansmen." This muscular man shouted from the other side of the river with a harsh voice. His skin was all stained by blood, making it so that Ji Hao couldn't even clearly see his face. "Our villages were all destroyed and we're the only survivors. Why did you scare our women and kids?"

Ji Hao swung his arm and let out a three feet long, black bone stick, sticking in the soil beside him. A gust of black smoke suddenly rose seven to eight zhang high from the stick, then quickly condensed into a zhang square banner, which had a totem on it, fluttering along with the wind. On the banner condensed from black smoke, one could clearly see a muscular human silhouette, baring his upper body and standing straight up.

All human clans had their own totem, which were mostly all kinds of powerful creatures that had been protecting them. Only the banners of the human clan alliance, which could be used by all the alliance members, was a straight up standing human silhouette.

"We have come from the Pu Ban City and are warriors led by our human emperor. As we were told, we are patrolling around this piece of mountain area, killing every single non-humankind monster we see." Ji Hao showed his own identification with the banner, then asked, "You said you are the residents of the Chi Ban Mountain, how can you prove that?"

Those elderly men, women and kids now began desperately screaming and crying. The man with an axe yelled out in anger, "How can we prove that? We were hunted by those monsters all the way here, how does that work?"

While speaking, the man abruptly tore his own clothes apart, showing his muscular upper body, which was thickly dotted with all kinds of wounds, dagger marks, sword cuts, and claw scratches. All of his wounds were festered. Some of them were even wrapped by a faint layer of black or green smoke; obviously, those were the highly poisonous ones.

What was even more shocking was that half of a baby-arm-thick black centipede resided in the man's right side of chest. The centipede's half body, which was already cut, was still squirming and shaking. Tens of sharp centipede's claws had even tore his chest muscle into pieces. It was hard to imagine how his internal organs now looked like.

"Such a fierce Gu poison," murmured Yu Mu, standing behind Ji Hao, "Not pure centipede blood, but a hybrid, mixed by a few different kinds of poisonous snakes and the blood of large Golden Head Centipedes. Good, those non-humankind poison users really got something."

Ji Hao glanced at those wounds and remained silent for a while, then slowly stepped back and said, "See the valley behind us? Move forward along this valley for around eight hundred miles, there is a post set by our human clan alliance. You will find medicine and food in there. There are warriors guarding that post who will make good arrangement for you as well."

Taking a deep breath, Ji Hao seriously continued, "You can only walk along this valley as I have just said. If you wander around randomly and bump into other teams like us, you might be suspected of being spies and get killed. Don't create any trouble for yourselves, especially when you have these many women and kids under your protection."

The man with an axe gasped for a while, then showed a faint smile on his bloody face, after that he said, "Eight hundred miles is not too far, I have to find a good healer to take this goddamn centipede out of me."

Hundreds of elderly men, women and kids were holding each other, being looked after by tens of warriors, and slowly moved across this not so wide and neither too rapidly flowing river. When they were crossing the river, quite a few women and elderly men slipped and fell down. Fortunately, the man with the axe and few other warriors reacted quite fast and grabbed them up immediately.

Finally, hundreds of people had all moved across the river. A group of kids smelled the scent of Yu Mu's grilled chicken and began crying in hunger one after another.

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and carefully observed these refugees coming from the north side of the Chi Ban Mountain. The man with the axe and a few elderly men were discussing something in deep voice. The eyes of the few elderly men were filled with expectations, while the axe man looked quite embarrassed.

Ji Hao discovered that every one of these refugees was more or less wounded, especially those kids. Quite a few of them had a deep cut on their backs, nearly cutting their tiny bodies into two. Although they had all got emergency treatment and had been brought back from death by their medicines, they had lost too much blood and were now feeling extra famished.

Smelling Yu Mu's grilled chicken, these young kids, who were not yet fully aware of their real situation, began crying even louder.

"Br-brother," the man with the axe walked over embarrassedly, while being stared by those few elderly man with eager eyes, bowed to Ji Hao and said while stammering, "It is just that we have been chased all the way and hadn't got any time to hunt for food,

can we..."

Gritting his teeth, the elderly man took out a fist-sized magic crystal from the bag tied around his waist, handed it over to Ji Hao and said, "Can I trade some food from you with this crystal?"

This was a medium quality crystal with water power. A layer of cotton-shaped thing could be seen clearly in the light blue crystal; it was obviously not a pure piece of crystal. Roughly estimated, this piece of medium quality crystal was worth about fifteen jade coins in the Pu Ban City, which was enough for an ordinary family to live a warm and nice life for quite a few years.

Without any hesitation, Ji Hao took over the crystal, measured it in his hand while looking at the man with a complicated expression. Then he said blandly, "Easy, I see what those monsters have done to you. We're all humans, we should help each other. Yu Mu, get them some food. You are from the Gold Wolf Clan and Cyan Wolf Clan, right?"

The axe man couldn't help but gulp, subconsciously looked at the bone fire and said, "Yeah, we're Gold Wolf Clan's warriors. I am Lang Li. Our villages were destroyed, and only the few of us made it out here. They're the people of the Cyan Wolf Clan, one of our brother clans. We met them when we were running on the way. They were also being chased by those monsters, so we merged into one group and finally got here."

Ji Hao kept his eyes narrowed, glanced through those Cyan Wolf Clan people, then pointed at a few warriors amongst them.

"Those are Cyan Wolf Clan warriors too?"

Those few warriors stood instantly up and saluted Ji Hao from a distance.

Chapter 256: Pursuers

Yu Mu dug a few burning-red mud balls out from under the bonfire, broke those mud balls open by slapping, exposing the oily and sizzling grilled pheasants wrapped inside. A group of kids dashed over and surrounded Yu Mu. Yu Mu tore those pheasants into pieces and handed a big piece of pheasant meat to each kid, instantly bringing up a series of happy laughs.

Shaosi quietly looked at these kids. She saw a few weak and scrawny kids standing behind the group of kids surrounding Yu Mu, not getting any pheasant meat, which caused them to start weeping again. She silently walked up to those kids, took out a few solid dry cakes from the leather storage bag tied around her waist and handed them over to those kids.

Those cakes were standard army provisions, thick and solid, containing enough amount of salt and large pieces of dry meat. Although those were cold cakes, the nice scent of smoked meat instantly spread out. The few kids happily took over those cakes and began wolfing them down.

After having taken only a few bites, all of these kids hurriedly turned around and handed their pheasants and cakes to their parents and elder relatives.

Lang Li looked at the few warriors, who were standing among their clansmen and said, "Yes they are Cyan Wolf Clan clansmen. They helped those clansmen fleeing out. If they hadn't been there, those elderly men, kids, and women would have been killed by those bloody monsters long ago."

Sighing slightly, Lang Li said bitterly, "But they have suffered quite a heavy loss. They numbered around a hundred when I met them, but now, only over ten of them have survived. Those monsters, bloody hell!"

Abruptly, Lang Li gave Ji Hao a sensitive look and asked, "Why?

Is there something wrong with them?"

"Not a big problem... probably I am just thinking too much." Ji Hao shook his head and said blandly.

Giving another pondering glance at those few warriors, Ji Hao directly pointed his finger at them and yelled, "Later, walk along the valley, don't go randomly around! Otherwise, don't blame me for not having warned you when you get killed!"

The few warriors politely saluted to Ji Hao once again and sat back on the ground.

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes, looked closely at Lang Li's steel axe, which he was carrying on his back. It was an ordinary big steel axe. Twelve spell symbols that could make the axe more solid and sharper were embossed on the handle, three of which had quite great effects against evil creatures such as ghosts.

These spell symbols apparently had not formed when the axe was forged, instead, they were carved on it after Lang Li had gotten the axe by a Maguspriest of his clan. Therefore, the streams of power couldn't smoothly flow in between those spell symbols and the axe itself, seeming to be blocked by something to a certain degree, which caused the power of this set of spell symbols, containing twelve individual spell symbols, to only release less than seventy percent of its capability.

Lang Li was obviously the most powerful one among all these people and was an elementary level Senior Magus, but his weapon was only a simple axe that had spell symbols added onto it.

However, the few warriors who were noticed by Ji Hao, were only peak level junior warriors, but their weapons were all of relatively much higher quality than the axe of Lang Li. They were badly injured as well, but when looked closer, all the wounds were not in vital body parts.

Although their bones were all exposed in these wounds and had

strong poison lingering on their wounds, which was very hard to deal with, making their wounds unable to automatically cure, all these wounds were located in relatively safer areas of their bodies.

"Interesting," said Ji Hao while taking out a few big pieces of cold grilled meat and handing them to Lang Li and said in a low voice, "When you arrive at the post, everyone of your clan will be identified. At that time, let those old men take a close look and see if these few guys really are their Cyan Wolf Clan warriors."

Lang Li's pupils suddenly shrunk into the size of a needlepoint. He remained silent for a while, then took over the meat and walked towards his fellow warriors.

Ji Hao saw that he shared the meat with the other warriors, then a few elderly men got some meat as well. The remaining meat was not too much, which he gave straight away to the few oldest kids who could already fight.

As for those women who were also starving, no one was paying any attention to them.

The rule of survival was indeed cruel, but under these conditions, they had to guarantee the physical strength of those warriors at first, and could only give up on those women.

A young man, who was one or two years older than Ji Hao walked over, first took a surprised glance at Shaosi and Man Man's pretty faces, then carefully asked Ji Hao, "Are you sent by the human Emperor? Where is the army of our human race? Why don't they rush out of the Chi Ban Mountain and kill those monsters in the north?"

Ji Hao frowned and gave a measuring look to this young man, then slightly shook his head, turned around his body and looked at the other side of the river.

The young man's face turned red, he gasped and stared at Ji Hao in anger and yelled out, "Oi! I'm talking to you! Why don't they

rush out and beat those monsters?! You cowards!"

Man Man darted over from the sideway in big steps, bumped into this young man, sending him flying straight away. She angrily waved her hammers while yelling, "Oi! Who did you call cowards?! We have killed more of those monsters than you have ever seen!"

Man Man boomed her hammers hard against the ground, smashing a gigantic rock, which then was burned into a puff of smoke by the flame released from the hammerhead.

The thunderous boom made by Man Man stirred the crowd again. Lang Li looked at Man Man and the young man for a while, then shook his head, harshly yet deeply yelling at his fellow warriors, forbidding them to make any move.

The young man stared at Man Man in shock, gritted his teeth and continued after quite a while, "They're all dead. Abba, Amma, uncles living next doors, all dead. Why don't you rush out, why don't you kill those monsters?!"

Man Man swung her hammers up, intending to teach this kid a lesson.

Ji Hao grabbed Man Man's arm, then said to this kid in a cold voice, "You have no qualification to say so, neither do you have any qualification to ask why. Want revenge? Grab a weapon and go fight against them in battles. Don't mess around here."

The kid leapt up from the ground, stared at Ji Hao in rage and screamed, "If I had your powers, I would have gone fighting against them myself! You're so powerful, but you're just hiding beside a river and grilling meat! You!"

The branches in the woods across the river suddenly shook, following which a silvery hoofbeat came from the woods. Soon, a cyan-blue cheetah, carrying a Yu Clan warrior, wearing an exquisite and luxurious armor, rushed out of the wood.

Following right behind him were tens of fully armored, meters

tall Jia Clan warriors, carrying their heavy and gigantic weapons, rushing out as well.

Behind these Jia Clan warriors were tens of dark-skinned slave warriors and over two hundred slaves, whose skins were covered in flecks, looked like hairless monkeys, yelling and leaping around.

Along with slight metal-clashing noise, three gigantic metal spiders slowly walked out of the woods.

Once these metal spiders walked out, their enormous jaws suddenly opened and let out hundreds of feet long, golden arrows, swishing towards those refugees on the other side of the river, along with numerous beams of cold lights.

Chapter 257: A Small Frustration

“Fight!”

Ji Hao shouted out loudly and pointed his finger at the river bank in front of those refugees. A fierce gust of wind rose directly up from the ground, rolling tens of thousands of stones up and darting towards those flying arrows.

The metal arrows clashed against the stones, creating fiery sparks. Those stones were instantly shattered against the arrows, but the arrows deviated out of their routes, flying over the river askew.

Only over a hundred arrows managed to fly straight across the river without being bumped by those stones brought up by Ji Hao, directly piercing into the crowd of refugees.

However, Ji Hao now had no time to look after those refugees. Six heavily armored Jia Clan warriors carrying gigantic weapons easily leapt across the river and walked up to him in only a few steps. With three long swords, two huge machetes and one spear, they coordinated perfectly and accurately locked onto all the vital parts of Ji Hao’s body.

Suddenly, a stream of fiery light darted out from the long black dagger which Ji Hao was holding in his hand. Along with a magical arc in the air, the fiery light beam accurately tore out a thin crack in the indestructible formation that had been formed by the three long swords. At the time the edge of the dagger sliced hard across the place where the chest armor and waist armor connected of a Jia Clan warrior.

Fire sparks darted out from the dagger’s edge and hundreds of spell symbols lit up on the joint of the armor. Along with an ear-piercing clashing sound, Ji Hao tore the Jia Clan warrior’s armor apart with his dagger, and pierced the dagger into his body, making his blood gushing out.

The other few Jia Clan warriors exclaimed as they weren't even able to believe what they were seeing.

Surrounded by six of them altogether, Ji Hao actually got the chance to fight back, and facing their entirely sealed heavy armors that black long dagger of his, which looked not too sharp at all, had actually broken an armor and directly wounded a Jia Clan warrior's body.

Shocked by Ji Hao's move, those swords and machetes which were hacking towards Ji Hao, and the long spear which had been swishing towards him, paused briefly. Ji Hao took a deep breath, stretched his fiery wings and swiftly stepped back along with shreds of afterimages. At the same time, Mr Crow let out a long caw, while his claws suddenly expanded to zhang huge, directly piercing into a Jia Clan warrior's facial mask.

Those translucent, top-quality, red jade-like claws were wrapped in bright flames, and were emitting large amounts of fire sparks against the facial mask. Spell symbols shattered under Mr Crow's claws one after another and the half inch thick mask let out a shrill breaking noise, while been torn apart slowly.

Mr Crow's claws sank deep into the Jia Clan warrior's eye sockets, smashing the four huge eyeballs of his.

That Jia Clan warrior howled out in anger while stepping back with big steps. Another Jia Clan warrior with a machete rushed over, shielding him behind and letting him retreat. After he only took two steps back, streams of neurons and flesh began squirming in his eye sockets. Within Mr Crow's fiery light, the four eyeballs started growing back quickly.

However, the flame of the Golden Crow that was left in his eye sockets was still blazing, and the newly grown eyeballs were instantly burned, as the flame spread to wider parts of his face, burning large pieces of skins and flesh, emitting a horrible scent. The body of the Jia Clan warrior shook intensely in pain. Before

his eyeballs had grown back, he rushed back towards Ji Hao along with a dense puff of smoke wrapping around his face.

The pair of magic fiery snakes lying on Ji Hao's shoulders let out slight hissing sounds and spurted out slight beams of fiery lights, continuously burning the facial masks of the other few Jia Clan warriors. Those earth core magical flames spurted out by these snake were sticky and had an amazingly great heat, along with an incredibly strong scent of burning. Although these two snakes were still too young and too tiny and were not capable of breaking through the thick metal facial masks, they were more than able to block the eyesight of those Jia Clan warriors and slow them down with their amazing blazing flames and rolling smoke.

Man Man rushed over from the side. She remained completely silent and gritted her teeth hard. Aiming at one Jia Clan warrior, she raised her pair of gigantic hammers high and smashed down with all of her strength. Followed by two loud booms, that Jia Clan warrior's back armor was instantly shattered by the raging fire power that burst out of Man Man's hammers. Large amounts of metal fragments flew out and the Jia Clan warrior's back was broken into pieces. He then fell onto the ground with a weirdly twisted posture.

Man Man badly wounded one Jia Clan warrior with only one attack, but she had only broke his spine and slightly wounded his internal organs, which were still not enough to kill him.

Two other Jia Clan warriors raised their machete and sword simultaneously and swiftly hacked down towards Man Man's vital body parts. Without a second thought, they were all aimed accurately at Man Man's heart and neck, intending to cut her head off and smash her heart with one shot.

Man Man calmly raised her hammers, which were nearly as big as her entire body. After the pair of hammers were put straight on the ground, they became equal to two huge and extra solid shields, completely shielding Man Man. The sword and machete hacked on

the hammers altogether, letting out loud and high-pitched clashing noises that would make people's ear hurt. But Man Man was completely unharmed, and only took a few small steps backwards.

Yu Mu took this opportunity and hurriedly swung his arms. A stream of black liquid darted out directly into the broken armours that had been shattered by Man Man, and gushed into the wounds of the Jia Clan warrior's back. The horrible poison spread out inside his body in no time, along with which his back began corroding at a visible rate. Not long after that, the muscles on the back of the Jia Clan warrior had completely disappeared, and his bronze, translucent bones and squirming internal organs were all exposed.

Black poisonous smoke instantly gushed into his internal organs. This Jia Clan warrior howled out in pain, while struggling as he lifted up his facial mask, took out a bottle of detoxifying medicine intending to pour the full bottle of pills into his mouth. However, once he had taken the bottle out, an arrow swished over from afar, directly puncturing his wrist and deep into his mouth.

Right after that, the arrowhead exploded inside his mouth and a raging sphere of flame spurted out from all the openings of his body. That was an explosion flame arrow made by the master Magi tutors of the Magi Palace, and was amazingly destructive. The facial muscles of this Jia Clan warrior were even blown away and only the bronze translucent neck bones remained.

In spite of being injured so badly, this Jia Clan warrior still had his strangely strong life force left. He screamed hoarsely while struggling on the ground. With some difficulties, he pulled the arrow that was stuck in his throat out.

Shaosi appeared abruptly behind him just like an elf. She raised her spear and accurately knocked hard on his neck bone, breaking it right away. A huge head was sent flying up in the air and fell on the ground hundreds of zhang away, along with a series of clangs.

The howl instantly stopped. Finally, this Jia Clan warrior, who was wounded seriously in a row, had run out of the last slight wisp of his life force. He lied on the ground, twitching his headless body and losing his importance.

All these may seem to have cost a long span of time, but in fact, it had all happened within the blink of an eye. Ji Hao and his team managed to kill a Jia Clan warrior with their perfect cooperation, and when they made their moves, Taisi, who was still standing behind them, had already begun incanting a mysterious spell, creating streams of black mist, which then wrapped the remaining five Jia Clan warriors up.

Painful moaning continuously came out of the mist. The five Jia Clan warriors slowed suddenly down, and their skins began withering rapidly and their faces turned old as well. Their life force was quickly being drained, while a human-head-sized life-force sphere began quickly growing in front of Taisi.

Not too far away, shrill screams came out from the crowd of refugees. Even though Lang Li and his tens of companions had tried their bests to block those arrows, tens of arrows still managed to pierce into the crowd, easily killing over a hundred refugees.

Those arrows were shot out with incomparably great powers that those poor refugees who were shot by those arrows, even ended up exploding immediately. Blood and body parts spread all over the ground.

The young man, who had been yelling at Ji Hao before, watched his clansmen being shattered into pieces by these arrows. He painfully knelt on the ground and began screaming desperately.

Chapter 258: Close Combat

"Ahh!!!!"

The young man knelt on the ground, his whole body covered in blood. He raised his head and let out a sad and madly raging roar that was also filled with despair.

Ji Hao activated his power, letting out a growl that sounded like the roar of a dragon and rose directly into the air. Followed by huge amounts of afterimages, he rushed right into the five twitching Jia Clan warriors. His long black dagger was spurting raging and glowing flame flakes, as a thin line of spell symbols sparkled on the dagger's edge, letting out a dazzling blood-red light, which would make people quiver only by seeing it.

Ji Hao launched the Sky-Opening with all his power. The long dagger brought up an arc in the air, while his arm bones let out a slight creaking noise. In the meanwhile, he felt a great pain coming from his muscle and meridians, as if his body was about to be torn apart. When he had launched the Sky-Opening for the very first time back in the Southern Wasteland, all the bones of Ji Hao had been shattered into pieces. Now that he had already become a Senior Magus, although his body still couldn't hold off the counterforce of the Sky-Opening completely, the situation had become much, much better than then.

It seemed like a random swing of the dagger, but suddenly, the body of one Jia Clan warrior was split up along with a horrible bone-cracking noise. Ji Hao directly darted through the broken body of this Jia Clan warrior. Blood sprayed out like a small and gentle rain, while this Jia Clan warrior was sent up flying into the air in pieces. His broken armor then banged against the ground, even making the ground shake.

"Kill!"

Ji Hao roared like a beast. Taisi's spell was indeed terrifying, the

few Jia Clan warriors were nearly drained out of life force and their lives had been shortened by a large amount, while their ears and eyes became numb. This was the best opportunity for Ji Hao to kill these few enemies. If he failed to take it, bad changes could happen anytime.

"Kill!"

The few Jia Clan's warriors, whose life force were rapidly draining and both bodies and souls were quickly withering, let out great, thunderous growls as well. They couldn't believe that two of their fellows were killed by a bunch of kids in a row; those were two elite Senior Magus level warriors after all.

Ever since the Blood Moon army had set off, they had never encountered any difficulties all the way. These warriors, who had never been through such a great frustration, now suddenly burst their powers out and their withered bodies quickly recovered. Along with their growls, fresh blood boosted inside their bodies and their souls began blazing ragingly. It seemed that a magnificently great stream of power was sprouting inside each of their bodies and was about to gush out.

Their swords and machetes were raised high altogether, blocking Ji Hao's path from all directions while hacking towards Ji Hao's vital body parts with their full strength.

Ji Hao gritted his teeth, slightly turned his body and let a machete pierce into his right chest, which then came out from his back. A sword pierced into his left rib, nearly scratching his spine before coming out out his back. Ji Hao then took a deep breath, manipulated his muscles to block the two wounds. Except streams of blood that were brought out by those weapons, not a single drop of blood was shed from his wounds.

In the meanwhile, Ji Hao swiftly swung his black dagger forward, firmly blocking the long spear that was swishing towards his throat. Before Ji Hao made the next move, the Jia Clan warrior

with the spear had rushed over into the path of Ji Hao's long black dagger as if he didn't care about his own life at all. The Jia Clan warrior let Ji Hao's dagger pierce into the chest, so that he could suddenly coil his muscular and powerful arms around Ji Hao's arm and twist it at full strength.

With a proud and evil grin of this Jia Clan warriors, who had his arm coiled around Ji Hao's arm said, "Barbarians, lowly creatures, you will never be able to fight against the offsprings of our great Blood Moon. You're meant to be our slaves, generations and generations. Men work for us like cattle and horses, women give us pleasures."

"Pleasure, my ass!"

The blood vessels under the skin of Ji Hao's forehead popped out one after another. His arm was now coiled around by two huge arms that were as thick as his waist, and along with a series of loud bone cracking noises, the bones of Ji Hao's right arm were instantly twisted into pieces. With the heart-piercing pain, he cursed out.

A stream of light abruptly darted out from the middle of his eyebrows. The stone sword, roared out from Ji Hao's spiritual space without releasing even a single wisp of a sense of power. The stone sword brought up a seemingly soft light stream, curled around the four Jia Clan's warrior, then suddenly shrunk. The naturally formed holy weapon seemed to be simple and humble, but yet, it was irresistible. Under the sword light of the stone sword, the bodies of the four Jia Clan warriors were as vulnerable as pieces of cake. Without even the slightest sound, the four bodies were torn into pieces and spread out on the ground.

Gasping for air, Ji Hao let the stone sword fly back into his forehead then patted the storage bag tied around his waist. Along with his move, three flying daggers and two flying swords darted out at a lightning speed, transforming into five cold beams of light and flashed across the river, directly towards the Yu Clan young

man, whose eyes popped out in shock.

"Die!" Yelled Ji Hao.

He injected all of his Golden Dan power into those flying swords and daggers. With great power those daggers and swords dived straight down for the air with three zhang long beams of light tailing them. They were like five white rainbows pouring down from the sky, and instantly approached the head of the Yu Clan young man.

"Damn it!" Four Jia Clan warriors who were guarding beside the Yu Clan young man, moved simultaneously.

A Jia Clan warrior raised a wall-like huge shield in his hand. The zhang wide, two zhang tall and three feet, six-inch thick shield firmly shielded the Yu Clan young man behind it. Ji Hao's flying daggers and swords hacked on the shield, burst out large amounts of fire sparks, but failed to leave even a slight mark on the shield.

Two Jia Clan warriors holding machetes suddenly opened their eight eyes, while their skin suddenly changed color. Their skin color darkened rapidly, from a weird cyan-grey to a bronze-like, dark purple. In the meanwhile, their bodies began expanding, from over four meter tall to five meters tall. Moreover, countless spell symbols emerged from their dark purple skins, and wisps of visible, dark-purple smoke continuously spurted out from their heads.

They stepped across the river and rushed towards Ji Hao along with thunderous footsteps. Judging from the sense of power that was being released by them and their movements, it was not hard to tell that they were three or even four times more powerful than the first batch of Jia Clan warriors who had launched the attack first.

'Can't fight them head on', thought Ji Hao. He gasped deeply, gnashed his teeth and pulled out the sword and machete that were still stuck in his body. Blood was boiling inside his body. Along

with swooshing blood flowing sounds, his wounds healed themselves within the span of one breath, without leaving even a scar.

He raised his right arm with some force and along with another series of bone creaking noises, his bones, muscles and meridians of his right arm recovered fully as well. Slightly twisting his arm, his joints let out waves of creaking noise. He raised his hand and caught the black dagger, which automatically darted back to him. After that, he growled out again and walked towards the two Jia Clan warriors who were approaching quickly with big steps. At the same time, he yelled out at Lang Li, "What the hell are you doing by standing there?! Take those people and go! Go go go!!"

Lang Li immediately let out a shout, yelled at his fellows, telling them to bring those kids, elderly people and women away. As for himself, with loyalty, he lifted up his axe and rushed over, leaping high into the air and hacking down towards the head of one Jia Clan warriors.

"You weak chicken-like barbarians," said the Jia Clan warrior while conveniently swinging his machete sideways. A beam of bright light that was emitted by a line of spell symbols on his weapon suddenly flashed across the edge of the machete. At the following moment, Lang Li's axe was sliced into two by the gigantic yet extremely sharp machete, right after which, the machete swept across his waist and cut him into two as well.

Lang Li let out a hoarse scream while his body thudded against the ground in two and began twitching madly.

Ji Hao growled out while he darted up to Lang Li, swiftly waved his long black dagger and tried to block the two Jia Clan warriors from moving forward as much as he could. At the same time, his foot-tip moved as fast as the thunder, kicking the two parts of Lang Li's body flying through the air backwards.

Yu Mu cursed out while leaping into the air and catching Lang

Li's body parts. He then immediately joined them back together and hurriedly took out a bottle of life-saving ointment, which was especially concocted by the master Magi tutors of the Magi Palace, and spread a thick layer of it on Lang Li's wound.

Large clouds of blood-red smoke rose from around Lang Li's broken waist, while he let out waves of howls in pain. But after only the span of two breaths, he leapt back up from the ground as if he had never been cut into two.

At this moment, Ji Hao's black dagger unexpectedly missed its target, while silently, the long machete held by a Jia Clan warrior left two deep wounds on his body, which even reached his internal organs.

Chapter 259: Blood Power

"Run! Run, run, run!!"

In the woods, Feng Xing was yelling. Along with shrill swishing sound, the arrows with spell symbols of terror magic were continuously shot out by him, deep into the river. The terror magic was activated right after the arrows were shot. Streams of freezing magic power spread out towards all directions, which made the over a hundred slaves who had been screaming and attempting to rush across the river pause suddenly, after which they fled away like rats that were burning by a pot of boiling water.

The group of slaves had been thrown into chaos by the terror magic. Feng Xing didn't stop and shot tens of more arrows from the woods. Every single arrow pierced accurately through the necks of two slaves. Within the blink of an eye, seventy to eighty monkey-like slaves had fallen on the ground while their blood was spurting; a small section of the river had even been dyed red by their blood.

Single handedly, Feng Xing had stopped those slaves that were coming across the river, earning a short yet precious span of time for those refugees so they could run away. Lang Li cursed loudly. He realized completely that he was far from being powerful enough to get involved in a fight of such nature, therefore he immediately rushed towards the refugees and pushed them into the woods, even kicking the asses of some of the slower kids.

The young man who was kneeling on the ground and howling in sadness abruptly raised his head and yelled at Ji Hao with his face covered in tears and eyes filled with anger, "Why didn't you save them?! Why did you watch them die?!"

Lang Li snorted speechlessly, threw a heavy slap and picked up that stupid kid, who didn't even realize the emergency of the

situation, carrying him up and rushed into the woods.

Ji Hao had no time to listen to his crap at all, he had to put all of his attention on the two Jia Clan warriors. His wounds quickly healed themselves. However, these two Jia Clan warriors were extremely powerful and skillful. Every single attack was accurately aimed at Ji Hao's vital body parts. An ordinary warrior would have been chopped into pieces by the two of them long ago.

Fortunately, Ji Hao had released all of his spiritual power and was able to clearly perceive every single move they made. Even the slightest move couldn't remain hidden from Ji Hao's eyes. He had also activated the Gold Crow Pupil, which allowed him to barely see every move of those two Jia Clan warriors. With both his spiritual power and his eyes, Ji Hao managed to dodge tens of deadly attacks that were launched by both of them.

The long sword swung across the air once again and another beam of light suddenly flashed right beside Ji Hao's neck. Ji Hao bent his waist right on time and dodged it. The fine hairs on his neck were even shaved off by that beam of sword light, which showed clearly how sharp and accurate that sword was. Ji Hao could even feel his muscles beginning to twitch in nervousness.

The three metal spiders, which had been standing on the other side of the river, abruptly let a high-pitched scream out. They lifted their heads up and let out hundreds of fist-sized metal balls. Those metal balls darted towards this side of the river bank at an incredibly high speed and along with a great power. The range of attack covered Ji Hao, Man Man, Shaosi and Yu Mu.

Man Man grabbed her pair of hammers and intended to rush up and help Ji Hao, but those metal balls suddenly darted over like a heavy rain. She could only raise both of the hammers to shield herself and Shaosi, who was behind her.

The faintly glowing metal balls clashed against Man Man's hammerheads and suddenly exploded; a small sphere of flame

instantly shrouded an area that had a radius of over a zhang. Although the attack range of each metal ball was not too wide, within it, the lethality of the metal ball equaled a full-strength attack of an elementary level Senior Magus.

Man Man's body stayed perfectly still, only one or two small bombs would not be able to make her move even an inch.

However, right after that tens of bombs swooshed over and although Man Man possessed a terrifyingly great strength, her tender face still became twisted under the continuous explosion of those bombs. She even showed her teeth when she stepped back quickly.

"Ji Hao! Be careful!!" Even though she was busy at dealing with those bombs at the moment, Man Man still took a chance and glanced at the other side of the river, then yelled out loud.

Earlier, the Yu Clan young man had four Jia Clan warriors staying beside him. One of them raised a wall-like shield and protected him, while the other two leapt down, went across the river and were fighting against Ji Hao. The fourth one had now pulled a human-leg-thick gigantic bow open, with a huge arrow that could even be used as a spear put on that human-thumb-thick string. At the moment, the arrow was quickly absorbing natural power from the air.

Man Man yelled out, and the Jia Clan warriors with the longbow let out a laughter on the other side of the river, then suddenly loosened his fingers. The spear-like arrow let out a thunderous boom while tearing the air apart and darting towards Ji Hao's heart.

The two Jia Clan warriors who had been fighting against Ji Hao swung their weapons down timely on both the left and right side of Ji Hao, blocking his way and disabling him from dodging the arrow. At the same time, the two Jia Clan warriors simultaneously twisted their bodies slightly, clearing the way for the arrow to

pierce through Ji Hao's heart.

The arrow swooshed in the air and the Yu Clan young man, who stayed at the other side of the river, had a darkened face right now as he nodded with satisfaction. This time, Ji Hao would certainly die.

"Shell!" At this fatal moment, Ji Hao pointed his finger at the middle of his eyebrows. The turtle shell that was gifted by Gui Ling, and was the turtle shell shelled off by herself when she was young, flew out from Ji Hao's forehead along with a loud, ocean wave-like sound, and immediately transformed into over ten streams of black smoke, which wrapped around Ji Hao.

Followed by a few muffled metal clashing sounds, a smoothly crafted thick armor appeared on Ji Hao's body. That armor looked simple yet solid, covering his entire body. He raised both of his hands in front of his chest, pushed the air with his palms, and turned his palm up towards the air. Instantly, columns of water mist rose from his palms, within which, a sphere of natural water essence power emerged, quickly condensing into a turtle shell-form water shield.

The gigantic arrow darted over and bumped right into the water shield. Along with a sizzling noise, the arrowhead pierced into the water shield, inch by inch, but the water shield grew thicker, inch by inch as well.

The Jia Clan warrior, who had shot this arrow, was at peak senior level, and this arrow shot out by him with all of his power was capable of seriously wounding even the most powerful Senior Magus, if that Senior Magus wasn't cautious enough. Nevertheless, Ji Hao didn't use too much power; he simply activated this turtle shell given by Gui Ling, which easily held this scary arrow off.

The Yu Clan young man and the other Jia Clan warriors who had watched this happen, were all stunned, and began cursing in both anger and shame.

The two Jia Clan warriors, who had turned their bodies and cleared the path for the arrow, hurriedly waved their weapons and tried to take the best position once again. But how could Ji Hao let them?

He suddenly roared out while the stone sword abruptly appeared in his hand. He then swung his left arm. The stone sword brought up a faint stream of light and swept sideways across the bodies of the two Jia Clan warriors.

"Weak barbarians," the two Jia Clan warriors didn't give a damn about Ji Hao's stone sword, puffed out their chest carelessly and stepped forward.

Their armors were top-quality stuff, which were specially crafted by Xiu Clan master craftsman of the Blood Moon. The power of a Senior Magus had no way of possibly break in them. As long as they could hold Ji Hao's sword off, their machetes would be able to chop Ji Hao's head off the very next moment.

Ji Hao waved the stone sword at a lightning speed, and the faint and gentle sword light slightly swept across the waists of the two Jia Clan warriors.

The stone sword was incomparably sharp, and even though large amounts of spell symbols had already released a bright dazzling light on those armors, those spell symbols instantly shattered when the sword light touched them. The two top-quality, thick and solid armors were destroyed by the stone sword as easy a hot knife cutting butter, and the two powerful elite Jia Clan warriors were chopped into two parts each. This all only because they had underestimated their enemy.

"No!! You lowly barbarians! You bloody damn ants! You lowly creatures!! You wild things!" The Yu Clan young man began screaming on the other side of the river.

Suddenly, he opened his erect eye and a sphere of blood-red light started to rapidly rotate inside it.

Ji Hao, Man Man, Yu Mu, Shaosi and Taisi, suddenly felt that their bodies had become very heavy. Soon after that, their blood began boiling inside their bodies.

"Stain."

The Yu Clan young man slowly pointed his finger at Ji Hao and the other teammates, while the blood-red light in his erect eye formed into a strange spell symbol.

The bodies of Ji Hao and the others quivered suddenly. Immediately after that, they felt their blood start corrupting inside their bodies at a terrifying speed and soon, a horrible foul-smelling scent came out from each of their bodies and spread out in the air.

Chapter 260: Evil Blood

Ji Hao suddenly lost his eyesight, his body felt numb and softened, nearly falling on the ground with his face down.

Not only he, even Man Man, the little girl had the power of the god-kind, her face was now deadly pale, and her tiny body was shaking, seemingly completely out of her control. Her cherry-like lips now looked as white as two pieces of paper. The corrosive blood quickly spread out inside her body, devouring her meridians and corrupting her internal organs. It even began attacking her bones, attempting to corrode her bone marrow as well.

"Retreat!!" Ji Hao decided immediately and shouted out.

Large streams of flame swooshed out from his Magus Acupoints. Those scorching-hot Gold Crow flames contained a natural positive power that could perish all kinds of evilness in this world, gushing into all of his blood vessels and meridians. With difficulty it fought against the rampant corrosive blood inside his body. Black corroded blood was being burned into puffs of smoke and was rising from his pores, till finally, his extremely softened limbs regained some of its strength back.

"Retreat?" While the young man of the Yu Clan laughed hideously on the other side of the river, he said, "You are all cursed by my blood magic, you will all stay here, forever... Die! Kill them! Those two young women, I want the older one and save the younger one to get a good price!"

"The underworld, reverse, replenish lives with lives."

Taisi stood far behind the other teammates. He took a deep breath and slightly waved his bone cane, along with which, the sphere of life force that he had just drained out from the few Jia Clan warriors quickly transformed into a few red beams of light and darted into the bodies of his teammates.

Ji Hao suddenly felt a boiling hot and thriving life force gushing into his body through his head, and instantly his body was filled with strength, making him even more powerful than he usually was. Although the corrosive blood was still madly corrupting the fresh blood inside his body, thanks to the extra influx of life force, Ji Hao's life force was doubled in amount. His Gold Crow flame had been fighting ceaselessly against the power of the corrosive blood inside his body. At the moment, Ji Hao was at the peak of his level.

"I will remember you." Ji Hao pointed at the Yu Clan young man on the other side of the river and said with his teeth gnashing. He thought about what he had read from those books, regarding all kinds of special abilities that the people of the Yu Clan, who had Blood Moon's bloodline.

Blood Moon represented the power of blood and dark curses in the power systems of the Yu Clan, and was the evilest one amongst all three 'Suns' and the nine 'Moons', and the hardest to deal with. The power of their curses was extremely hard to be lustrated completely. More horribly, the evil blood power could hide in human bloodlines and be passed down through generations.

Quite a few thriving and powerful human clans, which had populations of over ten million, were extinct because they were sneakily attacked by the Blood Moon with evil blood curses, which contaminated their bloodlines and eventually wiped them out. Apart from these few big-scale clans, the other clans who accepted intermarriages between themselves and the few large-scale clans had all lost the majority of their clansmen because of those blood curses. Since then, those few clans quickly declined and even after thousands of years, the powers of the blood curses still lingered in their bloodline and never gave them a chance to rise again.

Being cursed by the Blood Moon's blood power was a great trouble that would bring a headache to any Magus. Ji Hao had the Gold Crow flame protecting him, which could naturally suppress

all kinds of evil powers, but Shaosi, Taisi, Yu Mu and Feng Xing were all in a big trouble. As for Man Man, she didn't need to be worried about it at all. With her current power, any ordinary blood curse wouldn't be able to do any real harm to her.

Ji Hao knew that before they came to this Chi Ban Mountain and joined the army, Zhu Rong had given tons of powerful treasures, that were quite precious even for himself, as Man Man's protection.

"Man Man! Run!" Ji Hao especially let out a shout at Man Man, and at the same time, Mr Crow spurted out a great stream of Gold Crow flame directly on Man Man's body. Man Man's entire body began blazing ragingly, right after which, dense black smoke rose up.

While she was preparing to take out the magic talisman that was specially crafted by Zhu Rong himself, and to cast the blood curse away for her teammates and herself, she abruptly paused.

A chuckle that sounded like someone couldn't hold from laughing anymore came from an unknown source. Man Man suddenly tightened her tender face, made an extremely ill, even dying face, carried her huge hammers and rushed towards the woods, along with loud, booming footsteps, while yelling loudly at Shaosi.

"Sister Shaosi! Run, run faster! Ah, why does Man Man feel her legs are so soft? Run! We're gonna die!"

When she ran past Shaosi, she conveniently carried the long handles of one of her hammers under her arm, and grabbed Shaosi's hand, darting into the woods as fast as a gust of wind. As for Shaosi, she grabbed Taisi's neck and threw him onto the back of the black tiger.

The purely black tiger hadn't caught the attention of that Yu Clan young man, therefore, it had luckily dodged the blood curse. Taisi sat on its back and the tiger instantly roared out and rushed

towards the woods behind Man Man and Shaosi. While running, the tiger began wagging its long tail as well, whipping the stones on the river bank and making them fly randomly towards all directions.

"Bloody big cat!!" Ji Hao and Yu Mu had fled towards the woods as well; however, the two of them were unfortunately right behind the tiger.

God knew where this shameless tiger had learned this life-saving trick - wagging its tail when running for life. The stones whipped flying by the tiger's tail continuously bumped against Ji Hao and Yu Mu's bodies. Although they didn't feel any pain, it still was truly disgusting.

"Ji Hao, where the hell did you catch this bastard cat?" Yu Mu could only raise his huge pot, and wore it on his head as a helmet, letting those flying stones loudly clang against his pot.

Ji Hao didn't respond, only grinned and showed his teeth. He was still wearing the turtle shell armor given by Gui Ling. Those flying stones all shattered against his armor and were unable to even leave a single scratch on it.

A horribly swooshing sound came from behind them. The Jia Clan warrior, who had shot out that huge arrow towards Ji Hao just now, let out whole thirty six arrows. Ji Hao opened his arms and shielded Yu Mu behind him. Those arrows clanged against his armor, after which they were all twisted into pieces by the water shield, which had quickly wrapped around his body.

The great shock-waves that were brought up by those arrows allowed Ji Hao to rush faster. He pushed on Yu Mu's back as well and sped him up by a few times.

Hundreds of slaves followed up right behind them, while screaming loudly. Those weak things enjoyed screaming and yelling the most, and were all focused on Man Man and Shaosi.

Their master had said that he wanted Shaosi and Man Man to be captured alive, and these lowly slaves would never give up on any chance they got to earn the satisfaction of their masters.

"You bunch of bloody stupid reckless things!" Yu Mu cursed in an annoyed fashion, while quickly swinging his arms and spreading out a handful of powder backwards, as he chanted a spell with a deep voice.

The river water suddenly rose up into the air and turned into a rain and fell back from the air. The rainwater was a scary green color that instantly showered on the bodies of those slaves, who had no chance of resisting. Their skin corrupted at a visible rate. Large clouds of green smoke rose from their bodies. Hundreds of slaves howled out in pain, while struggling on the ground. Within the span of a few breathes all of them had turned into puddles of sticky, black blood.

"My money!"

The Yu Clan young man, who had stayed on the other side of the river, popped out all three of his eyes and screamed out in a dramatic voice.

He didn't care about the lives of these slaves at all, but he cared a lot about his properties. These slaves were all his personal properties, and were hundreds of Novice-Magus-level slaves! Yu Mu killed them all with only a handful of powder. He began wondering if this war would cost him more than he had thought he could earn.

"Go! Kill them all!!" screamed the Yu Clan young man while raising his arm.

From a mountain top behind him, a blood-red flag flew over quickly.

The main army of the Blood Moon was approaching quickly.

Chapter 261: Snipe Kill

Clang! Clang! Clang!

The three gigantic metallic spiders quickly moved across the river and began chasing after Ji Hao and his teammates.

Their long and metallic feet clanged against the blood-red ground, creating fire sparks against the solid rocks. They moved as fast as a fierce wind, closely following behind Ji Hao and the others.

Now and then, one metallic spider would stop abruptly, stick its thin and sharp feet deeply into the ground, and steadily support its heavy body, while opening its huge jaws and showing a human-leg-thick triangular pyramid-shaped crystal pipe.

Countless blood-red spell symbols were rotating inside that crystal pipe, along with which, power of huge pieces of magic crystals that were inlaid in the stomachs of these metal spiders were quickly drawn out, and quickly formed into a human-head-sized flame spheres on the top of the pipe.

Followed by a thunderous boom, the metallic spider's body would move quickly backwards, while its feet scratched the ground and sent up clouds of dirt. The small ball of flame darted out, with a palm-sized burning-red spell symbol quickly sparkling in the core of the ball of flame. At the same time the natural powers contained in the surrounding mountains and rivers were also rapidly being absorbed by the ball of flame.

The small ball of flame flew at an amazingly high speed and approached Ji Hao and the others within the blink of an eye.

Every time when a ball approached them, Ji Hao would turn around, open his arm and bump against the ball of flame. Great water essence power contained in his turtle shell would release on time and form a thick layer of water shield, protecting Ji Hao's

body. The ball of flame would fly against the water shield and the fire power contained in it clash against the turtle shell's water power, releasing large clouds of steam and beams of fiery light that would instantly rise into the air.

Then the ball of flame would explode, emitting great fiery light that would cover an area with a radius of nearly a hundred zhang. Similar to the small metallic balls that those metallic spiders let out, these balls of flame attack range would be magically controlled and be kept within the radius of a hundred zhang. The waves of hot air and raging flames would never pass the boundary of this area, not even for an inch.

However, the relatively smaller attacking range raised the efficiency of the explosion. Sticky flame roared and rolled within a hundred zhang in radius, and even the special blood-red colored rock ground of the Chi Ban Mountain was melted into lava. A thick layer of lava flowed on the ground, glowing like the glaze on the surface of porcelain.

The air became boiling hot. Fortunately, the natural water essence power contained in Ji Hao's turtle shell could particularly suppress all kinds of fire powers.

The thick shield of water emitted freezing air that would collide against the flames created by the exploding fireballs. After the span of a few breaths, the hot air dissipated gradually. Each time, Ji Hao would then turn and continue running. But, the three metallic spiders would also get the chance the get closer to Ji Hao and his teammates after each time.

"Lowly barbarians, you can't run!" The Yu Clan young man riding on his mount rushed closely behind Ji Hao and his team, while being followed by the remaining two Jia Clan warriors, and a large group of slave warriors and slaves. He was cursing viciously and it seemed like he still was angry for those hundreds of slaves which were poisoned to their death by Yu Mu.

"Kid, the armor on you looks quite nice. It should worth a good price, enough to trade for two thousand slaves." The Yu Clan young man yelled his judgment regarding Ji Hao's gears loudly, "As for you, your skull will become part of mine personal collection."

Laughing proudly out loud, the young man continued, "A barbarian kid possessing the power of an adult warrior, your skull must be beautiful. I will let my craftsman emboss many exquisite patterns on it, and inlay the most precious gemstones in it to worship the greatest, noblest Blood Moon. Your skull will certainly bring up the interests of those beautiful and noble ladies."

Ji Hao silently rushed forward, while the Gold Crow flame blazed inside his body, continuously burning the crazily spreading corrupting blood power and trying to purify his body.

This damned Blood Moon curse was so annoying. After only ten minutes, the newly grown spirit blood, transformed from the life force that Taisi had sent into his body, was all corrupted by the dark Blood Moon power. At the moment, Ji Hao felt as if his legs had softened again and he didn't know how much further he could make.

Flicking his finger, Ji Hao drew out a black iron tablet. That was his ID tablet, given by Huaxu Lie, which represented his identification as a soldier of Huaxu Lie's special army. On the other side, this tablet was also a magic tool that could be used to connect his fellow soldiers.

A black light of a squared feet area was sparkling faintly on the tablet, within which over thirty light spots could be found clearly. Every single white spot represented one soldier of the special army. These people had divided themselves into seven small teams and were distributed in the mountain area, thousand miles around Ji Hao.

Slightly flicking the tablet with his finger, Ji Hao injected a stream of power into it. His power contained a short message,

quickly spreading out towards all directions. In the meanwhile, the white light spot that represented Ji Hao had turned red on the black tablet.

Ji Hao informed all his comrades that he could contact, though the tablet and told them that his team was being chased by an army of non-human race monsters. He also informed them the rough number of enemies to the others.

Once the other teams received Ji Hao's message, they would spread the information out immediately to everyone they could reach. Within the span of at most ten breaths, the main camp of this special army would get the message. After that, once the information provided by Ji Hao was verified, Ji Hao would be awarded with a certain amount of credit points.

Bang, Bang, Bang!

Three balls of flame darted together towards him, along with waves of horribly hot air.

Ji Hao sighed slightly, turned around while a dense thick watery mist spurted out from his armor and condensed into an over ten-zhang wide water shield, protecting Ji Hao behind it, right in front of the three balls of flame. The balls of flame exploded, and a great shock wave stuck on Ji Hao's chest like a cannonball, which although was being protected by the water shield, still made him stagger tens of steps back.

From within a dense fiery light, three huge arrows swished over. This time, the arrowheads were shining with a yellow light.

Ji Hao's armor could condense water essence power into a powerful water shield and hold off the explosions of those balls of flames, therefore, the Yu Clan young man had ordered the Jia Clan warrior with the bow to shoot these specially crafted arrows. Each contained a great earth power, and launched a double attack onto Ji Hao. Suppressing the water power with the earth power was the perfect choice.

Followed by a thunderous boom, the water shield suddenly shook, and the three arrows exploded. Dense streams of earth power struck on Ji Hao's body, forcing him to step back again.

"Kill him!" The Yu Clan young man growled out, while turning his head back and taking a quick glance. The blood-red flag, which had been hundreds of miles away earlier, was now only over ten miles away from him. He could even clearly see another Yu Clan warrior, who was sitting on his mount and wearing a luxurious armor, rushing in the front of the army.

"A bunch of bastards, intending to seize mine credit!" cursed the Yu Clan young man. He then gnashed his teeth and suddenly opened his erect eye, from which, a blood-red lightning bolt darted out and directly struck against Ji Hao's body.

A sizzling noise instantly came out Ji Hao's skin. Ji Hao felt that his body had slightly gone numb, right after which countless tiny blood-red electric sparks burst out against his skin. A terrifyingly great shock wave sent him flying backwards. His feet scratched the ground and left a deep and long ditch in front of him. He then heavily thudded against Yu Mu's chubby back, causing both of them to fall on the ground, rolling like a giant watermelon.

"Hahaha! You're all mine! None of you can run!" The Yu Clan young man proudly slapped his mount, abruptly rushing out of the protection of the two Jia Clan warriors, for over a hundred zhang far, then pulled out the sword tied around his waist and intended to chop Ji Hao's head off himself.

Feng Xing, who had patiently been hiding all the time, finally made his move.

A cold dazzling beam of light suddenly flashed across the air, and the armor worn by the Yu Clan's young man immediately let out a bright layer of light. However, in the next moment, a few spell symbols on his helmet near his forehead abruptly shattered, along with which, a piercing shining golden arrow pierced through his

thick and exquisite armor, directly into his erect eye, then deeply into his brain.

Followed by an abrupt boom, the head of the Yu Clan young man exploded, and his tall and slim body was sent up into the air, then thudded back against the ground.

Chapter 262: Magic Bow

"Splendid job Feng Xing!! The best wine back in Pu Ban City!! My treat!!"

Ji Hao laughed out loud while his body was still wrapped in popping blood-red electric sparks and his head was still buzzing and dizzy, yet, he waving his fist hard in the air.

Yu Mu supported his body painfully with his arms while screaming, "Get the hell off my body! Damn it!! My fat! Ouch! My fat! Fat!!"

Ji Hao was sent flying by the blood-red lightning bolt launched by the Yu Clan young man, and had bumped right into Yu Mu's soft and chubby back. Yu Mu's thick layer of fat offset over eighty percent of the power that was contained in that lightning bolt, therefore, those blood-red electric sparks didn't cause any harm to Ji Hao, but had nearly knocked poor Yu Mu out.

A loud sizzling noise came from Yu Mu's body. A huge area around his waist was charred black, and those thin blood-red electric sparks were still madly drilling into his skin. These blood-red electrical sparks activated the blood curse that lingered inside his body, releasing even greater power.

Yu Mu's skin quickly turned deadly pale, his lips were even becoming dark gradually, which was a sign of that his spirit blood was withering rapidly.

Ji Hao slapped hard on Yu Mu's body and injected a stream of Gold Crow Flame into it. The stream of flame drilled into Yu Mu's body like a living snake. Yu Mu gritted his teeth and let the stream of flame quickly gush around his body. Wherever the stream of flame passed, the corroded blood was evaporated into black smoke and puffed out from his nose, mouth and ears.

"Hold on! Until they came over!" said Ji Hao in a deep voice,

while putting the black tablet back into this sleeve.

"Just a second... a tiny, little, short second! My fat! My poor dear fat!" complained Yu Mu. He rubbed his own waist in misery and large amounts of carbonized skin turned into black ash and fell off from his body, showing a bowl-sized huge wound.

Then he took two pills that were concocted with the purpose of replenishing lost blood. He gnashed his teeth and struggled back up from the ground, while continued moving forward along the valley. While running, Yu Mu's fat shook intensely as newly-grown fat and skin quickly sealed the wound.

Inside the woods, Feng Xing, whose whole body was soaked in perspiration, waved his fist, gnashed his teeth, and looked at the headless dead body of the Yu Clan young man, letting out a laugh, then murmured a word.

"One!"

The old longbow, which was claimed to be a magic bow by Feng Xing himself, looked quite simple. It even could be considered a roughly crafted normal and ordinary branch. But at this moment, that old bow was glowing with a beautiful light and the natural and simple shaped bow had now turned translucent, as if it was carved out of a fine jade piece.

The bow string, which normally looked like three thin dry grasses twisted together, now seemed like transparent tendons of a dragon, reflecting the sunrays and releasing a faint light. It seemed also as if a very mysterious dim light was flowing around inside the string.

The arrow that had punctured the armor of the Yu Clan young man and had blown off his head like a watermelon was now deeply stuck in the ground. Countless thin golden spell symbols flew continuously out from the arrow. After the last golden spell symbol dissipated in the air, the arrow turned back into a normal, an ordinary wooden arrow. Suddenly, the arrow popped and

turned into a puff of ash, falling onto the soil.

This was one of the most ordinary wooden arrows and one could buy a thousand of them in the Pu Ban City with a jade coin. The arrowhead was forged by steel with the arrow body carved out of normal ironwood. However, when Feng Xing shot this arrow out with all of his power, on the inherited old longbow, countless spell symbols were automatically injected into the arrow, turning this arrow into a magically sharp one that could easily pierce into any armor.

"Ah! God damn it!" Feng Xing waved his hand and complained in a deep voice, "With my current power, I can shoot three arrows out like this at the most. Then I'll just die!"

Gasping deeply, Feng Xing yelled out aloud, "Only wine is far from enough bro! Oi, Ji Hao! Why don't you treat me in the Regretting Beauty? I heard that place is filled with fun! I've never been there yet!"

Ji Hao's face instantly turned dark. He remained silent and kept rushing forward. Regretting Beauty? Of course he knew what that crazy place truly sold. Ying Yunpeng's nephew died nowhere else but in that place, accidentally killed by a little girl who sucked out all of his blood during sexual intercourse.

Yu Mu let out a simple grin and said, "Eh? Regretting Beauty? I heard that all of their dishes are made from meat of Senior Magus level beasts! Ji Hao, why don't you invite me as well?!"

Man Man carried her pair of hammers and was running at the front. Hearing the conversation between the boys, she excitedly leapt up and yelled out, "Good, good! Ji Hao's treat! We will all go together! Shaosi! Let's go together! Regretting Beauty? Such an interesting name!"

Shaosi's bland face became colder and colder. She slightly turned her head and took a quick glance at the woods, shook her head then said blandly, "Man Man, don't listen to their nonsense. Hm?

Already?"

Ji Hao and his team had been running quite fast, but the Blood Moon army moved even faster.

Over two hundred elite Yu Clan warriors had already caught on. Seeing the dead body of the Yu Clan young man, they yelled to stop their riding beasts one after another. They looked at their fellow warrior, whose head had been blown up, with weird smiles on their faces.

The two remaining Jia Clan warriors knelt on the ground, staring at their master's dead body without any expressions on their faces. As for those slave warriors and slaves, they knelt on the ground as well, while quivering intensely, not even daring to raise their heads.

"According to the law, your master has already died, but you're alive, you have all committed a crime of death!" said one of the Yu Clan warriors, whose status seemed to be the highest amongst all those people, and was wearing the most luxurious armor, which reflected the sun rays into a bright huge sphere of light around his body.

"However, since we're facing a great war, I can spare you from death. Are you...willing to swear your allegiance to me?" this Yu Clan young man stretched his hand out with a smile towards the two Jia Clan warriors and continued, "Come under my command, I will spare you from your death punishment and will take you under my protection. This also goes for these lowly slaves, they will live as well."

Judging from the bronze-purple skin of these two Jia Clan warriors, they both were elite warriors among Jia Clan warriors, who were called 'big warriors'. They were as powerful as peak-level Senior Magi, and were quite valuable. Normally, to have a few warriors like these would cost Yu Clan people quite a big price and quite many efforts. But now, their master had died in battle and

they were still alive, which meant that they had already committed a dead crime. Therefore, only if any Yu Clan man was willing to give them an olive branch to hold on, they would grip it without any hesitation.

"You respectful lord, we are certainly willing to contribute all of our loyalty and strength to you!" The two Jia Clan warriors, who were kneeling on the ground with faces looking like the dead, seemed to have suddenly gotten their life force back. They instantly gave a grin, then made their vows to their new master.

Their original master had died in battle, and if they returned to the Blood Moon like this, not only would the Blood Moon execute them according to the law, their killed master's family also would never let them live. But as long as another Yu Clan lord was willing to take them and protect them, all that wouldn't be a problem at all!

Such things were more than common in the Yu Dynasty. Not to mention these guards, warriors and slaves, when a Yu Clan man died in battle, everything he had when he was alive, even his wives and children, would be taken over by other Yu Clan people, and a lot of the Yu Clan men would be more than willing to do that.

All these were witnessed by their great Blood Moon, and were all allowed by their law!

The Yu Clan man, who had just taken the two Jia Clan big warriors over, let out a satisfied grin while the other Yu Clan young men stared at him, eyes filled with jealousy.

Within the woods, Feng Xing pulled his old longbow open once again, then spat a mouthful of spirit blood on the bowstring.

Chapter 263: The Bug Formation

A magical and beautiful stream of light flowed on the surface of Feng Xing's longbow. Feng Xing had injected almost all of his power into the bow already, just for this shot.

With Feng Xing's current power, he could only shoot three arrows like the one he had used to kill the Yu Clan young man before, in the period of one day. Except, the shot he was about to make this time possessed the combined power of his last two possible shots into one arrow.

With the double amount of power, the golden glowing arrow directly transformed into a beam of light and then zipped out many times faster than the last one had, and was over ten times more destructive. The bowstring shook intensely, cutting all five fingers of Feng Xing's right hand, shedding large drops of blood on the magically glowing bow.

Taking a deep breath, Feng Xing didn't even have enough time to check the result of his shot, turned around at his highest speed and dashed away. Cyan streams of wind rose behind his back, turning into a pair of cyan-colored wind wings, which were slightly attached onto his back.

Tens of shreds of afterimage flashed across the air and Feng Xing disappeared in the woods after rising and falling for a few times.

The arrow was shot out like a lightning bolt, as if it was the sign of death.

The Yu Clan man, who had just taken the two big Jia Clan warriors over, and was enjoying the envious stares of his fellows, smiled and was about to say something. Suddenly, his armor began shining and countless complicated spell symbols spurted out from it, transforming into twelve blood-red light chains, swiftly rotating around his body along with an ear piercing metal clashing noise.

The golden arrow darted over like a sharp beam of light, while those blood-red chains bumped against it one after another.

Blood-red and golden light spots burst out around the young man of the Yu Clan. Along with a series of creaking noise, those blood-red long chains shattered one after another and the golden arrow continued moving forward and in a moment approached the face of the Yu Clan man.

The Yu Clan man let out a desperate scream. A blood-red, round jade talisman was already in his hand, which he only needed to crumble. This magic talisman made by an elder of his family would release a peak Magus King level protection for him.

Although this shot, launched by Feng Xing with all of his power, was incredibly destructive, it would never manage to break through a peak Magus King level protection.

However, just after having gripped the talisman in his hand, the arrow pierced deeply into the erect eye on his forehead. The three foot and six inch long arrow made from ordinary ironwood and a steel arrowhead, which one could buy a thousand for a single jade coin, deeply pierced into the head of this Yu Clan man, after which, a tight sphere of golden light suddenly exploded.

The head of the Yu Clan man was blown up abruptly and the golden arrow darted out through his helmet, poking into the heart of another Yu Clan young man, standing right behind him.

"Great Blood Moon!" All the other Yu Clan young men screamed out loud, popping out their eyes and watching the golden arrow pierce through another exquisite armor that was made by the master craftsman of the Blood Moon, sending the Yu Clan young, man flying for over a hundred zhang far with a blue face.

The golden arrow let out a loud buzzing noise while vibrating intensely, nailing the Yu Clan young man, whose heart was punctured by the arrow, on a cliff. After that, the arrow dimmed down and the golden glow wrapped around it suddenly exploded

once again. The arrow then turned into a puff of ash and dissipated into the air, while a huge hole had been left in the chest of the Yu Clan young man.

"Help..." The Yu Clan young man fell on the ground while moaning. Twelve Jia Clan warriors, who were guarding around him, hurriedly rushed up in a great panic, taking out all the life-saving medicines they had and pouring them into the mouth of their master, whether it was a waste or not.

Moreover, a few Jia Clan warriors even cut their own wrists, activating their precious spirit blood and shedding it on the chest of the Yu Clan young man. The wounded Yu Clan young man began incanting a spell loudly, while a blood-red swirl rotated fast inside his erect eye. The blood of the Jia Clan warriors, which contained great amounts of life-force in it, began being absorbed by his wound quickly. At the same time, the muscles around his wound started to squirm and the wound shrunk rapidly into a fist-size.

"Su-such a horrible arrow!" The other Yu Clan young men glanced at each other and whispered. They were all frightened by Feng Xing's shot so much that they didn't even dare to talk out loud.

Over a hundred Yu Clan young men were in the army, with over a thousand Jia Clan warriors following them, and over fifty-thousand slave warriors and slaves.

However, Feng Xing's shot was like a bowl of iced-water pouring right on their heads, extinguishing the confidence and passion in their hearts that they had about this war.

They were noble Yu Clan people. Leading a great army, sweeping across those weak and small barbaric villages, slaughtering their elderly people, pillaging their children and women, robbing their wealth; these were things that they enjoyed the most. Battle achievements and wealth were what they really wanted.

But if one told them to risk their lives and fight against the alliance of the human clans, even though they could be shot right in the head by some god damn golden arrow anytime...

"We have to inform General Di Sha about what just has happened here! We encountered the legendary human army right in front of us! These are no longer those stupid warriors from small clans, but real official human army people!" A Yu Clan young man, who looked relatively older, seriously made this suggestion.

"Hm, we all clearly know that we're only sent here by our families for experiences and achievements. We're not official soldiers of the Blood Moon army, I mean, it's not our duty to do such things like fighting against those cruel and stupid barbarians," Another Yu Clan young man said also seriously, "Fanju Luo and Di Lin were killed, how should we split these properties?"

"Oh! Lords!" Shouted the Jia Clan warrior, who was still kneeling on the ground, and had attacked Ji Hao for quite a few times earlier, "They were only a few kids! Five or six! And they were all cursed by Lord Di Lin with the blood power... they couldn't fight anymore!"

This Jia Clan warrior then stood up, took out a dagger and pierced deeply into his chest, then drew a spell symbol on his face with his own blood, which looked cruel and weird, "I swear with my life, they were cursed with blood power and are unable to fight at this moment! As long as you, my respectful lords, rush up with your warriors and chop off their heads, a great amount of awards would be...expecting you!"

The eyes of all those Yu Clan young man glowed suddenly.

Were those murderers cursed by Di Lin with the blood power? That meant that they should have lost nearly all of their spirit blood and were about to die! These people had killed Fanju Luo and Di Lin, both of them came from the top-30 large-scale families of

the Blood Moon, and were all wealthy noble families.

According to the hidden rule of the Yu Clan, as long as they could capture and behead the murderers who killed Di Lin and Fanju Luo, the two families would certainly trade for this contribution with incredibly great amounts of pure gold, only to wash off the disgrace and the reputations of their families.

"We can't let those violent barbarians run;they have killed our friends cruelly!" The Yu Clan man who had made the suggestion of informing Di Sha earlier, growled out in an even more serious tone, "We should go after them! Kill them! I will certainly make this contribution!"

Followed by a series of metal clashing noises, the magic space bracelet worn by those Yu Clan young men lit up one after another. Impressive amounts of metal spiders and other large-scale puppets were released by them, rushing up along the valley and going after Ji Hao and his teammates.

Within this short period of time, Ji Hao and his team had made tens of miles far along the valley.

Ji Hao's black tablet had been shaking violently, sending waves of messages to him.

Three-hundred miles in front of him, a master Magi tutor, who arrived as an emergency reinforcement, had already set up a 'magic bug formation' and was expecting Ji Hao to lure the enemies into the trap.

Chapter 264: Emergency

"Run, run, run, quick!"

Although Ji Hao and his team managed to stall for quite a while, they still were able to catch up with those Gold Wolf Clan warriors and Cyan Wolf Clan refugees.

Tens of warriors carrying or holding the clansmen, who were nearly killed earlier, stumbled while running as fast as they could along the valley. However, they had been running all the way and were about to collapse. Not to mention these Junior Magi warriors, even Senior Magi like Lang Li had nearly ran out of energy.

They were moving way too slowly, that the Yu Clan army chasing behind then was getting closer and closer. Ji Hao had already heard the metal-clanging noises that were made by the feet of those gigantic metal spiders against the solid rocks on the ground.

"Run as fast as you can!" yelled Ji Hao. In the meanwhile, a faint beam of golden-purple light flashed across the middle of his eyebrows. His Golden Dan swiftly rotated in his spiritual space and the power contained in it suddenly drained out by ninety percent.

Ji Hao locked his finger together, into the form of a lion head, while incanting a spell in a deep voice. His eyes began shining brightly and he glanced quickly across all of those warriors. 'Zhe', one of the nine secret words of the [Mantra Dan of Nine Secret Words], had the magical power that allowed Ji Hao to control the others as easy as his own body.

A faint layer of light rose from the ground, and along with gusts of breaths wrapped all of those warriors around, including Lang Li. Streams of warm power gushed into their bodies, making their heavy footsteps quick and light. With this magical power, even the weakest Novice Magus was now capable of easily covering over ten zhang with a few shreds of after images behind him.

Within the span of a few breath, they could make two to three steps forward, which was equal to a few miles.

Lang Li let out a roar towards the sky in excitement, straightened his thumb at Ji Hao while yelling, "Little brother, you're amazing! Really, really A-ma-zing!"

Saying this, Lang Li's face suddenly turned extra sad, after which he continued, "If our Gold Wolf Clan had an amazing Maguspriest like you, we could have saved at least thousands of our clansmen, it wouldn't be...be like this..."

Ji Hao rushed up to Lang Li with big steps, took a deep gasp, let out a breath that contained a dense corruptive scent, then slapped on Lang Yi's shoulder hard and said, "Want to take revenge? Keep surviving, become stronger, and kill them all!!"

Ji Hao's words were simple, yet filled with the most straightforward and honest philosophy, deeply believed by all the clans of the Southern Wasteland.

'If you killed my clansmen, in revenge, I will kill you for that. If I am unable to kill you, I will continue to cultivate myself until I become powerful enough, then I will kill you. If I am unable to kill you until the end of my life, I have my sons, my grandsons, even great grandsons, we will eventually kill you.'

Southern Wasteland warriors were simple and violent as such, therefore, once the seed of hatred had grown between two Southern Wasteland clans, it would never disappear until one of the two clans had been wiped out completely, and their bloodline had vanished from this world.

"I will live and kill them all," Lang Yi said while gasping quickly, staring at Ji Hao's black long dagger, then abruptly turned to Shaosi and said, "Little sister, you have two spears. Can I borrow one from you?"

Shaosi glanced at him, flicked her hand and threw one of the

spears to him.

Ji Hao laughed out and threw the crystal piece that Lang Li had used to trade for food earlier, back to him as well, then slapped on his shoulder again and said in a low voice, "Keep an eye on that bunch, I can't stop feeling they're a bit strange." While talking, Ji Hao threw another glance at those few Cyan Wolf Clan warriors.

He couldn't clearly tell how bad their wounds were, but judging from the outside, those wounds were pretty serious. However, after he had checked with his spiritual power, he had discovered that although those wounds looked bloody and scary, they actually didn't cause too much effect to the bodies of those few warriors.

"Interesting, can it really be a group of people who are actually spies among the entire human kind?" Shaking his head, Ji Hao turned around, facing the over two-hundred metallic spiders, which were approaching speedily and couldn't help but feel his scalp becoming numb by merely seeing those.

Over two hundred zhang long metal spiders were darting over at a nearly lightning speed, and those spiders all had especially long feet that allowed them to run even faster than ordinary metallic spiders. Some them had their bodies covered under thick metal armors, obviously possessing a great defensive power, while some others had extra huge bellies, which was releasing a strong sense of power; apparently, these spiders were even more destructive than the others.

All in all, these over two-hundred metal spiders were crafted in different shapes, with their unique uses during the battle.

Most terrifyingly, when he looked back, he discovered that at least fifty metallic spiders, which all had huge bellies, had already stuck their feet deeply into the ground and had opened their jaws, showing the triangular pyramid shaped pipes, aimed at him.

Just now, being attacked by only three metallic spiders joint-handedly with these kinds of pipes had already pushed Ji Hao in a

quite difficult position. Now, fifty metallic spiders that looked especially crafted for times of great war were aiming at him simultaneously. Ji Hao faintly imagined the outcome of this, causing his face to instantly turn blue.

"Godd**n it!" Ji Hao didn't dare to underestimate these metallic spiders. Without a hesitation, he threw out two defensive magic talismans that were given by elder Wulong and the other elders. The yellow talismans instantly exploded and released their powers. Tens of zhang-thick rock wall suddenly rose from the ground in front of Ji Hao, forming a huge defensive formation, firmly shielding Ji Hao behind it.

Over fifty tank-sized flame balls swooshed towards Ji Hao and thunderously bumped into those rock walls. Along with a series of booms, those rock walls shattered one after another, then turned into yellow light spots and dissipated into the air.

A rampantly great flame immediately enveloped the entire area that had a radius of over a hundred zhang. This section of the valley was especially narrow, therefore, those flame even swallowed the mountains on each side of the valley, which were over a thousand zhang tall.

Muffled bangs came from mountaintops. On each side of the valley, the mountains were shaking intensely, right after which, large pieces of solid blood-red rocks collapsed and rolled down from the mountaintop. Those rocks caused terrifyingly great rumbles while falling down right towards Ji Hao's head, sounding as if they were falling from the sky itself.

Ji Hao couldn't help but scream at the others, telling them to run faster. The biggest rock falling down from mountain tops was hundreds of zhang in radius and over thirty zhang thick. Being smashed by a rock like this was the last thing that anyone would want to experience.

The tens of metallic spiders rushed way too fast. Right after the

terrifying fire cooled down, they had reached where Ji Hao had been standing earlier.

However, the mountains on both sides of the valley were shaking to the point they collapsed by the series of explosions which were made fireballs, and the gigantic pieces of rocks fell down, right on these metallic spiders. Not a single one of them survived the horrible rain of huge rocks, and those especially solid and heavy blood-red rocks fell down from such a high altitude, smashing these metallic spiders, causing them to turn all lean and twisted. Those magic formations set inside their bodies all exploded, soon after which, these specially crafted metal spiders lost their powers and were turned into a pile of waste iron.

"Oh! No! My money!!" The young men of the Yu Clan who had been following closely right behind those metallic spiders buried their faces in their hands and cried out one after another.

They had already split all the guards, warriors and slaves that had been left by Fanju Luo and Di Lin, which meant that each one of them had earned some extra properties, but those metallic spiders had all been their personal properties which were worth quite a lot. Therefore, they still felt a great pain by watching their spiders being smashed into pieces of waste iron.

"Don't rush up blindly! Circle around them and chop them into pieces!" roared one Jia Clan warrior hoarsely, while waving his pair of huge cattle-horn shaped axes.

A Yu Clan young man opened the erect eye in the middle of his eyebrows, which suddenly let out a beam of dim red light, flashing across the air. Being swept across by the dim red light beam, all gigantic rocks that had blocked the valley then turned into puffs of ashes, after which they were blown away by gusts of wind. All this happened only in the span of a few breaths.

The great army continued moving forward, right behind Ji Hao's team and the group of refugees.

In front of Ji Hao and the others, on a roughly round-shaped, huge flagstone, a couple of black banners were fluttering in the wind, but suddenly, those mysterious banners all disappeared in the air.

Chapter 265: Ginger

A series of mountains stood roughly in a circle. On the side of the over ten miles in radius flagstone, Ginger was sitting on a black cushion, with thirteen different sized, odd shaped jars, containing all kinds of creepy bugs, placed right in front him in a line, sorted according to their sizes.

The thirteen different-shaped jars were made of either wood, stone, jade or metals and were all glowing with multicolored lights, looking like the lively colors on the bodies of the poisonous bugs. Each jar was embossed with lively patterns of poisonous bugs, and the largest one made from wood had ten thousand and one different kinds of poisonous bug patterns embossed on it.

Amongst all the poison users of the entire Magi Palace, Ginger was one of the few who were the hardest to deal with. Normally, no one dared to upset him.

He had lived for over a thousand years. He didn't have a wife or any children and no one knew about his family name. People only knew that he had come from the Southern Wasteland. Except for a few servants who were taking care of his daily needs, he didn't even have an apprentice. All Ginger had in his life were those scary, horrible and highly poisonous bugs.

Fifty years ago, with the help of the Magi Palace and paying a huge fortune, Ginger had killed the queen of a nest of Gu that had lived for over ten thousand years. He then had merged his body with the power and soul of the queen, becoming even quieter and weirder that he had been before, which caused even fewer people to come close to him.

"Good, good my dear cute little babies, we will get you some delicious meat very soon," gently patting those jars in front of him and Ginger said, while his green eyeballs looked as muddy as those of zombies. There was no way one would be able to discover any

traces of humanity in them.

"Fresh, warm, sweet human meat," blinking his eyes, Ginger chuckled, then paused and continued, "Well, not exactly... Monsters' meat actually. So they might not taste that well, but at least, the quantity is satisfying."

"Tens of thousands of them," taking a long and deep gasp with satisfaction, Ginger stroked those jars, which looked smooth and shining because of the hundreds of years of rubbing and petting. He then repeated with a low voice, "Tens of thousands of them. Those kids indeed are fighting really hard, bringing so much food all at once."

Tens of apprentices of the Magi Palace were holding special banners that were particularly made by Ginger himself, and had been walking quickly around the gigantic flagstone, according to Ginger's arrangement. While walking, they had also been waving those banners, from which, multicolored, different sized bug eggs were rising and falling on the huge flagstone like a heavy rain, after which they silently merged with the stone at a visible speed.

Every poisonous banner had over a million bug eggs hidden in it. Now, all those egg bugs had deeply drilled into the ground. If someone would be capable of seeing through the flagstone, they would see that underneath that thick flagstone, a terrifyingly great amount of bug eggs had been buried in the ground in a thick layer, distributed throughout the area that had a radius of over ten miles.

This scene would drive anyone, who were particularly afraid bugs, completely crazy.

However, in Ginger's eyes, such a scene was the most beautiful one in the whole world, and all this would be just simple. A bunch of idiots, who had been rushing to their deaths, would run into this area and suddenly be surrounded by millions of poisonous, newly-hatched bugs, then all these bugs would rush up, eat those idiots up without leaving even a puff of bone ash... so beautiful.

Jiang Yong was standing quite far away from Ginger, with a few Southern Wasteland Society boys standing beside him.

Over ten zhang away from them were a few Dark Ocean Society's apprentices.

They were watching Ginger setting the magic poisonous bug formation, eyes filled with fear and respect. At the same time they were whispering to each other about those great achievements made by Ginger. His cruel methods, weird personality and scary living style, all these had made Ginger look like a devil in the hearts of Magi Palace's apprentices.

Only Jiang Yong had been staring at Ginger with a bit different expression. He knew that Ginger was born in the Bi Fang Clan, which meant Ginger was one of his clansmen, but about a thousand years ago, Ginger had left the Bi Fang Clan and never went back to the Southern Wasteland.

Nevertheless, he believed that blood was always warmer and thicker than water, especially since all clans had been valuing the bloodline relationships the most. Therefore, Jiang Yong thought that he was somehow qualified to talk loudly in front of Ginger.

Hesitating for a while, Jiang Yong carefully walked behind Ginger, politely knelt on the ground and kowtowed to him for a few times. He acted very devotedly and had kowtowed quite hard, even making a few muffled booms against the ground, and had knocked a small hole out of the solid flagstone.

"What the hell?" Ginger stopped what he had been doing and yelled harshly in a cold voice, "Go hide as quickly as you can, later when those idiots rush into the formation, it will be your job to jump out and trap them! Kowtow to me? I have nothing nice for you!"

"Dear ancestor," said Jiang Yong extra politely.

Suddenly, a thumb-sized, three zhang long, thin yet with a tank-

sized head, extremely weird-shaped centipede, which had over a thousand sharp feet and was pure black, darted out from Ginger's sleeve and wrapped around the neck of Jiang Yong. Those sharp feet easily pierced into Jiang Yong's skin, and the huge head opened its jaws, spurting a stream of air that had a faint blood scent, right at Jiang Yong's face. Jiang Yong's face immediately turned purple in front of this sudden frightening experience.

"Ancestor!!" this stupid boy yelled one more time.

"Who the hell is your ancestor?!" Ginger yelled then chuckled, turned around and took a scornful glance at Jiang Yong, letting out a few frosty snorts. After that, he took out a handful of thumb-sized, translucent, smooth and tender-looking bug cocoons, threw into his own mouth one after another, which he chewed happily as if he was chewing a handful of peanuts.

While eating his special snack, Ginger said in his creepy cold voice, "You're Bi Fang Clan's boy? Don't you know what I had said back then when I left that stupid place? I had told them, if any Bi Fang Clan's little bastard ever dared to show up in front of me, they would be looking for death."

Jiang Yong's face now turned deadly pale. He looked at Ginger while being terrified deeply; he truly hadn't known anything about that. After all, that had happened a thousand years ago, who would tell him about this old story that was not glorious at all?

"Normally, when you walked into my eyesight in the Magi Palace, I just pretended to not know where you had come from, and didn't say anything," Ginger threw all the cocoons in his hand into his mouth then took out another handful of them, and continued "But today, you particularly came to me. If I don't kill you right away, I'll seem to have become a man who failed to keep his beliefs."

Jiang Yong began quivering, hurriedly screaming out in a trembling voice, "A-ancestor! Plea-please spare my life, I, we, our Bi Fang Clan has been bullied quite badly by someone else! Our,

our territory, half of our territories were snatched!"

Ginger paused and stopped chewing.

A short while later, Ginger narrowed his eyes and said in a bland tone, "Why does Bi Fang Clan's territory have anything to do with me? But, interestingly enough, I didn't think that there was someone in the Southern Wasteland who dared to provoke the Bi Fang Clan... hm, so you came to me now. You're not attempting to ask me to seek revenge for the Bi Fang Clan, kill the one who made your clan lose your territories, who happens to be among the few kids coming our way, luring enemies into this formation, are you?"

Jiang Yong stared at Ginger in shock. He had never thought that Ginger could be so wise that he would point the whole truth out within no time.

"Ancestor, you..."

Ginger closed his eyes, slightly sighing, raised his head and glanced at the sky, then abruptly threw a heavy slap on Jiang Yong's face.

Followed by a loud slapping sound, Jiang Yong was sent flying for over three miles away, and smashed right into a cliff, causing even half of his body to be stuck in the cliff.

"Close, close, they're coming."

Ginger murmured, and at the same time, a faint layer of mist rose from the ground, silently shrouding all the Magi Palace's apprentices behind him.

Gu (simplified Chinese-��; traditional Chinese-�M; pinying��): Gu was a venom-based poison associated with cultures of southern China. The traditional preparation of gu poison involved sealing several venomous creatures (e.g., centipede, snake, scorpion) inside a closed container, where they devoured one another and allegedly concentrated their toxins into a single survivor. Gu was used in black magic practices such as

manipulating sexual partners, creating malignant diseases, and causing death. The Gu queen that was killed by Ginger was a natural formed Gu, which according to legends, was much much more powerful and mysterious than ordinary artificially fostered Gu.

Chapter 266: Information

In the base camp of the alliance of the human race...

The main meeting tent could contain over a thousand people all at once. Inside, a hundred-zhang square sand table with countless extremely fine golden sand particles was shaking intensely and soon formed the mountain area that Ginger had set his magic poisonous bug formation in.

Si Wen Ming, Huaxu Lie, Lie Mountain Kang, Hao Tao, and other high commanders and ministers were standing beside the sand table, silently watching a few Maguspriests manipulating those streams of golden sand with their magic powers.

A soft stream of dim light flew out from the bone cane of each of the Maguspriests, soon shrouding the entire sand table. After a short while, all details of that mountain area had appeared within the layer of dim light; one could even see the cirrus of an ant from it.

The information continued to be gathered from over all the directions and was sorted by a few young men with black cloaks standing behind Si Wen Ming, after which they were immediately reported to those ministers and high commanders.

What Ji Hao and his team had encountered was the very first large-scale army of the non-human race people. They had already discovered that there were a hundred and twelve Yu Clan commanders in this army. There were also a thousand three hundred and eighty-five Jia Clan warriors, over fifty thousand slaves and slave warriors. Judging from the numbers, this was quite a huge army that was worth some attention.

They had also discovered that no other forces had been hiding around this army. The force that was nearest to them belonged to the Blood Moon official army, which was still thousands of miles behind them. Besides, the official army had been distributed and

was attacking human clans that were located in the north of the Chi Ban Mountain, only a few pioneer troops were sent into that mountain area.

Si Wen Ming sorted all information carefully inside his mind while frowning, then waved his hand hard in the air and said, “Tell elder Ginger to make it more difficult! A quarter of an hour, he only has a quarter of an hour to eliminate this army.”

Pointing his finger at the sand table, five-hundred miles away from the magic poisonous bug formation, a curved valley abruptly lit up.

“After eliminating this army, tell elder Ginger to set a new ambush formation in this valley, and I will transfer all our nearest forces to correspond with him. We will try our best to swallow this great Blood Moon army, commanded by Di Sha, directly!”

Under the guidance of Si Wen Ming, the information work had been running quite smoothly so far, at least, he had already discovered all backgrounds of those high commanders in the army that had been chasing Ji Hao, as well as the background information about the higher forces this army belonged to.

“Tell that kid Ji Hao, he has a personal issue with Di Sha. I will let Di Sha know that Ji Hao is in the squad,” said Si Wen Ming calmly, “Tell Ji Hao, he cannot draw back... He has to follow right behind Ginger, luring Di Sha into the ambush formation.”

Hao Tao, who had been standing beside Si Wen Ming silently all this time, abruptly began talking, “Elder Ginger came from the Bi Fang Clan of the Southern Wasteland. We just got news from the south, saying that Prince Tong Gong has ceded half of Bi Fang Clan’s territories to the Gold Crow Clan, where Ji Hao has come from.”

Si Wen Ming remained silent briefly then seriously shook his head and said, “I trust Elder Ginger, he is nothing like some of those people of the Bi Fang Clan.”

At the north side of the Chi Ban Mountain, in a small wood, Di Sha was sitting on a luxurious handcrafted carpet with his legs crossed. A few jade bowls, each with exquisitely carved patterns, were placed in a line in front of him, containing fresh fruits that just had been shipped over from Liang Zhu City, the capital of the Yu Dynasty.

A few beautiful young girls, whose clothes were torn into so many shreds that they couldn't even cover their bodies, and had slightly dark skins, were huddled up under a tree near Di Sha, staring at him like terrified baby rabbits.

An old slave, whose skin was dark green colored, grinned widely with his mouth while showing his sharp teeth. He grabbed the hair of one of the young girls in his hands, carefully looking at her beautiful and panicked face, even violently opening her mouth and checking if her teeth were white and neat.

"All good stuff," said the old slave while laughing creepily. He then politely saluted to Di Sha and said, "General Di Sha, if you can bring ten-thousand female slaves like this, our master will be willing to add ten percent based on your price."

Di Sha frowned, grabbed a large grape, threw into his mouth and began chewing.

"Add ten percent, hmm, your master is quite honest. But ten-thousand, it's already not easy to find even a hundred female slaves of such high quality, and you want ten-thousand? For that, I will have to spend an extra half month on the north side of the Chi Ban Mountain, until I have broken those human clans and found you enough amount of female slaves."

"We're at a great war, and the army has been moving forward every single day. Delaying half a month for no reason, how much is your master willing to pay for that? What if the Emperor blamed me for this... I can't even imagine something like that."

The old slave grinned again and said proudly, "The price won't

be a problem at all. As long as you get ten thousand slaves like this, we can negotiate further regarding the price. As for the Emperor, our master will certainly explain this for you, my dear general."

Di Sha slowly nodded and waved his hand, silently agreeing with what the old slave had said. He had a deep understanding of how powerful the master, about whom this old ugly slave had been talking about, was. Even Dishi Yanluo had to listen to him more or less.

If he could build a connection with such a powerful person through a slave trade, that would be highly beneficial for him in the future.

A Yu Clan young man rushed over at a crazily high speed from tens of zhang away. This young man leapt down from his still running mount and thudded against the ground, while throwing a jade talisman to Di Sha.

Di Sha's face suddenly changed, he caught the jade talisman and flicked it with his finger. Immediately, a light screen appeared in front of him, from within which, he saw hundreds of metallic spiders chasing a squad in a valley... And the one running at the tail of the squad, wearing a heavy full armor, occasionally lifting his mask up and showing his face... the face of this boy made Di Sha abruptly jump up from the carpet.

"It's him! That damn little bastard! It's him!!" screamed Di Sha madly, "The Shadow Devil failed to kill him! They have failed to kill him a few times! I am so sick of their uselessness! That little bastard! He is still here!!"

The Yu Clan young man knelt on the ground and said while gasping quickly for air, "General, this is the information which just has been delivered by our man."

Di Sha instantly crumbled the jade talisman, then shook his cloak and growled out harshly, "Call everyone! Gather over here at their highest speed! Leave those idiotic barbarians! Just leave them!

They should come over here as fast as they can!!”

He then pointed his finger hard in the direction of the Chi Ban Mountain, then yelled in an almost shrill voice, “Tell them, if they can’t get here within one hour, I will chop their heads off myself!”

The old slave, who had the hair of a girl grabbed in his hand, and had been laughing proudly in a weirdly disgusting voice, screamed out, “General Di Sha, are you launching an attack now? What about our female slaves?”

Di Sha turned his dark face around, glanced at the old slave with a complicated expression and said in a very deep voice, “Please, tell that noble master of yours, what I’m going to do, is nothing else but getting him more, and higher quality female slaves. When my army stamps this Chi Ban Mountain into a smashed flat land, I will certainly bring more deliciously beautiful female slaves back for him.”

Di Sha’s mount, the nightmare beast, rushed over. Di Sha rose into the air and then lightly landed on the back of the beast.

He took another glance at the old slave, who was now paused in shock, abruptly grinned and said, “Tell your master to prepare enough money. This time, I will be bringing quite an amount of good stuff back, which will certainly go beyond his imagination.”

Pulling out his sword, Di Sha waved the long and sharp sword towards the Chi Ban Mountain.

“The army up front, move! Move! Move! Fast!”

Chapter 267: Hatch

"Run, run at your highest speed!"

Abruptly, a gigantic blood-red flagstone blocked the way of Ji Hao and the others with him, causing them to slow down immediately.

"Lang Lie! Take these people and run!" Ji Hao raised his long black dagger while a beam of fiery light flashed across the dagger's edge.

Behind him, over two hundred metallic spiders rushed out of the valley like a sparkling and freezing metallic tide, quickly spreading out towards all directions. Soon, those spiders formed a miles long line, moving their thin yet sharp feet, while continuously approaching Ji Hao and his team.

The metallic spider, which was standing in the middle of the line, looking especially thin but had more and complicated spell symbols embossed on its body, and with black-blue gemstones inlaid in its compound eyes, suddenly raised its head, opened its jaws and let out a high-pitched scream. Waves of strong sense of power instantly gushed out of its body and spread out.

A huge buzzing sound rose from its body, along with which, the flagstone began shaking violently, and countless thin electric sparkles popped up in the air. Ji Hao saw the dirt slowly rising from the ground. The air was trembling and charging. Great electric repulsion was causing dirt and even small stones to rise from the ground. After the span of two breaths, even gigantic rocks, which would take a few people to hold their arms around them, were slowly rising from the ground as well.

A blood-red beam of light darted out from this metallic spider's body, within which, an erect eye gradually opened, letting out countless beams of extremely thin and dim light, which swept across the surrounding area. The air around the flagstone was still

vibrating, while a faint layer of black mist continuously blew up, exposing the apprentices of Magi Palace, who had been hiding in the mist with the power of those banners held in their hands.

Fifty to sixty apprentices were shocked to discover that they were already exposed, desperately waving their banners, not knowing what else they could do.

Ji Hao popped out his eyes. He had read from books in the Magi Palace which said that amongst the fighting puppets of the Yu Clan, there was one that was extremely expensive, and could release a powerful magic, which was called Heaven Blessed Great Magic by the people of the Yu Clan. This so-called Heaven Blessed Great Magic could largely suppress all kinds of magic and magical powers, in front of which, ordinary magic formations or ambush formation had no way of staying hidden.

However, this kind of puppet was incomparably expensive. Except the people who possessed the highest status amongst the entire Yu Clan and their direct offsprings, none of the others would be able to afford such a top-grade fighting puppet.

Behind the hundreds of metallic spiders, a proud and arrogant laughter was let out by a Yu Clan's young man, "Hah! Ambush! You all should thank me for this, if I hadn't spent all my money and bought this heaven-eyed puppet, we would have all rushed into this ambush formation!"

"You all, each, owe me a life, remember this," the owner of the heaven-eyed puppet yelled out in excitement, "According to the rules, I should take a major part of the contribution for killing these people."

The other young men of the Yu Clan looked like they each had swallowed a huge pile of cattle dung and were very embarrassed.

They glared at Ji Hao and the others and began cursing angrily.

"Bastard! How dare you ambush us here?!"

"You lowly sneaky barbarians! So evil! But, can't you arrange more people to ambush us? Only these few? It's not even enough for us to split the contribution!"

"You're so dead, lowly stupid creatures, you're just so dead. We have found you, which means that you're all dead already!"

These few men of the Yu Clan were yelling and shouting, cursing and threatening Ji Hao and the others. Surrounded by tens of thousands of slaves warriors and guards, they rapidly rushed out of the narrow valley, and got onto this huge flagstone.

A few cautious and cowardly young men from the Yu Clan took out their special-shaped jade talisman and threw them hard against the ground. Those talismans instantly blew up into beams of dazzling light and spread out. Countless tiny spell symbols emerged in the light and sparkled in the air. Everywhere they swept across, the surface of the flagstone would be burnt black, as if being struck by lightning bolts.

Not a single hidden spell or magic spell symbol was detected on the surface of the flagstone, and if there was any, those specially crafted detecting talisman would certainly trigger it and cause abnormal images or sounds.

However, except those apprentices of the Magi Palace who were hidden around them with the powers of those banners, no other spell symbols had been left on the flagstone by Ginger.

The young men of the Yu Clan surveyed the surrounding carefully. When they were unable to see anything abnormal had occurred on the flagstone, they immediately became excited and started to yell even louder at Ji Hao. "Surrender yourself! You lowly barbarians! We can grant you an easy death if you surrender now!"

"And those two beautiful ladies, you two should just kneel on the ground and beg for our mercy. After all, we don't want to smash your pretty, lovely faces."

"Oi, oi, let's talk, that girl with a white dress, I like her. I'll give two-hundred jade coins for having her."

"You bastard! Such a beautiful slave, she will be worth at least five hundred. I want her as well. Be fair, the one who gives the highest price will get her!"

"I want this kid's armor! My uncle is a deputy commander working for General Di Sha, who dares to scramble with me?"

Before they even had won the fight, these proud and arrogant young men of the Yu Clan were considering Ji Hao and the others as their reward for winning the battle already, and started arguing with each other regarding the distribution of this 'booty'.

Lang Li led his fellows and dragged those refugees, while continuing to flee forward. From time to time he would turn back and take a worried glance at Ji Hao and his team. But when he saw that they were surrounded and that the ambush formation laid exposed, he couldn't help but show a despairing face.

"You! What are you doing?! The ambush has been exposed!!"

Lang Lie shouted as loudly as he could while waving his arms hard, intending to tell Ji Hao that he and his people should keep running for lives.

Ji Hao smiled while shaking his head to Lang Lie, then took a deep breath, and straightened his middle finger up towards those Yu Clan's young men. After that, he locked his fingers together. Followed by his hand motion, his heavy arm immediately was wrapped by a thick layer of flowing water again. In the meanwhile, large streams of water essence power spurted out, turned into a zhangs in radius water shield, enshrouding all six of them, including Taisi's big black cat."

"Man Man, take out the treasure given by your Abba and cast our curse away," said Ji Hao, "What a difficult journey!"

Man Man happily let out a yell then took out a fist-sized,

exquisite bronze lamp. Once she had taken it out, a slightly red light spot on the lamp burst out into a dense red light sphere, wrapping all of them up.

The huge flagstone under their feet suddenly began shaking lightly. Soon, countless thin cracks emerged on the surface of the flagstone. At the exactly same moment, all bug eggs exploded simultaneously and countless different-sized, multicolored and scary bugs hatched, buzzing out of the flagstone. Immediately after these bugs had flown out from those silent eggs, which had been feeling completely dead just now, instantly released an amazingly great sense of power.

Cracking noise lingered around the flagstone, watched by the Yu Clan men and their guards and slave warriors, all ugly, disgusting and horrible bugs crawled out of their eggs while screaming.

It was a tsunami of poisonous bugs. The over ten miles in radius flagstone had suddenly been swallowed completely by those bugs.

Chapter 268: The Ocean of Bugs

"Holy crap!" Taisi huddled up on the back of the black tiger, with his face turned completely blue, tightly holding his own knees with his arms.

Feng Xing looked nowhere better than Taisi. Randomly, he couldn't help but rub his own body hard with his hands, trying to wipe the cold sweat that was gushing out of his palms. It also seemed like as if his palms were extremely dirty and he was so eager to wipe them clean.

Shaosi and Man Man were looking similar; their faces had turned slightly pale while staring right at those bugs. The two girls tightly leaned against each other and were slightly shivering their bodies.

Only Yu Mu, had a few drops of drools flowing out from the corners of his mouth while his eyes began glowing. He was greedily staring at those bugs outside of the water shield, while murmuring in a low yet quite creepy voice to the others, "Wow, so chubby! This scorpion is so chubby, why I want to eat it so much, oh I am now dying to taste it! Looking so delicious!"

Ji Hao felt his scalp going numb and that all of his hair were standing straight up. Even with his experiences and spiritual power, he too was frightened by those bugs outside of the water shield, so much that even his body couldn't move smoothly.

In the Southern Wasteland, almost every clan had a few Maguspriests who particularly studied bugs manipulating magic, and all kinds of poisonous bugs fostering skills. These Maguspriests were all masters at killing people with poisonous bugs. Ji Hao had seen ocean-like groups of bugs before during a fight between the Gold Crow Clan and other clans.

But the poisonous bug magic used by Ginger was violent, evil, disgusting and fierce to a certain unbelievable point.

All these different sized and multicolored bugs gathered together were lying upon each other's bodies, squeezing each other, wrapping their legs altogether, and their wings overlapping. Those worms, without legs and wings, tightly coiled around each other without a single gap between them; not even a hair could be inserted in between this horrible ocean of bugs.

The area with a radius of over ten miles, which was surrounded by mountains and only two valleys lying across it, was filled with a three-hundred zhang thick layer of bugs.

Thick and solid, not even water would be able to flow inside.

The water shield had given Ji Hao and his friends some space. Outside the water shield was a deadly world of bugs; all kinds of mad poisonous bugs crowded together, rubbing each other and letting out crazily horrible noises. At the first glance, one's eyesight would be immediately filled with all kinds of squirming bugs and broken body parts of bugs; wings, legs, bellies, internal organs, and disgusting, stinky liquid that had been squeezed out of these bugs.

The jaws of these bugs remained open while they were screaming and squirming madly. All of these bugs had poisonous glands in either their jaws or tails, out of which venoms of various vivid colors were ceaselessly spurting out, while emitting a hell-like stinking smell. All kinds of rotting and stinking smells were mixed together, giving a scent that was beyond description.

If it hadn't been for the protection of the water shield, the venom would pour into their bodies. Ji Hao thought that even though his body was more solid than the body of ordinary Senior Magi, he too would corrode within the span of few breaths if he was affected by those venoms.

Luckily, they had the water shield, and even more fortunately, Man Man's father had given her such a powerful treasure. Otherwise none of them even dared to imagine what the outcome

could be.

The army led by those Yu Clan's young men weren't as lucky as Ji Hao's squad. Those egg bugs, which didn't have any sign of life, suddenly flew out from underground, and countless bugs hatched within a single second, piling up layer upon layer, directly burying them.

The slave warriors who were poorly dressed with only leather armors, or in some cases only flax clothes, only let out a few howls before their bodies had been torn apart by those bugs. Countless bugs drilled into their skins and madly devoured their flesh, blood, internal organs and bones.

The sticky venom spread on their bodies, rapidly corrupting their bones and weapons. Within only a few seconds, all the slave warriors and slaves had been devoured by those bugs, without leaving even a hair.

Amongst these slave warriors, a few who were relatively more powerful, had waved their weapons for a few times with all of their powers, and smashed thousands of bugs, but that was all they could achieve. After they had smashed those thousands of bugs, more bugs roared onto their bodies and turned them into nothing.

Hundreds of metallic spiders let out the bright light from their bodies; the powerful magic formations hidden inside their body suddenly drained the power of those magic crystals, which had been providing energies for these spiders and turned those powers into thick layers of light shield that wrapped around these spiders. Those spiders opened their jaws, showing the ragingly blazing pipes. Large amounts of bugs were burned to ashes, but still more and more bugs endlessly rushed up, crushing them.

These bugs were especially fostered by Ginger himself, and some of them lived solely on all kinds of natural powers.

Loud creaking noises were coming from around these metallic spiders. Millions of bugs rushed up onto the bodies of these

gigantic metallic spiders and began wolfing the light shield protecting them. Their light shields quickly dimmed down, and power that had been stored inside the bodies of these metallic spiders was quickly consumed, till there was no power in store to replenish those light shields. The shields suddenly exploded, after which, those bugs directly stuck on the solid and smooth bodies of those metallic spiders.

Some of the bugs that lived especially on metals were flying thrilled and began tearing the solid and thick bodies of those spiders apart, even letting out loud noises. No matter how those gigantic and powerful combat machines struggled, and even though with one swipe of their thin yet sharp feet they could kill thousands of bugs, in this hell-like magic formation filled with poisonous bugs, they were surrounded by billions of such bugs.

One metallic spider was bitten till it had broken into pieces and eventually exploded within a dense fiery light and thick cloud of smoke.

One metallic spider exploded, killing millions of bugs, but soon enough, more bugs had rushed up again.

The metallic spiders were exploding one after another, blowing up countless bugs into stinky and gross liquid, but those bugs had crazily great fecundity. They ate all of the dead bug bodies that had been killed in the explosions, then swayed their swelling bellies and let out another hundreds of eggs, which then hatched and turned into newly grown bugs.

One could never kill them... one could never, ever kill all of them.

Those Yu Clan's young men each had special abilities, but they were shrouded by more powerful bugs, such as that strange-shaped centipede that Ginger used to scare Jiang Yong earlier. Each Yu Clan young man had at least ten huge centipedes-like creatures that coiled around their bodies.

These centipedes had incredibly solid bodies; each could endure a full-strength tearing down that had been launched by a Senior Magus without breaking. Being tied up by over ten huge centipedes like this, even strong warriors like Ji Hao couldn't possibly break out from it, not to mentions these poor Yu Clan noble elites who had not too many physical powers to begin with.

As for those powerful Jia Clan warriors, each of them was coiled around by over a hundreds of centipedes like these. They were screaming and struggling with every single bit of power they had, breaking one, two, or ten, even twenty centipedes... But in no time, more centipedes had drilled out from the crowd of bugs and squirmed onto their bodies.

While they were screaming with their mouths wide open, some of the bugs had crawled into their opened mouths.

That deadly horrible ocean of bugs had devoured everything. Those Yu Clan young men began crying in despair. Abruptly one of them screamed out loud in a hoarse and high-pitched voice.

"I surrender!! I hope that you can treat me in a way that fits my status and my family name!"

Chapter 269: Surrender

Two huge golden-winged scorpions opened their jaws and dragged this Yu Clan young man out of the crowd of bugs.

The face of this poor young man had turned deadly pale long ago, while his lips had turned ghost-blue, and streams of warm, steaming liquid was continuously dripping down along his luxurious armor. Tens of wired-shaped centipedes were coiled around his body, which had already bitten tens of huge holes in his exquisite armor, and a few multicolored mantises had already drilled half of their bodies into his chest muscle and were chipping his flesh with their sharp sickles.

No wonder he had screamed out and surrendered in only a second, those few mantises would have drilled into his heart.

"Lord Di Silin! You ca-can't surrender!! Your family, your parents, all will be humiliated!" yelled a nearly five-meter tall Jia Clan warrior. The great shock wave that had come out from his throat had even shattered over a hundred thousands of bugs into pieces. "Your status and that of your whole family will be taken away!"

Di Silin gasped quickly and yelled back at him, "Idiot!! Not surrender, do you want to watch me die?! Idiots! Surrendering is only a method of fighting! After my family has bailed me out, I will certainly, naturally make my contribution and wash over this humiliation!"

The thick, boundless ocean of bugs was squirming in such a manner that Di Silin couldn't even see were his guards were. He yelled harshly, "I order all of you, drop your weapons, take off your armors and surrender! You're my warriors, you have to obey my orders!"

The Jia Clan warrior, who had just yelled at him let out a long, helpless and angry shout, after which, his skin abruptly turned

into faint silver. He gripped his long machete and began swiftly spinning his body on everything around him.

Fierce gusts of swords wind swept across the crowd of bugs. All the bugs within the area two-hundred zhang in a radius around the Jia Clan warrior were all wiped out. But more bugs continuously rushed up from the air and deeply buried him in the ocean of bugs. In the meanwhile, the weird-shaped centipedes coiled around his body suddenly tightened. The Jia Clan warriors growled out in both shame and anger, as he attempted to launch another powerful attack like this, but he couldn't move even a bit.

Venoms poured on his body in streams, while gusts of poisonous air coiled around him, and poisonous power breathed into his nose.

Soon, this especially brave and powerful Jia Clan warrior had consumed his power. He let out a desperate howl then fell on the ground. The bugs covered his body up and soon ate up his thick armor, and finally he was devoured by these bugs as well.

That had been a peak-level Jia Clan warrior. Every inch of his flesh and every drop of his blood contained great amount of power. Hundreds of bug queens screamed shrilly with excitement, while their gigantic and swelled up bellies squirmed, spraying bug eggs like raindrops.

All the Jia Clan warriors had been launching attacks on those bugs as hard as they could in the ocean of bugs. Now and then, terrifyingly loud booms could be heard coming from within the crowd of bugs, along with dazzling lights. Every single full-strength attack launched by a Jia Clan warrior was able to exterminate all the bugs in the area of a few miles.

However, those bugs had been reproducing all the time, faster and faster. More and more bugs fell from the sky or drilled out from the ground. The three-hundred zhang thick layer of bugs soon grew to four-hundred zhangs, even five-hundred zhangs

thick...

"Kids, what're you waiting for?" Ginger murmured in a spooky and deep voice while patting one of those bug jars in front of them.

Tens of apprentices of the Magi Palace floating in the air, trembled while waving their banners once after hearing Ginger. Instantly, huge clouds of black smoke gushed out of those banners which were releasing a thick sense of spirit blood power. Every single bug that would be touched by this smoke would suddenly expand by many times than it had been before. Their powers would also rise largely, and even those venoms, poisonous gas or powders spurted out by them would become more toxic than before.

Another Yu Clan young man who had his armor broken by those bugs began screaming desperately, "I surrender! I am from the Dishi Family! I have to, to be treated in the way, that fits, my, my status! Gosh! They're in my nose!! Help!!"

A few gigantic golden-winged scorpions dragged this young man out of the ocean of bugs, and same as the last one, this young man had peed on himself as well. After being dragged out by those golden scorpions, a few streams of black smoke quickly drilled into his body, and this young man's body instantly went limp. He was disabled from moving, showing the whites of his eyes and fainted.

Those Yu Clan young men surrendered one after another.

Facing Ginger, and that horrible, hell-like bug manipulating skill, they completely gave up resistance. In their eyes, only official armies could deal with this kind of large-scale bug group, and they were sent over by their families only for some experience. It was totally reasonable for them to surrender under such a situation.

The young men of the Yu Clan were being dropped out one after another and were thrown onto the ground like garbage after their power had been sealed by that black smoke.

Even those incomparably powerful and tough Jia Clan warriors gave up as well. Their masters had all surrendered, therefore, although they were all brave enough to the point that they were never afraid of death, none of them was that stupid to be willing to die for nothing.

Therefore, these Jia Clan warriors took off their armors, surrendered, and were restrained by Ginger with those poisonous bugs.

These Jia Clan warriors lied on the ground, each with an embarrassed face and cursing ceaselessly.

"Bloody evil barbarians! You use these disgusting tiny bugs! Shameless! Low! You, do you even dare to fight against us face to face?!"

"Ah, you're such a humiliation to warriors! You have even dirtied the word 'warrior'! Why didn't you pick up your weapons and fight against us like real men?!

"Next time, we will never, ever lose! Just a bunch of bugs, we can simply burn them to ashes! I am telling you! I only need a small, handful of fire to defeat you!"

Ginger sneered, then patted hard on a bug jar in front of him again. Countless poisonous bugs suddenly flew into the air, bringing an upstream of multicolored light and darted into the jar. Looking at these angry Jia Clan warriors, he said blandly, "Warriors? I am a Maguspriest, not those brainless warriors who know nothing but punching and hacking."

Standing slowly up, with those bug jars floating around his body, Ginger glanced at Ji Hao and carelessly threw a jade talisman to him.

"It's Si Wen Ming's order. Ji Hao, you have to coordinate with me in dealing with Di Sha's main army. Si Wen Ming hopes that we can wipe that Di Sha and his army out this time and show our

attitude to those idiotic creatures."

Ji Hao took over that talisman and carefully read the information contained in it.

He had also seen Jiang Yong, whose face was bruised and nose swelled, standing far away from Ginger while staring at him with both fear and hatred. Ji Hao immediately realized what had happened before he arrived here. Ji Hao seriously bowed to Ginger and said, "Sure, It's my responsibility. Those non-humankind are the archenemy of our entire human race. I will surely spare no efforts to defend our humankind and eliminate enemies."

Ginger nodded with satisfaction, took another complicated glance at Ji Hao, then said in his symbolic low and creepy voice, "Good, the Gold Crow Clan finally raised another marvelously talented kid. Ha, but that Bi Fang Clan goes down generation after generation."

Tens of black banners abruptly rose into the air. Ginger trod on one of them and swiftly flew to the north. Ji Hao let out a sharp whistle to inform his teammates, then hurriedly followed Ginger.

Chapter 270: Bug Puppet

At the northern side of the Chi Ban Mountain, Di Sha's army was moving quickly towards the south.

Tens of thousands of slave warriors wearing leather armors and holding weapons excitedly pushed large groups of human elderly people, women and kids, approaching the south.

These men were threaded together by ropes that tied around their waists. These specially crafted ropes covered in blood-red spell symbols had threaded through those people' spines; the power contained in those ropes forced them to move slowly along with the army.

About a thousand people were threaded in one rope, and hundreds of lines of threaded people were following the army. These poor people were moving on the vast, solid and blood-red ground, wailing and sobbing, walking towards their unknown fates.

If any of those humans fell on the ground and caused the entire line to be stopped, those slaves from the Yu Clan would immediately chop their heads off, while being thrilled doing it. Then they would tie the heads around their waist, in order to show off their battle achievements.

The bodies of the tens of thousands of slaves were all covered in blood. Some of them had seven to eight human heads tied around their waists, while blood continuously dripped on the ground from the broken necks of those heads, adding more vivid, cruel blood-red color to the ground of the Chi Ban Mountain.

At the same time, three hundred fully metallic chariots had been floating in the air about three feet high from the ground. These chariots were being pulled by metallic puppets and were moving quickly forward. Every chariot was wrapped around by multicolored streams of light, while countless spell symbols were

embossed on the surfaces of those chariots, which occasionally transformed into electric bolts darting to zhangs away.

Blades that were sharp and the size of a fist were inlaid in all of those chariots and beast-like bodies of the metallic puppets. The blades were extremely sharp and had a green light shining upon them. That green light was obviously caused by dipping those blades in highly poisonous liquids. On top of that, all the blades were thickly dotted with small spell symbols, which had greatly enhanced the sharpness and solidity of the blades, to such an extent that it was capable of easily cutting even the body of a Senior Magus in two halves.

Three nearly ten-metal tall gigantic human-shaped puppet warriors were standing on each chariot; they were respectively holding a spear, a machete and a longbow in their hands, which allowed each chariot, as a squad, to easily launch both long distance and short distance attacks. The bodies of each puppet warrior were also covered in complicated spell symbols. Every single one of these spell symbols was sparkling with an eye-piercing light. Magic crystal of the highest grade and the size of a tank were inlaid in all their vital body parts, providing the puppets with nearly inexhaustible amounts of energy.

Behind these chariots, which were moving forward in a horizontal line, an over ten-zhang tall tower was floating in the air and drifting forward along with the army. Around the base of the tower, over ten muscular Yu Clan elites were standing straight, while vigilantly glancing at the surrounding areas at all times, as beams of sharp and frosty light darted out from their erect eyes from time to time.

Above the tower, a huge, scary blood-red erect eye was rotating slowly and letting out streams of blood-red light, darting towards the south, leaving a long and huge arc in the air.

Streams of blood-red light with a thickness similar to a human leg darted tens of miles away within a moment, then struck on the

ground. Along with a series of thunderous booms, that blood-red light suddenly exploded into countless thumb-sized light spots, randomly shooting towards the surrounding area.

Every single one of those spots of light contained a tiny blood-red symbol within it. No matter what came in contact with these spots, it would immediately burst and release beams of visible blood-red colored electric bolts and spread out swiftly.

A sizzling noise lingered in the air; every time after a blood-red light exploded, those blood-red, tiny electric bolt released by it could instantly cover an area that had a radius of a hundred miles.

None of the magic formations or ambushes which might have been set up by human beings were capable of staying hidden from these sensory-type blood-red electric bolts. The high tower was one of the most important and valuable treasure, which was an absolute necessity for the Yu Dynasty during times of war.

Di Sha was riding on his mount, closely following the high tower.

Although he was eager to take revenge for his brother Di Luo, and wash off the humiliation and bad influences that had been brought to him and his family by his death and the destruction of the Blood Fang, Di Sha, after all, was born cautious. Even though he was now surrounded by ten millions of elite warriors and all kinds of large-scale powerful battle machines and puppets, he hadn't become arrogant and reckless, not even for the slightest bit.

He pushed those human captives to the front of the army and made them step through every inch of ground in front of the army, in case any trap was set on their way. He had also burned a great amount of magical crystals and activated the Blood Moon Divine Tower to detect if there was any ambush set in the mountain area in front of them. In the eyes of the other Yu Clan generals, Di Sha was even a bit cowardly, afraid of the war and the death, but Di Sha insisted no matter how people judged him.

"Make those stupid things on each side of the army quiet!" Di Sha

raised his head, looked at the army and yelled harshly, "Do not blindly move forwards! Shoulder to shoulder with the main army! Do they really think that the human race is a doormat? I assume that they had never spent a day in the Southern Wasteland!"

This time, large groups of elite warriors had been arranged to join Di Sha's army before he had set off for this war, but all of these new warriors were young men from those big-scale Yu Clan or Jia Clan families that belonged to the Blood Moon. Rather than coming for the war, these people were more like coming for money.

During all these days, Di Sha had led his army to exterminate tens of large-scale clans located on the northern side of the Chi Ban Mountain, seizing amazingly great amount of wealth and slaves. Therefore, these newly joined young men had all became proud and arrogant and thought that humans were as weak as rats.

Di Sha put them on each side of the army, but these young men were all excitedly trying to move faster, intending to exterminate the human army ahead of Di Sha in order to build their own achievements and harvest more slaves.

Di Sha could only order them to slow down. Over and over again, he yelled at them, letting them keep side by side with the main army, but these young men ignored Di Sha's orders time and time again, leading their guards and slave warriors and moving faster and faster.

"God***n it!" Di Sha raised his whip in anger and whipped hard on the butt of his mount while yelling, "Good, you won't listen to my orders, and insist on getting yourself killed... do not blame me for this!"

Hundreds of miles away, on top of a gigantic mountain, Ji Hao was standing beside Ginger, silently and calmly looking at the clouds of dirt, which seemed to even reach the sky.

From hundreds of miles away, Ji Hao was able to clearly see

those tiny electric bolts that were released when the light streams darted out from the high tower and exploded. This was the first time for Ji Hao to witness such kind of battle machine that was capable of large-scale surveys for magic formation ambushes, while Ginger had a thorough and complete understanding of this kind of high-edge tower.

"Well, a ten-zhang tall divine tower, limitation of its attacking range is a hundred miles." Ginger narrowed his eyes and stared at Ji Hao right in the eyes with his pair of green shining pupils, and warned him, "Once it approaches you to less than a hundred miles, you have to be extra careful! These divine towers made by the Xiu Clan craftsmen could easily release Magus King level of attacks as long as they have enough amount of magic crystals as energy supply. That is something you bunch of kids couldn't possibly hold off!"

Ji Hao stared at that tower that had been moving forward while releasing streams of blood-red light, and responded in a low voice, "So, do we have to destroy this tower before that?"

Ginger gave a praising glance to Ji Hao, then waved his hand. A few Magi Palace's apprentices hurriedly sent those captured Yu Clan's young men over.

"Exactly, that is why I didn't kill these kids back then, and have accepted their words of surrendering."

"But, I can guarantee that they would never want to know what will happen soon, after I turn them all into bug puppets."

Ginger said while chuckling with a hoarse and very creepy voice, and gently putting chicken-egg-sized bug eggs into the mouths of these captives one after another. All of these Yu Clan's young men were struggling with the last bit of their powers, but no matter how hard they tried, they couldn't break out from Ginger's cold and scrawny hands.

"Ji Hao, you know, Wulong Yao and the few other old fellows are

really good at teaching children about how to read books."

"But, speaking of how to kill and survive in battles, you should take a few lessons from me."

Abruptly, Ji Hao popped out his shining narrowed eyes and let out a loud, high-pitched scream, along with which, over a thousand captives showed the whites of their eyes simultaneously, then suddenly straightened their bodies, leapt up from the ground like zombies, darting out right towards Di Sha's army which was still at hundreds of miles away, at a lightning speed.

Chapter 271: Bug Attack

Ginger gave Ji Hao a pile of thin slips which were made from turtle shells. On those slips he had recorded his special bug puppet magic.

Ji Hao stared at the pile of slips in shock, while holding them in his hands he realized they weighed nearly nothing, then looked confused at Ginger and asked, "I heard that you, esteemed elder, don't have any apprentices?"

Ginger gave a hollow and hoarse laughter, and slowly took out a few poisonous bugs and leisurely threw into his mouth, and began chewing on them. The shells of those bugs were crushed by Ginger's teeth, letting out a series of creaking noises; it sounded like he was chewing on popcorns. He then responded in a low voice with mouth still filled with his snacks, "Well, apprentices... those kids, if you take apprentices, you'll be troubled endlessly... and if they get killed by others, you'll be sad... so, it's better to not take any apprentices."

He then slapped Ji Hao's shoulder gently with his scrawny and ice-cold palm, and continued in his ghost-like low voice, "When I meet kids I like, I'll teach them a few useful things. In the future, if you meet kids you like, you should teach them what I taught you. Spreading my magic out and passing them down... that way you can pay me back."

Ji Hao stared at Ginger with complicated emotions, without knowing what to say.

Ginger took another poisonous bug out and thrust in his own mouth, then said in a bland tone while chewing, "Ji Hao, kid, I like you. You, if you survive, you will grow into someone marvelous, someone, who will twist the fate of the entire humankind. As for the Bi Fang Clan, in the future, if there is no deadly hatred between you and them, give them a chance to survive."

While chuckling, Ginger then turned his head to those Magi Palace's apprentices and began yelling at them harshly.

Tens of apprentices who had been holding those black banners all the time hurriedly waved their banners hard as Ginger ordered. Huge amounts of bug eggs were being spurted out of those banners and soon drilled into the ground where they completely disappeared. This time, those bug eggs had hidden under the ground miles deep, after which, all sense of power and life-force of these bug eggs was frozen automatically, and these bug eggs immediately turned as cold as rocks.

Hundreds of Yu Clan young men and thousands of Jia Clan warriors who had thrown their armors and helmets away and surrendered were crazily darting towards Di Sha's army while gasping as quickly as an engine.

Di Sha's army was approaching Ji Hao and Ginger, while these captives were running many times faster than the army. After only a quarter of an hour, they had rushed into Di Sha's army and made contact with the troop in front.

Tens of slave warriors rushed up while swinging their weapons and yelling as loud as they could, "Dear noble lords, please clear the way for our frontal troop and walk along both sides of the army.

Before those slave warriors could finish their shouts, these Yu Clan and Jia Clan elite warriors swooshed past them like gusts of wind, some of them even swiftly poked their fingers into these slave warriors' bodies while running, leaving deep bleeding holes on their bodies.

What those slave warriors didn't know was that when those fingered poked into their bodies, countless tiny bug eggs had gushed out from under fingernails and merged with their bodies.

One man of Yu Clan yelled out ragingly, "Idiots! How dare you talk to us like this!? Do you have any idea of your own status?!"

While yelling and shouting, those captured warriors kept rushing straight forward, and those slave warriors, who had been pushing those captured humans forward, stood aside one after another in fear. However, thousands of slave warriors still were carelessly and conveniently killed by these swiftly rushing elite warriors, and had countless bug eggs merged with their bodies.

Di Sha frowned unpleasantly. He looked at those warriors rushing towards them, and angrily yelled at his deputy commanders, "You, go deal with those idiots. A few young men from the Dishi family are among them, that's the patriarchal clan of our Di family... it's not appropriate for me to deal with them myself."

The two deputy commanders who were quite close to Di Sha glanced at each other and helplessly shook their heads, as they whipped their riding beasts, quickly moving towards those madly rushing warriors.

These two deputy commanders understood clearly that every single one of these Yu Clan young men came from large-scale families of the Blood Moon, and had solid, powerful backgrounds. As tiny deputy commanders they could never bear to offend these young men.

Therefore, even though these seemingly crazy young men had killed over a thousand of their slave warriors carelessly, even rushing into the frontal troop of Di Sha's army, they could only go meet them with nicely grinning faces, and beg these noble young men to move to both sides of the army, along with those newly-joined young men.

Di Sha was staring at the two deputy commanders, who quickly darted away, suddenly frowned and asked a warrior beside him, "Hmm? I seem to remember that we have only set one pioneer troop into the Chi Ban Mountain, is that right? I remember that those few Dishi family's young men, who were so eager to build achievements, were in that troop, right?"

A Yu Clan commander responded, "General, you're incomparably perceptive, these people are no one else but from that pioneer troop..."

Not even letting that commander finish his compliment, Di Sha's face suddenly changed and yelled out harshly, "If they're that pioneer team, according to the information I have just received, the troop which has been chasing that little bastard should be this one in front of us! How come they are running backwards in such a crappy shape?! Where're their armors? Weapons?! Mounts?! Where the f*ck are their slaves and guards?!!"

No one could answer this string of questions, but the few Jia Clan warriors who running the fastest among those captured elite warriors had already approached the divine tower.

Di Sha suddenly let out a thunderous growl.

"Something is wrong with them!! Stop them!! If anyone dares to resist...Kill!!"

It seemed that Di Sha's growl had suddenly woken those Jia Clan warriors who had been guarding around the divine tower. A whole two-thousand Jia Clan warriors roared out simultaneously, pulling out their weapons, and moved forward.

However, these captured elite warriors, who had already became Ginger's bug puppets, each let out a faint and creepy smile. Their eyeballs suddenly turned into scary deadly pale, and those pale eyeballs abruptly split into compound eyes, just like the eyes of an insect. In the meantime, an extremely weird noise came out of their bodies.

Abruptly, the bodies of the few Jia Clan warriors, who had already approached the divine tower, suddenly expanded, and their dark bronze skin turned into a light silver color. The silver color of their skin grew thicker and thicker and after that they looked nothing different from pure silver statues.

A dense and great sense of spirit blood power gushed out of the bodies of each bug puppet warriors, after which, their bodies suddenly shrunk into the size of an ordinary human's head and blasted out.

Broken body parts and blood mixed with fist-sized black beetles rose in the air, spreading everywhere.

These beetles were all of thin and sharp shapes, and had extremely solid carapaces. While these black beetles darted in the air randomly, they were even more effective than countless flying daggers. Especially, under Ginger's control, those Jia Clan warriors had burned all of their spirit blood and their souls, causing the spontaneous explosions, sending those sharp bugs darting out, therefore, making each black beetle quite powerful.

Moreover, these black beetles took control of their flying directions, which were all aimed right at the divine tower.

Seven to eight Jia Clan warriors had exploded themselves, and each of them had over a thousand beetles like this spurting out from their bodies, which meant that over ten-thousand sharp and powerful flying daggers were darting towards the divine tower like a horrible heavy rain.

Ear-piercing metal-clashing noise rose into the air and lingered. Among the two-thousand Jia Clan warriors who had been guarding the tower, hundreds of them were struck by those lightning bolts-like, sharp beetles. Their armors let out bright and dense light beams, while those Beatles bumped against their armors and exploded one after another.

Every time when a beetle exploded, unbelievably great amount of poisonous air and countless crystal-like bug eggs would spurt out from their bodies.

Those bug eggs firmly stuck on shields of those tower guards. Their shields were condensed from natural powers, which were turned into solid metal by special magic formations and were the

most nutritious food for those bugs. Quite a few Jia Clan warriors had their shields and armors shattered by the bugs. Those bug eggs quickly expanded, while those shield dimmed down and quite many armors of those Jia Clan tower guards were swallowed by those expanding bug eggs, and completely disappeared.

Along with a series of clattering noise, the black beetles hatched.

Chapter 272: Exasperating

Mr Crow stretched his wings and rose into the air, while Ji Hao stood on Mr Crow's back with his fiery wings flapping in the wind. The two of them corresponded perfectly with each other and transformed into a stream of fiery light, rising into the sky over thirty-thousand high altitude within the blink of an eye.

Ji Hao was holding a pure black banner in his hands which was made from the skin of an unknown, gigantic worm. On its soft and smooth surface, countless tiny bug silhouettes were faintly visible, while wisps of black smoke continuously rose from the banner and weird, creepy insects screaming sounds were ceaselessly releasing from it.

The stick of the banner in Ji Hao's hands was squirming slightly and slowly, as if it was a huge living worm rather than a stick.

This was a magic bug banner, specially crafted by Ginger himself, and could magically foster new poisonous bugs and largely improve the powers of those bugs. However, to be honest, the texture of the banner stick was incomparably and unspeakably sticky.

Ji Hao even felt that he was holding a handful of squirming fat worms, which made his scalp turn numb.

Mr Crow brought up a bright stream of fiery light, tearing up clouds apart and swiftly reaching right beyond Di Sha's army. He then raised his head and cawed resonantly, while opening his beak and letting out a swooshing sticky stream of flame. Raging flame fell from the sky onto Di Sha's army like a heavy scary rain.

Huge numbers of slave warriors were burned to ashes by the flame while despairingly howling in pain. Within the span of only a few breaths, Mr Crow had burned at least two to three thousands of slave warriors to death.

The attack launched by Mr Crow immediately caught the attention of the other non-humankind warriors. Over ten Yu Clan warriors, who had been guarding the divine tower, raised their heads, aiming at Mr Crow with their shining blood-red erect eyes simultaneously. Nevertheless, Mr Crow could fly at a lightning speed, making it impossible for these Yu Clan's warriors to attack him accurately.

Ji Hao stood on Mr Crow's back, abruptly waving the magic bug banner held in his hand, when Mr Crow flew past the divine tower.

Clouds of black smoke suddenly swooshed out of the banner. Unbelievably great amount of bugs and bug eggs contained in that black smoke spurted out from the banners, falling onto the army like a crazy, heavy and roaring rain. The black smoke coiled around those bug puppets. Instantly, the rushing speed of those bug puppets was raised by a few times. Those bug puppets darted towards the divine tower like mad, bewitched wild dogs, and then exploded one after another.

The bug eggs were sent into the air, so dense that it even covered the sky, while countless blade shaped black beetles swished across the air randomly.

The armors of hundreds of Jia Clan warrior were shattered by these black beetles. These black beetles stuck on their bodies, creating a horrible clashing noise against their armors, and punctured those heavy and thick armors. These sharp black beetles easily pierced into the bodies of those Jia Clan warriors, then laid large amounts of bug eggs inside their bodies, like flooding streams gushing into their blood vessels.

These Jia Clan's warriors could clearly see that under their skin, large amounts of grapes like bug eggs had been squirming and hatching.

The scene was a million times more terrifying that a nightmare.

These warriors of the official Blood Moon army could block the

swords of their enemies with their bare necks without any hesitation, but watching countless bug eggs squirming inside their own bodies and right under their skins, these strong, powerful and tough warriors couldn't hold in that extreme fearful and sickly feeling. They screamed out one after another.

Not long after that, those bug eggs cracked inside their bodies. Countless bugs crawled out of their bodies while leaving streams of venomous, poisonous air and powders inside their bodies, which quickly and rampantly spread inside their muscular and solid bodies.

"General!!"

A deputy commander beside Di Sha shouted loudly.

Di Sha wasn't paying any attention to his army, which had already fallen into a huge chaos. Instead, he raised his head with a dim blood-red light faintly sparkling inside his erect eye on his forehead, which was firmly fixed on Ji Hao, who was standing on Mr Crow's back, darting across the sky, above the army. Directly after that, the erect eye turned into a mysterious pure black color.

The power of the Blood Moon came from the darkness and the curse of their bloodline. After Di Sha had seen Ji Hao, his entire body and shoulder seemingly had turned into a sphere of deepest darkness, which had begun absorbing the natural power in the air, and even the daylight around him, with the erect eye on his forehead. The entire area, which had a radius of a few zhang around him, had already become a huge, powerful and twisted black hole.

Ji Hao looked down and made a quick eye contact with Di Sha from tens of miles away.

He raised his left hand and made a provocative hand gesture towards Di Sha, then took out a tablet that had the totem of the Blood Fang embossed on it, carelessly throwing it down with a sneer on his face.

Mr Crow flew across the air above the army, while those bug puppets had been madly darting around on the ground, rushing into the army and exploding. Every explosion made by a Jia Clan bug puppet would blow all the warriors around them, who used to be their fellows, into pieces. After that, countless bugs would eat up their broken body parts, and lay even more and more bug eggs that would then hatch instantly into bigger and more powerful bugs.

Tens of bug puppets, which were the strongest and most powerful among all those bug puppets, had already broken through the protection circle and reached the divine tower. While exploding suddenly, they popped out their deadly pale eyes and let out creepy laughter at those Yu Clan warriors, who had been trying their best to protect the tower. Countless sharp black beetles and bug eggs were shot out by the exploding waves, darting towards those Yu Clan warriors and the divine tower behind them.

The Yu Clan warriors who were standing around the base of the tower and were in charge of manipulating this divine tower instantly let a series of howls out. Just like those guards who had been guarding the tower, they were wounded by those black beetles as well, and had countless bug eggs laid inside their bodies. With their spiritual power, which was many times greater than those Jia Clan warriors', they could clearly perceive the complete hatching process of those bugs within their bodies.

These elite warriors from the Yu Clan lost it completely one after the other. They roared hoarsely out like wounded beasts. They even forgot about protecting the divine tower. Instead they activated their powers and started chanting spells. A bright blood-red light burst out from their bodies, while trying everything within their powers to kill the bugs inside their bodies.

Countless blood-red spell symbols rose into the air, and stuck on the bodies of these Yu Clan warriors like blood-red lightning bolts.

Along with loud and muffled popping noises, the bug eggs inside

these Yu Clan warriors cracked one after another. Those powerful bugs breeding in those eggs were quickly devoured by the power of the blood spell symbols, and were turned into powers and life-force of those Yu Clan warriors. However, the hatching process had already consumed large amounts of blood and flesh of these Yu Clan warriors. Although they managed to kill all the bug eggs inside their bodies, countless fist-sized holes had been left inside their bodies.

Di Sha still didn't pay any attention to those wounded deputy commanders of his. Even the fact that the eyeballs of a few Jia Clan warriors had already begun turning pale, which meant, these warriors were gradually turning into bug puppets, was still not enough. Di Sha kept his head raised, while staring at the tablet swishing down from the air.

Followed by a loud slapping noise, Di Sha accurately gripped the tablet in his hand, and at the same time, a raging sphere of blood-red flame burst out of his palm that burned the tablet, which was forged from top-grade gold, into a wisp of smoke.

"All-out attack," Di Sha ordered blandly, "Activate all large-scale battle machines. They wanted to exasperate me... and they did it."

Taking a deep breath, Di Sha narrowed his eyes and pondered for a while, then quickly gave out his order.

"All-out attack, then ask General Di Suo, Di Mo and Ju Xiu for reinforcements."

Chapter 273: Array

Like a tsunami, countless black beetles and bug eggs swooshed towards the divine tower.

Di Sha looked with scorn at the roaring tide of bugs. He abruptly opened his mouth and let out a fist-sized, faintly sparkling purple pearl, which had nine fiery dragons embossed on it and was wrapped in fiery light.

Resonating roaring sounds of dragons instantly filled the air while large and raging streams of purple flame enveloped the entire area within a radius of tens of miles.

The dense and roaring purple flame immediately wiped all the bugs and the bug eggs out. At the same time, these squirming purple streams of flame that looked like living creatures stuck on the bodies of those wounded warriors and burned all the bugs and bug eggs which were laid on or inside their bodies, without leaving even a trace. That violent purple flame even burned the unwounded skins of those warriors black as well, but none of those warriors noticed the pain, and all raised their arms high, yelling in excitement.

The bug puppets that had yet to explode had missed their chance to do so. A zhang long fiery dragon rushed out of the purple pearl and transformed into a stream of light, which swiftly punctured through the bodies of these puppets.

Each pore of these puppets emitted a beam of fiery light. All the hidden eggs inside their bodies were burned to ashes, after which those puppets quickly collapsed into a puff of ash as well, slowly dissipating in the air.

Di Sha narrowed his eyes, stood beside the divine tower, proudly raised his arms and yelled, "The highest Blood Moon."

All the warriors in the army of Di Sha, including the rich kids

who had come from large and wealthy families with the sole purpose of making huge profits, joined him into yelling.

"The greatest Blood Moon!"

With this loud, thunderous roar that was let out by tens of thousands of warriors simultaneously, the morale of the Di Sha's army suddenly rose to its peak. Although those bug puppets had made them lose thousands of people, at this moment, the face of every warrior had turned into a weird red color, which showed these warriors were now extremely eager to fight.

Ji Hao was standing on Mr Crow's back, while looking at Di Sha, who had been madly roaring towards the sky, from a great distance.

A gale raised Di Sha's luxurious cloak, his clothes and his long hair up. The cloak fluttered in the wind, while his whole body was wrapped in a bright and dense blood-red light. The erect eye on his forehead was now pure-dark. When looked at from a distance, Di Sha seemed like a devil who had just crawled out of the hell, filled with an evil power that would make people quiver.

What had surprised Ji Hao more was that the stone sword had been shaking inside his spiritual space.

The stone sword was reacting to the power of the purple pearl. Obviously, that purple pearl was also a natural-formed magic treasure, a holy weapon, and had naturally bred a special kind of flame, which was extremely mysterious and powerful.

This purple nine dragons fiery pearl was the invincible opponent of Ginger's magic bug formation.

"This guy has indeed very good luck. I can smell the Southern Wasteland scent from this purple pearl," murmured Ji Hao while trying to comfort the stone sword, which seemed a bit anxious in his spiritual space.

The stone sword had been nourished and cultivated with Ji Hao's

soul power, therefore, it soon quieted down due to Ji Hao's comforting.

However, the nine dragons fiery pearl had been swiftly and violently rotating around Di Sha, while spurting a large amount of purple flame. Di Sha had been growling deeply. He suddenly opened his mouth and let out three mouthfuls of blood on that pearl, while a blood-red beam of light darted out of his erect eye and struck on that pearl, which barely allowed him to swallow the pearl back in.

"A holy weapon that hasn't been bound yet," Ji Hao's eyes suddenly shone, while taking a glance at Di Sha, who now had a slight wisp of blood flowing down from his mouth corner.

Mr Crow cawed aloud, then transformed back into a stream of fiery light and flew into the Chi Ban Mountain area. Ji Hao turned his head back and looked around, discovering that Di Sha was now standing on the divine tower and was yelling loudly, along with which, the army quickly gathered towards him and increased its moving speed, closely following behind Ji Hao.

After only ten minutes, Ji Hao had arrived where Ginger had been waiting, hovered around in the air then landed down.

Ginger's face had turned incomparably dark. He kept his eyes closed, while he said in a low, ghost-like voice, "A holy weapon that has bred a natural spirit flame... We have some trouble here. Bugs and all kinds of Gu are naturally afraid of flame. I have indeed fostered a few kinds of bugs that could resist flames, but only a few kinds."

"This is their luck," sighed Ginger, while narrowing his eyes and taking a glance at Di Sha's army.

The Blood Moon Divine Tower kept letting out huge streams of blood-red light, which left a long arc in the air and struck hard on the ground. Those blood-red light streams exploded against the ground and let out countless tiny spell symbols out, which would

then explode in a row. With all these spell symbols, the divine tower could detect all the hidden magic formations and ambush formations.

Ji Hao stayed silent, narrowed his eyes as well and tried his best to come up with a solution.

Di Sha had the nine dragon fiery pearl with him, which had weakened Ginger's ocean-like magic bug formation by at least ninety percent. Added with that, they had failed to destroy the divine tower - another extra effective defensive power of this army.

This fight was going to be hard.

Nevertheless, soon enough a magic talisman flew out from Ginger's sleeve, and a beam of dim light spurted out from it, followed by which, Si Wen Ming's voice came out from the talisman.

"Stick to the plan. Ji Hao is the bait, he has to draw all of Di Sha's attention. Four human armies are now less than a thousand miles from you. Once Di Sha and his army has been led into the designed massacre spot, the four armies will launch attacks joined-handily. We have to wipe Di Sha's army out, right here!"

"Are we still going to take the frontal fight?" Ji Hao shook his head with a bitter smile on his face.

"Every single time, we have to take the frontal fight. Only killing enough monsters could make them draw back," said Ginger blandly, "Only the frontal fight can allow us to kill enough monsters and push them back, we have no other choices."

A long shout came from afar. Thousands of muscular warriors, who were all wearing thick full metallic armors, holding exactly the same long spears and riding on black cheetahs, which were wearing full metallic armors as well, quickly moved forward from the back.

All these battle cheetahs ridden by those warriors looked especially powerful and well-trained. They could leap directly onto a small hill from another one. At the moment that Ji Hao heard that long shout, this black cheetah army was still over a hundred miles away from them, but after the span of only tens of breaths, these armored warriors had already rushed up to Ji Hao.

"I am Lie Mountain Clan's Lie Mountain Gang. I have come to this life-and-death battle under the order."

On an especially tall and muscular black cheetah's back, a tall and sturdy man, who looked even as powerful as those Jia Clan warriors, raised his long spear, waved it in the air and nodded his head to Ji Hao expressionlessly.

Coming to this life-and-death battle under the order, hearing Lie Mountain Gang's words, Ji Hao couldn't help but get goosebumps on his scalp, while all of his fine hairs were standing straight up immediately.

Staring at this man, who looked as strong and solid as a mountain, Ji Hao wondered what kind of order he actually just had received.

"Follow me," Ji Hao didn't have any time to do any extra talk with this man. He only guided him to walk down the hill, to the exit of a valley. Man Man and Ji Hao's other teammates had already been waiting there, along with tens of Magi Palace's apprentices, who were still holding Ginger's magic bug banners.

After Ji Hao arrived, Lie Mountain Gang waved his long spear, and following his move, a whole three-thousand heavily armored warriors from the Lie Mountain clan lined up behind Ji Hao into thirty horizontal lines.

A thick blood-red light stream suddenly struck on the ground and exploded right in front of Ji Hao, less than ten zhang away from him.

The detective blood-red light released by the Blood Moon divine tower had already struck down, while in the front of Di Sha's army, those captured people were pushed into this valley.

Chapter 274: Useless

A line of a thousand people, consisting of elderly people, women and kids, all who had been captured by Di Sha, were pushed into the army while screaming and crying. The valley had immediately been filled with humans. Under pressure of the non-human race forces, these people staggered towards the exit of the valley.

Right then, a sensory stream of blood-red light flew right in front of Ji Hao, while quite an amount of tiny blood-red symbols collided against the body of Ji Hao. Those spell symbols exploded immediately, causing huge amounts of fiery sparks against the turtle shell armor of Ji Hao.

The sensory stream of light was unspeakably magical. When those spell symbols exploded, Ji Hao's turtle shell armor automatically letting out waves of water ripple-like light streams, flowing around Ji Hao's entire armour, while one light stream condensed into a hazy black turtle silhouette above Ji Hao's head.

"Eh?! Ji Hao! A turtle had been hiding in your armor!" Man Man had thrown her pair of hammers on the ground, and been continuously crushing bird eggs, out which she poured fresh, clear egg liquid into her mouth. Ji Hao had no idea about where had she found those eggs.

Seeing the silhouette of the black turtle above Ji Hao's head, Man Man immediately laughed out in excitement and yelled, "Man Man has an armor too! Abba made me my armour with many, many treasures in the Pu Ban City!"

Wisps of flame slowly gushed out of Man Man's body along with her silvery laughter. The flames, which seemed to be flowing like streams of water, gathered quickly together and gradually formed a translucent purple-red armor that was shaped according to an ancient style, with smooth and simple lines. A thick and fine layer of dragon scale patterns covered her entire armor up, while two-

foot squared flame patterns were embossed on the chest and back areas of the armor.

Streams of fire power gushed out of this completely sealed armor and formed into a zhangs tall volcano floating above the head of Man Man.

The natural power contained in the surrounding environment was rapidly being absorbed by the volcano, which soon transformed into pure flame and flew back into the armor. Along with this, the heat emitted by Man Man's armor increased more and more, to the point that even the rock under her feet began to melt slowly.

"Good stuff, with this armor, Man Man, you'll be a lot safer in battle." Ji Hao nodded with satisfaction while patting on Man Man's head.

Man Man laughed proudly. She then hurriedly dropped those bird eggs, which were burned black by her scorching hot armor, and took out a handful of fire-red magic talismans. She handed them over to her other teammates while murmuring, "These are protection talismans. Abba gave them to Man Man. Take these, take more, don't be too shy, just use when you need. When we get back to the Pu Ban City, we can ask Abba for plenty of these!"

Soon, Man Man had thrust a handful of magic talisman to each of her teammates. When she walked up to Lie Mountain Gang, she hesitated, lifted her mask up, which had flame patterns embossed on it. She looked seriously at him and asked, "Big one, are you under the command of Lie Mountain Xu?"

Lie Mountain Gang glanced at her, then lowered his head, looked at her seriously, and responded with a muffled voice, "I am a close minister under Prince Kang's command."

Hearing that, Man Man gave such a big grin that her sparkling eyes had even been squeezed into two curved lines. She opened her storage bag that she tied around her waist, then carefully counted

the remaining talismans contained in it, after that, she conveniently threw the entire storage bag at Lie Mountain Gang. She said, "Ah, if you are under Lie Mountain Kang's lead then you are a good person. You can have all these talismans and give them to your soldiers as well. But, had you have been one of Lie Mountain Xu's men, Man Man would not even bother talking to you."

Lie Mountain Gang and the group of warriors standing behind him paused for a second, then showed faint smiles on their serious and manly faces.

Looking at the exquisite, boiling hot storage bag giving by Man Man, Lie Mountain Gang silently cupped his hands and saluted Man Man. Then he took out the hundreds of magic talismans contained in it, turned back and took a glance at the three-thousand warriors lined up behind him. He gave these magic talisman to the over a hundred most powerful warriors of his.

"Take this, kill more non-human monsters!" said Lie Mountain Gang in a low yet harsh voice, "Live a bit longer so you can kill a few more monsters!"

Far away, the divine tower had already risen into the air. Di Sha stood on the bottom floor of the tower, with tens of luxuriously dressed warriors of the Yu Clan floating around him, pointing their fingers at Ji Hao and the others. A dark blood-red light appeared inside the blood-red erect eye floating above the towers, coldly, expressionlessly staring at Ji Hao and Lie Mountain Gang's warriors.

The sounds of heavy footsteps could be heard coming from the other side of the valley. After about a quarter of an hour, huge quantities of human captives walked out of the valley while wailing and crying. They were rushing towards Ji Hao and the others, who stood near the exit of the valley.

The groups of slave warriors were mixed within the group of

captives. They were laughing madly with high-pitched voices, while waving their long whips hard and forcing those weak and wounded human captives to run at their highest speed.

Some elderly men screamed out with their faces covered in tears and blood.

"Do not attack! Do not attack! We're humans as well!"

"Help, please! I can die, but my little grandson, he's so little!"

"Kill these monsters, revenge our humankind, kill them!!"

Some elderly people raised their arms, holding infants up. The young people in their clans were either killed or captured and sold as slaves. Only the old, weak, sick and wounded people like them and these infants were forced to rush into the battlefield by those non-human monsters.

Ji Hao slowly raised his black dagger, and suddenly, a fire-red beam of light darted out from the edge of his dagger.

Those classified and secret books he had found in the Magi Palace had recorded in details that among these non-humankind monsters, the Blood Moon liked the most to force human captives to rush into the battlefield ahead of the army. If the human warriors would be too soft-hearted to kill these human captives, the warriors of the Yu Clan would immediately incant their blood curse spells at these human captives who were rushing into the human army. They would use the spirit blood of these human captives as a trigger to release a terrifyingly destructive power.

Under Di Sha's control, these human captives were even more effective and powerful than Ginger's bug puppets.

However, Ginger's bug puppets couldn't cry and wail, and would never beg for living. Therefore, those bug puppets could barely cause any mentally influence on their army, while these human captives, who kept their minds perfectly clear, and completely understood that they were being rushed to their deaths, were

totally filled with despair and desperation. These human captives had a nearly destructive influence on the human warriors.

Many human warriors had instantly broken down at their first time rushing into a real battlefield, because they were ordered to kill those weak or old human captives who were sent into the battlefield as human bombs.

Ji Hao raised his long black dagger, but couldn't make any move.

Yu Mu, Feng Xing and Taisi, all of their faces were now deadly pale, while their bodies were trembling violently. They were all filled with pain and anger.

Shaosi and Man Man were staring at Ji Hao. It was clear that the two girls didn't know what to do or if they could do anything to this situation. Both of them had put all of their attention on Ji Hao. If Ji Hao gave the order to kill, they would instantly launch deadly attacks against these human captives, who had been rushing towards them and were filled with despair, without the slightest bit of hesitation. But in front of these elderly men, women and children, even infants, the two girls had completely lost the capability of making decisions.

Ji Hao couldn't help but quickly and continuously gulp. His eyes looked around, and neither could he make any decision.

Even though he clearly knew how terrible the consequence would be if he let these weak, vulnerable human captives rush into Lie Mountain Gang's army, he still wasn't able to make up his mind.

In the Southern Wasteland, when he had fought against the Black Water Serpent Clan and other clans, he had killed countless clansmen of the enemies' clans without showing any mercy. But these human captives in front of him, these elderly men, children and women, they were all completely vulnerable, begging for their lives, never ever having offended Ji Hao or his friend or families. They were not the clansmen from his enemies' clans; these people

were simple, most ordinary human beings that could exist.

Ji Hao's mind was telling him clearly to give the order of killing.

But the moral limitation in his heart was letting out a shrill alarm, forbidding Ji Hao from making such a decision.

Ji Hao now felt that there were two ways in front of him, one step to the right, on which he would go to the heaven, while one step towards left, where he would fall into hell.

One step right, he could become a god, while one step left, he would turn into a devil.

Ji Hao couldn't stop trembling, while cold sweat gushed out of his forehead in streams. While facing these desperate and frightened elderly people, children and women, when these poor human captives were rushing closer and closer to him from less than a mile away, Ji Hao had truly discovered the weakness and uselessness that had been buried in the deepest part of his heart.

Chapter 275: Determination

While those human prisoners were rushing towards Ji Hao and the black cheetah army, thousands miles away and on top of a huge mountain, Gui Ling was sitting under a towering tree with her legs crossed. Her eyes were shining with a mysterious and bright light, while she was watching every single movement that happened on the battlefield.

A few of her apprentices were standing at the side. One girl, who looked quite honest and adorable, said carefully, "Dear Shifu, if you were there, would you kill those people?"

Gui Ling raised her head and glanced at the sky, while slightly waving the horsetail whisk in her hand and letting out a faint, mysterious, complicated smile.

Quite a long while later, Gui Ling said slowly, "If I would be there, I would show my real body and block that valley for good. No matter how many human captives they might have sent, none of them would be able to even get into that valley."

The faces of the few apprentices twisted simultaneously. They looked at their Shifu with weird expressions. The young girl who had just asked the question stamped her feet against the ground and complained, "Shifu, that's not even a solution. How could you do this? The problem wouldn't be solved even if you blocked the valley."

While grinning faintly, Gui Ling gently looked at that girl and responded in a low voice, "Kill or not kill, regarding this question, not only me as your Shifu, or our little friend Ji Hao, even my Shifu, your grandmaster, probably doesn't have the correct answer either."

The black jade Ruyi held in her hand abruptly let out a sharp black beam of light. Gui Ling narrowed her eyes and murmured to herself, "Shifu, facing these people, would you wave your sword?

Or be as soft-hearted as you were back then?"

Hearing the word 'grandmaster', the face of each of Gui Ling's apprentices instantly turned serious. They politely and hurriedly saluted to the sky, in the meanwhile, they couldn't help but look curiously at their own Shi Fu, Gui Ling. They were all fully aware of how powerful and mysterious their grandmaster was. Only over hundred-thousand weak human captives were like groups of ants in front of their grandmaster. How could such a situation trouble that greatly powerful grandmaster?

In the opposite direction from where Gui Ling was staying at, and a thousands of miles away as well, two men, wearing simple white flax clothes, with bare white feet and their long hair hung loosely on their backs, were also standing on top of a mountain and were watching the battlefield that Ji Hao and his friends were fighting in.

The two men had tender skin that was as smooth and shining as jade. Both of their pupils had hazy silhouettes of white lotuses faintly sparkling inside them. When they saw those weak human captives being forced to rush toward Ji Hao and the black cheetah army, they laughed out simultaneously.

"Poor, poor people, these sad, sorrowful and bitter lives."

"Brother, you're right. Therefore, this is the perfect moment for us to help them out of their bitterness, and accumulate our merits and virtues in this world."

"This time, the Blood Moon has started a great war... the Chi Ban Mountain now is surrounded by miserable, poor, innocent people."

"Exactly, brother, because of this great bloody cruel war, started by the Blood Moon, if these lowly miserable people want to survive, they could only join us and cultivate themselves under our guidance."

"Younger brother, your words are quite reasonable, but, those

lowly and weak people will not bring us too many benefits even if they are willing to join us. If those powerful Senior Magi or Magus Kings, who possess a relatively high status, fall into deadly dangerous situations and eagerly need our help, that would be a truly great merit for us to take these people into our sect."

The two of them calmly talked to each other, their faces filled with grins all the time. Sometimes, they were way too excited to control their powers, which had been gushing around their bodies. From their mouths they would spurt white lotuses out, one after another, lingering around their bodies along with a faint, nice fragrance.

Outside of the army, seeing more and more people rushing closer and closer to him, the long black dagger held in Ji Hao's hand was quivering slightly, but Ji Hao still couldn't give the order to kill.

"Kill, or not kill, Ji Hao, kill, or not kill," thousands of miles away, Gui Ling slowly stood up from the ground while murmuring subconsciously.

"Kill or not kill? Brother, look at that kid, struggling so much. It is indeed very amusing." On top of another mountain, also thousands of miles away, the two men laughed out loud again. Their laughs were filled with teases towards Ji Hao's struggle and hesitation.

Kill or not kill? Ji Hao stared silently at those human captives. He had never slaughtered innocent people ever. Whether it had been in his previous life or his current life, all he had killed were his enemies. As long as they were enemies, Ji Hao's mind would be incomparably determined and he could solve any problem by simply waving his dagger.

But these elderly people, women and children, their faces were covered in blood and tears.

"Kill! Kill them all!!" Those slaves, which had been pushing these prisoners into the valley, opened their mouths wide and laughed

crazily. Their mouths were extremely huge, which made them look like a group of frogs at the first glance. Thick triangle-shaped sharp teeth were exposed when they opened their mouths, and the slits between their teeth still had large amounts of meat and blood stains.

From a great distance, Ji hao had sensed the horrible stink coming from the mouths of these slaves.

"These things probably never brush their teeth." For no reason, at this deadly moment, Ji Hao had a ridiculous thought like this.

"Ji Hao, Ji Hao!!" Man Man gripped her pair of hammers nervously and slightly poked Ji Hao's shoulder with one of her hammerheads, "What should we do?!" Ji Hao staggered a step forward. He had nearly been pushed onto the ground by Man Man.

Taisi was very nervous as well. He tremblingly raised his bone cane while his body spurted out wisps of black smoke, continuously gathering into the bone cane. His eyes had turned into pure black without any luster. As long as Ji Hao gave the order, he could immediately activate his dead curse.

Feng Xing had already disappeared. No one knew where he had hidden himself. Feng Xing liked to hide far away and let out his surprise arrows the most, but when facing this kind of struggling and emergency situation, he was more than willing to step aside and let Ji Hao carry the burden.

As for Yu Mu, that fatso was now soaked in cold sweat because of the nervousness... only god knew from where he got an entire grilled boar. At this moment, he had been wolfing the boar meat with a crazily vicious manner, as if the poor boar had murdered his father. Followed by a loud bone cracking noise, Yu Mu chewed a thick boar leg bone broke in extreme nervous.

Behind Ji Hao, on a cliff, Ginger had been silently standing there and staring at Ji Hao.

Without knowing when, a tall and slim warrior, wearing a feather cloak and holding a longbow, showed up beside Ginger. Looking at Ji Hao, who had fallen into this deadly dilemma and had been struggling so hard, this handsome young warrior let out a bitter grin and said, "Elder, why don't we..."

Ginger slightly shook his head and interrupted him, saying, "Bao, since Ji Hao is selected by Si Wen Ming, he has to go through this by himself. In the future, he will encounter situations that are much crueler and more struggling than this one. A thought of his could affect the lives of countless people... you cannot help him."

The tall and slim warrior, named Great Gale Bao, gasped deeply, held the longbow in his arm, closed his eyes and said, "After the span of three breathes, I will give my order."

Watched by all these people, Ji Hao suddenly lifted his mask and hacked on his own face with that black long dagger.

The wound on his face was so deep that one could even see his skull. Blood gushed out immediately, dying his entire face red.

Ji Hao raised the long dagger again, growled out hoarsely and resonantly, "The world has no mercy, treating all creatures like straw dogs... both you and we are the same. You shall die in peace. In the future, I will slaughter the last monster in the world and offer their blood to your souls! Take my vow, and it will be witnessed by the heaven and the earth!"

Once he finished the vow, the sharp, dazzlingly shining dagger edge swept across the air and let out an over hundred-zhang long beam of light.

Behind the group of human captives, in the army, Di Sha let out a scornful smile while flicking his finger. Thousands of human captives who had been rushing in the front suddenly exploded, turning into waves of blood mist and swooshing right towards Ji Hao and the black cheetah army.

Chapter 276: Blood Waves

"The world knows no mercy and treats all creatures like straw dogs."Gui Ling suddenly narrowed her eyes. A bright light immediately shone from her eyes that went hundreds of zhang far.

"Unspeakably magical, it is the true righteous spirit," Her body quivered slightly while she murmured in a low voice. "His words sounded so simple and normal, yet it has shaken even my heart. This is nothing else but the voice of the natural law. Little friend Ji Hao, when our Shifu finally meets you, he will certainly be so happy."

On the other mountaintop, the two men laughed out loud once again.

"Brother, this kid is so reckless. How dare he make such a deadly big vow, saying that he would slaughter all non-humankind for these lowly people. Not to mention, even if these lowly, ant-like people were worth this, it is still so ridiculous for him to have said he would kill all non-humankind, just so ridiculous."

"Hm, he doesn't even know what he is talking about. Kill all non-human races? If our two grandmasters meet this stupid kid...such an arrogant one, who dares to make a vow like this. He is seeking his own death. A real arrogant, stupid and ridiculous kid... who doesn't even know what he has just said."

The eyes of Ginger and Great Gale Bao started to shine suddenly, and they said, "Kill all non-humankind, ha, good! This is how a decent human being should be!"

Great Gale Bao let out three loud laughers in a row, then pulled his longbow open and shot out three shrilly swishing arrows towards the sky. Those blood-red arrows directly darted into the air while letting out a resonating dragon-roar-like swishing sound. Along with the sound, large groups of iron-feathered eagles darted into the sky from the valley behind him.

The iron-feathered eagles had a wingspan of only less than three zhang, and were relatively small in shape when compared to the other large-scale fighting birds. However, the iron-feathered eagles were especially fierce and could fly genuinely at lightning speed. Their reaction speed was extremely fast in the air. In the air, these iron-feathered eagles were incomparably flexible; moreover, their feathers were solid yet pliable, and could block all attacks that were launched by sharp weapons like swords, machetes and arrows. Therefore, these kinds of fighting birds were especially preferred by the archers of the Eastern Wasteland.

Over ten thousand iron-feathered eagles had flown out from the valley, and each of those eagles were carrying an archer, who was wearing leather armor and holding a longbow, while continuously letting out long and resonating shouts. Under control of these archers, those iron-feathered eagles rose into the air to an altitude of over a hundred thousand feet instantly.

These iron-feathered eagles were powerful and fast. It only took the span of fewer than five breaths to get from the ground to a high altitude. The archers who were standing on their backs were all elite archers. They were from Emperor Shun's guard regiment, under direct command of the Emperor. During these five breaths, every single one of them had shot out a hundred arrows.

These arrows caused the sky to darken. A whole million arrows swished down from the sky along with high-pitched noises. The heavy rain of arrows flew past the valley that was filled with the weak human prisoners. Instead, these arrows darted directly towards the official army under Di Sha's command.

These one million arrows were all ordinary ironwood arrows, which were the simplest and cheapest kind of arrows. One could buy a thousand of them with a jade coin. If one would trade all these arrows for jade coins, one would be able to carry all those coins in a slightly bigger leather bag.

However, a whole million arrows swooshed down from the air

simultaneously, a scene that was still worse than any nightmare.

Every single arrow was wrapped in a cyan gust of wind. All these archers led by Great Gale Bao had activated their Great Gale magic, which was the most commonly used archery magic in the Eastern Wasteland when shooting arrows. The arrows darted as fast as the fierce wind, and couldn't even be seen clearly with bare eyes. Cyan-colored spots of light fell from the air, accurately onto the groups of the non-human race army, who hadn't yet moved into the valley.

Over ten thousand slaves howled out together. Their single half-body armors were punctured by only the first wave of arrows, after which, the second waves of arrows thickly pierced into their bodies and knocked them down on the ground, causing them to twitch crazily. Soon, the great power contained in those arrows tore them into tiny pieces.

Behind those slaves, thousands of Jia Clan warriors had formed into a square-shaped formation. Seeing those swishing arrows that had even darkened the sky, these Jia Clan warriors had grabbed the heavy and huge shields carried on the back of each of them simultaneously and shielded themselves underneath them.

The incoming waves of arrows collided against those shields like a roaring heavy rain, and streams of bright light let out by the spell symbols on the surfaces of those shields sparkled around that shield.

After tens of waves of fierce arrows, those spell symbols, which had been stricken hard in a row, finally exploded, and those heavy and thick metal shields cracked into pieces along with sounds of thunderous booms. The next wave of arrows that came right after that swished into the formation of the Jia Clan warriors, swiftly piercing through their armors.

Those thick and fully metallic armors repeated what those shields had done; they spurted out bright streams of light and

wrapped those Jia Clan's warriors up, but soon exploded under the destructive powers of those arrows, one after another. Those arrows pierced into bodies of Jia Clan warriors through their thick and well-crafted armors, and tore their bodies apart, piercing into their internal organs and bones. Inside their bodies, the cyan-colored gust of wind that was wrapped around the arrowheads exploded abruptly into tiny yet fierce gusts of winds, circulating madly inside the bodies of those warriors.

Those Jia Clan warriors growled out in pain, while pulling out the arrows from their bodies and letting fresh blood spurt out.

They gasped quickly and deeply. Their great life-force quickly healed their wounds, even their broken internal organs had all recovered completely within a short while. However, those arrows had indeed consumed their life-force and strength in a manner that both their strength and battle effectiveness had dropped by at least thirty percent.

Countless arrows still ceaselessly swished towards them, piercing into their bodies and continuously causing new wounds.

Those Jia Clan warriors were waving their weapons hard, hacking waves of arrows into pieces, however, there were way too many and densely clustered arrows. A few arrows would always survive their weapons and pierce into their bodies, causing them a great pain and consuming their strength and life force at the same time.

Those arrows had stopped the Di Sha army from moving into the valley, only tens of thousands of slaves kept pushing those human prisoners towards Ji Hao and the black cheetah army.

Di Sha had a faint evil smile on his face. He stood on the first floor of the divine tower while tens of deputy commanders stared at him. Streams of blood-red light spurted out from the erect eyes of these deputy commanders, which had being absorbed by Di Sha's body, providing a horribly great amount of power, which he

could spend lavishly.

"Slaughter all of us. Stupid, ignorant barbarian," cursing Di Sha in a low voice, "If you hadn't kill Di Luo, that useless stupid brother of mine, I wouldn't even take a glance at you, a weak, poor barbarian. This is your glorious moment... I am acknowledging you formally as my enemy!"

He stretched his arms and abruptly raised both of them, after which Di Sha roared harshly, "You uncivilized poor creatures, bear my, Di Sha's, anger. On behalf of our Di Family, I am now begging the great Blood Moon for mercy, for endless glory, to wash off the humiliation, which my useless brother Di Luo had brought us with his death."

Inside the valley, the bodies over a hundred thousand human prisoners and a hundred thousand slaves exploded simultaneously, turning into a terrifying tsunami of blood, roaring towards Ji Hao and the others.

That red fresh blood, which emitted a dense horrible scent of blood, rapidly corrupted and turned black, soon releasing a pungent stink. Along with extremely evil power coming from the dark blood curse, the black blood rose into the air like black and deadly waves hundreds of zhang high in the sky, and swooshed down directly towards Ji Hao and the others.

Ji Hao had made up his mind to kill those poor human captives. This decision of Ji Hao exposed Di Sha's plan, forcing him to trigger the blood curse before he had planned to, and raise such a terrible blood tsunami.

If Ji Hao had been unable to make the decision and let those human prisoners rush into the human army, they would explode right next to Lie Mountain Gang and his three-thousand heavily armored warriors. Ji Hao couldn't even imagine how dangerous that would be.

"Di Sha!"

Ji Hao shouted out. The following moment, he opened his mouth and let out a raging stream of Gold Crow flame, then rushed directly towards the tsunami of blood.

Chapter 277: Burn the Blood

The Breath of the Gold Crow was one of the special abilities that Ji Hao had gained from his Gold Crow bloodline.

With the golden-red flame which had burst out of his mouth, as adhesive and solid as a thick stream of lava along with a great and bright power that similar to that of the sun which could annihilate all kinds of evilness in the world, Ji Hao rushed towards the tsunami of blood that was rushing in his direction.

When he had been a Junior Magus, Ji Hao was only able to cast a sphere of flame with a radius of ten zhang with his Breath of the Gold Crow, however, after making his breakthrough to the level of Senior Magus and awakening a few Magus Acupoints, the range of his Breath of the Gold Crow had improved by tens of times. The gold-red flame was shining as bright as the sun itself and suddenly enshrouded the entire area within a few miles.

There were countless tiny spell symbols sparkling inside the black, corruptive blood. Those were the evil dark curse symbols mixed with the blood curse, and were the most difficult to deal with. The waves of the black blood collided against the Gold Crow flames, causing a great boom, making it sound as if it was a fight between true gods.

Fire and water could not ever coexist, and neither could light and darkness tolerate each other.

The black-colored, stinking and corrupting blood started to burn, while releasing a foul smell and clouds of dense smoke. Streams of gold-red wrapped the smoke up and set these clouds, which were filled with the power of the curse, ablaze as well. An especially great power rapidly purified those dense smokes, causing the burning smoke to quickly become lighter and lighter under the shining sun, and eventually turned into faintly multicolored light clouds.

Just as the legend said, the Gold Crow flame was able to naturally suppress all kinds of evilness and curses, however, Di Sha had absorbed all the powers from tens of Senior Magus level Yu Clan elite warriors, and activated the blood curse with the power of the divine tower. Additionally, he had detonated the spirit blood of over two hundred thousand human prisoners and slaves, creating this horrible tsunami of blood.

The Gold Crow flame let out by Ji Hao had only been able to hold off the blood tsunami for a short moment, and when the horrible waves of blood clashed against his body, Ji Hao only felt a violent shock coming from the entire world, after which the majority of his body sank deeply into the blood-red rock ground.

The rocks of Chi Ban Mountain were especially solid, even more solid than ordinary iron by a hundred times; every piece of rock could endure great powers and massive bombs. That was why the alliance of human clans chose this area as their main battlefield, for blocking the intrusion of the non-human races.

However, the slightest touch of the wave of blood caused Ji Hao to be struck into the ground. Only his shoulders and head were left above ground. Roaring waves of blood swooshed over ceaselessly, and the Gold Crow flame launched by Ji Hao was currently completely suppressed, shrinking rapidly. Ji Hao watched the stream of flame dying out under the horrible wave of blood and the fearfully great power contained within, that struck directly onto Ji Hao's body along the dying stream of flame. Ji Hao felt that thousands of huge mountains suddenly pressed on his body all together and that he couldn't even move his little finger.

Luckily, the heavy and solid turtle shell armor had been protecting him the whole time, otherwise, he would have been crushed into a puddle of meat paste long ago.

Countless black spell symbols sparkled, approaching Ji Hao along the shrinking stream of flame as if they were living creatures.

Everywhere those black spell symbols reached, the golden-red flame let out by Ji Hao would immediately turn black, and the great, magnificent power of the sun contained in the flame would turn into a dark, extremely evil and negative power.

In the blink of an eye, the black symbols had reached Ji Hao's turtle shell armor through the streams of flame. The silhouette of the turtle floating above his head, which was condensed from the power of water, gave a brief roar, causing waves of powerful, black ripples that spread to all directions. The next instant, all the black symbols that had been swept by these ripples burst into wisps of cold, black smoke and fell onto the ground.

A sizzling noise could be heard coming from the ground; countless tiny holes were instantly formed in the blood-red rock ground by the corrosive effect of the blood.

"Watch this!!"

Man Man abruptly yelled out while swinging her pair of gigantic hammers, intending to smash the roaring tsunami of blood. But suddenly, she paused, blinked her eyes and laughed out, while saying, "Aha, nearly got fooled! Abba said that my hammers can only go against solid things, smashing weirdly soft thing...hm, Man Man is not that powerful yet."

Instantly dropping her pair of hammers, Man Man then took out a full handful of thumb-sized, red thunder pearls. Gritting her teeth and hesitating, it seemed that Man Man was planning on throwing a whole handful of them out at once. Ji Hao glanced at those thunder pearls in her hand merely once, and immediately had cold sweat gushing out of his forehead and back. Hurriedly, Ji Hao yelled out at Man Man.

"Man Man, Man Man! Are these thunder pearls made by your Abba or craftsmen working for your Abba?"

Man Man paused briefly again, but she then quickly flicked her finger and sent out two thunder pearls darting directly into the

blood wave. After that, she turned her head around and responded, "Eh? Ji Hao, how did you know these are made by my Abba himself..."

Two thunderous booms came out from those blood waves, along with which, the two tiny little thunder pearls released sky-devouring flames for a moment, which rampantly spread towards all directions.

A great, violent, scorching hot and unscrupulous power instantly shrouded the entire area. Ji Hao couldn't help but scream out when he leapt up from the ground. He grabbed Taisi, who was standing behind him, hurriedly and tightly held and pressed him hard against the ground. The black turtle silhouette floating above Ji Hao's head instantly let out deep yet resonant roars, the water essence power came out from its mouth transforming into waves of black mist and spread out quickly, shrouding Ji Hao, Taisi, Lie Mountain Gang and the three-thousand armed black cheetah army soldiers.

"Ah! Ah! I caused a trouble again!" Man Man screamed out as well, while hurriedly taking out a few fire-red jade talismans and crumbling those in her hands.

Bright fiery light been released from Man Man's hands and swiftly wrapped all the members of the black cheetah army and her team up, following her intention. After that, Man Man looked at Shaosi confused, who was now nearly soaked in cold sweat, and asked, "Why did I say 'again'?"

Shaosi helplessly shook her head, then locked her fingers together and whispered a spell. Along with her voice, white light spots fell from the air like sparkling rain and condensed into a faintly shining white spell symbol above everyone's head, then quickly merged with their bodies.

After incanting blessing spells for over three-thousand people, Shaosi's pretty face instantly turned deadly pale, then a scary blue.

She was not even able to stand steadily anymore, softly leaning against Man Man.

Man Man hurriedly held Shaosi up while her armor released a dazzling fiery light, transforming into a translucent, shining light mountain, shielding both of them.

The two flame bombs were crafted by Zhu Rong himself, and were magically great powerful disposable weapons of mass destruction. Zhu Rong was quite bored in Pu Ban City, so he collected the ancient magical flame from the earth core and purified extreme fire essence power from it, forming it into these flame bombs. The battle effectiveness of every single flame bomb merely equaled to a careless punch of an ordinary Senior Magus, however, the extreme fire essence power released out by it right after the explosion was great enough to burn any peak-level Senior Magus into a puff of smoke.

The surrounding air temperature rose rapidly. Followed by a loud buzzing noise, the black watery mist spread out from Ji Hao's turtle shell armor suddenly broke down. Lie Mountain Gang growled loudly out a rude curse. The three-thousand heavily-armed soldiers behind him were sent flying high into the air by the flame.

Their armors had been burned by the extreme fire essence power, slowly heating up, turning red, then gradually softening. Not long after that, all of their armors showed signs of melting. Lie Mountain Gang and all the other soldiers were badly burned and let out waves of howls that sounded like the cries of ghosts.

Fortunately, they were sent flew backwards by the massive explosion, which had sent them far away from the explosive center of the flame bombs, and saved them from being burnt into ashes, also preventing their armors from melting completely.

The madly roaring blood waves that had even reached the sky struck against the explosive power of the two flame bombs. The

first wave of blood was immediately evaporated, after which, more and greater waves of blood came roaring up one after another. Soon, eighteen hundreds of zhang tall blood waves were all burned into clouds of smoke by the flame.

Until the flame dissipated, only the last three waves of blood remained roaring towards Ji Hao and the others.

Chapter 278: Encircling

The three waves of blood came over as if with the intent to engulf the whole world. Ji Hao gritted his teeth and jumped up from the ground, but just as he was about to try resisting the waves of blood, to his surprise he saw Taisi standing up.

The scrawny Taisi had a strange, weird grin on his face, while his pure black eyeballs lacked all traces of luster. There were a few complicated spell symbols faintly visible within those black eyes of his. He raised his hands, waved his bone cane, along with which a wisp of black-colored smoke spurted from his head, condensing into a silhouette of a devil-like being, fluttering into the wind.

"Everything in the world belongs to the netherworld. The netherworld is the base of this world, it is our roots and it is a place for us to sleep in peace." Taisi murmured while quickly flicking his fingers in weird motions in front of his chest. A slight wisp of black smoke was brought up by his finger, which then quickly formed into tens of odd-shaped spell symbols.

Followed by a swooshing noise, those black symbols formed by the wisp of smoke clashed against the blood waves in the blink of an eye.

The terrifying and roaring blood waves suddenly collapsed, the black sticky blood burst into clouds of black smoke, covering up the sky. Soon they were being absorbed into those spell symbols emitted by Taisi. Taisi's body slightly quivered; it seemed some magical power contained in those blood waves had been absorbed by him through those spell symbols, causing his scrawny and boney body to even instantly grow a little bigger.

Ji Hao had seen clearly that the power contained in those waves of blood was far greater than needed to crush tens of hundreds of Senior Magi like Taisi. Even more convinced he was that with Taisi's scrawny little body, if one of those three waves of blood hit

him, he would be crushed instantly into nothingness.

However, it seemed that if those waves of blood were like a vast primitive jungle, then Taisi's power was like a small blazing match. It didn't matter if the jungle was boundless, the tiny flame was more than enough to set the entire jungle ablaze and destroy it completely.

This had nothing to do with whether Taisi's power was greater or not than the power of the blood waves. It was instead connected to the different affinities of the different kinds of powers and some even more mysterious natural laws.

Wisps of purple smoke rose from the middle of Ji Hao's eyebrows, while his Golden Dan began rotating slowly in his spiritual space. He could even feel that when those blood waves were coming over, the surrounding environment seemed to have been resisting the power contained in the blood waves.

At the time that Taisi had released his spell symbols, a part of the initial power contained in the surrounding environment had on its own accordance merged with the power contained in Taisi's spell symbols. That power corresponded with Taisi and shattered the incoming blood waves, while devouring the power contained in those blood waves.

Those black spell symbols rose into the air. They had expanded to tens of times their original size when they had first been formed. They transformed into black arrows one after another, swishing across the air above the valley, directly piercing into the main army of Di Sha, which had already been fighting hard against the heavy rain of arrows shot out by the archers of the Great Gale Clan.

"And the netherworld is..." gnashing his teeth, Taisi squeezed out a few words with a creepy and cold voice from between his teeth. Not even a little bit of human emotion could be sensed from his voice.

"Death!"

Large amounts of black spell symbols exploded right inside the orderly formed army led by Di Sha. Black smoke swept across the entire area. Everywhere the black smoke rolled, no matter whether they were the elite warriors of the Yu Clan or the warriors of the Jia Clan or those slave warriors and slaves, every single one of them would quickly wither and become dehydrated, and their armors would rapidly be corroded by the black smoke.

It seemed like all of them had been through tens of thousands of years within one moment, and suddenly turned into shriveled, withered and rotten dry dead bodies.

Taisi had launched the attack with the power he had absorbed from those blood waves, and suddenly killed over two hundred Yu Clan warriors and over three-thousand Jia Clan warriors. Those slave warriors and slaves were relatively further away from Taisi, therefore, only hundreds of them were killed.

"Great job!!" Ji Hao waved his arms madly in excitement, yelling at Di Sha, who had been standing on the first floor of the divine tower, "Di Sha! It's me who killed your idiot brother! Want to kill me? Come down yourself!"

Taking a deep breath, Ji Hao laughed out loud and continued, "Twice, those stupid assassins, who can merge their bodies with shadows, were sent to kill me. Was it you who hired them? Well, it was a shame that they have failed to kill me twice by now, and all were killed by me instead!"

Ji Hao's loud yell resounded through hundreds of miles in radius, reducing the morale of Di Sha's army to an extreme point.

When Ginger's bug puppets had rushed into the army and killed large numbers of warriors, they hadn't taken that seriously at all. It was a great war and people would always die in such wars, all the warriors in Di Sha's main army had a deep understanding of that.

When being attacked by the archers of Great Gale Clan with a heavy arrow rain, and from time to time, someone among them would be pierced into a human-shaped griddle by those arrows and die, those Di Sha's warriors had not become frightened at all. On the contrary, they were enraged and became even braver than before. Attacks launched by enemies and arrows shot out by enemies had stimulated their wills to fight.

However, after Ji Hao had yelled out the personal hatred between Di Sha and himself, and pointed out that Di Sha had hired assassins to kill him but failed to do it, those Yu Clan and Jia Clan warriors suddenly lost their will to fight.

"General Di Sha's brother was killed? And he couldn't even take revenge for his own brother! What a useless one!"

"Tell me about it! We're so unlucky to be under the command of such a useless man. He can never lead us to win a war!"

"Assassins who can merge their bodies with shadows? Did General Di Sha hire the Shadow Devil? But how could the Shadow Devil fail on missions? Was it because General Di Sha wasn't willing to pay for powerful assassins and only hired the weakest assassins among them?"

"We are being led by a general who was not even willing to spend money to extract revenge for his own brother and family! Great Blood Moon, we have no future!"

Some of the young men of the Yu Clan, who came from the Dishi Family and Di Family even led their guards and warriors into retreat. They looked at Di Sha while sulking, using their eyes to tell him that they would not follow his lead anymore.

Di Sha's face suddenly turned into a dark blue color.

He had a deep understanding of some of the hidden rules of the Yu Dynasty. He was fully aware that an army like this, formed by elite warriors who had come from various large scale and

influential families, would be extremely hard to keep under control and to manage. But, under no circumstances had he anticipated that Ji Hao would be able to shake the morale of this army by only yelling around.

The glory of the Yu Clan, the pride of the Yu Clan, and the, strange, unreasonable rules of the Yu Clan!

Di Sha's eyes had even turned green in rage, while staring at Ji Hao. He suddenly pulled out his sword and pierced it into his own chest. The long and sharp sword pierced into his right chest and came out from his back. Blood spurted out like a fountain along the narrow blood reservoir on the edge of the sword.

"With the Blood Moon as my witness, I, Di Sha, a member of the great Di family, will wash the humiliation suffered by my family off with my contribution! What this lowly barbarian has done to my brother, I will do to him too, only a million times worse!"

Di Sha roared with a hoarse voice, while his eyeballs were blood-red. "You shameless, lowly barbarian! I have been occupied with army matters, which is why I had no time to spare for you...But, since you appeared on your own will right before me, I will certainly sever your head from your shoulders, turning your skull into a wine container that I will always carry with me. I will also kill a million of your race, and offer their blood to the soul of my brother!"

Blood ceaselessly spurted out, but Di Sha glared at the surrounding Yu Clan warriors and growled, "I, Di Sha, am willing to die in this battle, what about you?!"

For no reason, all those Yu Clan warriors suddenly became incomparably courageous, and pulled out their weapons one after another, shouting out towards the sky.

The morale, which had nearly dissipated earlier because of Ji Hao's words, had now suddenly been raised in such an inexplicable way. Ji Hao and the others speechlessly watched this show

performed by Di Sha, and had absolutely no idea what those non-human race warriors were thinking about.

Resonating horns came from afar, in the East, West, even the North, the only direction that Di Sha's army could retreat to, and fluttering battle banners, which had human-silhouette totems painted on them, simultaneously raised into the air.

The armies transferred over by Si Wen Ming had arrived, and encircled Di Sha's army from all four directions.

Chapter 279: Tusk

"My fat...Oh my god, such a stunning, amazing scene!"

Yu Mu struggled to get back up from the ground while quivering and yelling. Half of his pot had been melted by the two flame bombs detonated by Man Man. There was melted iron on his chubby back and butt, burning his skin.

His eyes had popped out and he had even forgotten to complain about the flame that had burned his highly-cherished fat. He was staring at the front of him with an awfully shocked expression.

Ji Hao stamped his feet against the ground, causing a stream of wind to rise from the ground, helping him and his teammates into the air. To trod on wind and fly with solely the power of a Senior Magus was something that made Ginger, who had been watching the fight from the cliff behind, subconsciously nod. He silently valued Ji Hao even more than he had been before.

From the east, a huge group of thunder beasts roared while rushing over. Thunder beasts were shaped like cattle, but had only one leg and a horn on their forehead. Lightning bolts with lengths of over a few zhang continuously darted out from those horns. Even when the sky would be blue and without any clouds, if these beasts passed through somewhere, lightning would ceaselessly fall from the sky, against their horns, along with sounds of rumbling thunder.

According to the legends, the thunder beasts were once the pets of the ancient Thunder God, who lived in the heaven. But later, the heaven collapsed and the Thunder God disappeared, causing these beasts to descend to earth. They lived and prospered in a mysterious and magical place named Thunder Luster, located in the Midland, expanding their race.

Once these beasts matured, they had power similar to a Senior Magus level human. These beasts were gigantic and muscular.

They stamped their single leg madly against the ground, making the earth and the surrounding mountains tremble. Each of these beasts was carrying a warrior who was wrapped in a faint layer of lightning. This magnificent army of lightning beasts rushed towards Ji Hao like a roaring and dazzling torrent.

At the place called the Thunder Luster lived a human clan, who were believed to be the offsprings of the Thunder God. Everyone in that clan possessed the power of thunder and lightning. Amongst all the human race clans, the Thunder Luster Clan was ranked in the top ten.

Warriors of the Thunder Luster Clan, who were meters tall, and were waving their gigantic axes, growled in rage. Their resonating, wild voices mixed with the thunder coming down from the sky made even the surrounding mountain tremble violently.

There were at least fifty thousand thunder beasts in this great army. If one added the warriors on their backs, then this army was easily capable of crushing the fifty thousand Jia Clan warriors of Di Sha's army by having a frontal combat itself.

Although those Jia Clan warriors were powerful and brave, they were still only armed infantries. If they attacked the Thunder Luster Clan warriors who were riding thunder beasts, the Jia Clan warriors would be immediately at a disadvantage.

From the west, tens of thousands of serpents were wriggling over in formidable array.

Even the smallest of the serpents was over twenty zhang long, and over ten serpents, who had been leading the entire army, were even more gigantic than that huge water boa Ji Hao had seen in the Cold Stream Valley. Each of these khaki colored, nearly ten-mile long serpents had a pair of horns on their heads, and four caruncles under the belly. Obviously, these powerful gigantic serpents were showing signs of turning into real dragons.

Three to five warriors or Maguspriests were standing on the back

of each serpent. Only ten serpents at the front of the army were carrying a single black-clothed Maguspriest each on their backs. These black-clothed Maguspriests were each releasing a strong and negative sense of power, and their bodies were faintly wrapped by dark-colored streams of power. Even from a great distance, Ji Hao and his teammates were able to hear the screams and howls of the ghosts and dark spirits in those dark streams of power.

Ji Hao frowned. This army that had come from the west was clearly from the Northern Wasteland.

Ji Hao could sense exactly the same kind of power from this great army as he had sensed from the people of the Black Water Serpent Clan back in the Southern Wasteland. Their power had a sense of evil and cold feeling. It was similar to the water that had stood still for countless years, which gave an indescribable feeling of being suffocated.

Mr Crow cawed out unsettlingly. He had fought against those single-horned serpents of the Black Water Serpent Clan for hundreds of years, and was now subconsciously filled with hostility to all kinds of snakes and serpents. Wisps of fiery light spurted out from his pupils, while his pair of beady eyes instantly turned blood-red.

Having taken a complicated glance at this large-scale army coming from the west, Ji Hao turned his head to the north.

Right behind Di Sha's main army, a hundred, over three-hundred zhang tall, Kuafu Family's giants carried towering ancient trees that been conveniently pulled by them, and were nearing Di Sha's army with slow, even leisured footsteps. From over a hundred miles, Ji Hao could even clearly see those huge pores on the faces of these Kuafu Family's giants.

More or less, the skins of these Kuafu Family's giant warriors were covered in dragon scales, which were light blue and were sparkling under the sunshine; especially on the middle of their

eyebrows, left chest, temples, and other vital body parts, those dragon scales were much denser and thicker.

Kuafu Yan, who had taught Ji Hao how to forge weapons and tools was one of the members of the Kuafu Family. But this was the very first time for Ji Hao to witness these many giants from the Kuafu Family gathered together, all at once. They were more like a hundred small mountains continuously moving forward. He could not even imagine how horrible and destructive that would be if they swung those tremendous trees that they were holding in their hands down with all of their powers,.

The Kuafu Family was a special and magical family among the entire human race. They had achieved the peak of physical strength. It was also quite rare to see a clan of human race where even the Maguspriests would carry a huge weapon and rush into the battlefield and fight against their enemy solely relying on their physical strength.

Behind the hundred giant warriors of the Kuafu Family, thirty enormous chariots were moving forward with a loud, ground-shaking thunderous noise.

Ji Hao took a very deep breath while staring at those chariots. He knew that those chariots were called 'Tortoise Chariots'. Every single one of these Tortoise Chariots was made from the shell left by a magical divine tortoise after it died.

Magical divine Tortoises were immensely huge. If they wished to do so, a magical divine tortoise was fully capable of expanding its body to tens of thousands of miles in radius. It was not difficult to imagine how thick and solid its shell was and how great the its defensive capabilities were.

With great amounts of efforts made by generations of human emperors, the humankind had finally reached an agreement with the leader of the magical divine tortoise race that before each magical divine tortoise died, it would take off its own shell with a

special magic and give it to the alliance of the human clans. The alliance would then send those shells into the Magi Palace, and the master craftsmen of the Magi Palace would turn them into Tortoise Chariots.

Every Tortoise Chariot was only around ten-zhang in radius. A tortoise shell that could expand up to tens of miles in radius had been compressed into ten-zhang in radius with a secret magic. It was completely imaginable how thick and dense these shells had become, and how great the defensive power of these Tortoise Chariots was.

With all the power, technologies and resources of the entire humankind that related to the making process of the Tortoise Chariot, the Magi Palace had only made three-hundred Tortoise Chariots so far, and a whole thirty of them appeared all together here on this battlefield.

Every Tortoise Chariot was being pulled by twelve fierce and brutal beasts, called 'Zheng'. These beasts were all completely covered in sharp thorns, and their bodies were of pure silver, as if they were forged from metal. These beasts were all crazily roaring, ceaselessly letting out clouds of freezing air from their mouths, which even froze the ground, leaving a thick layer of ice on the ground.

Behind the thirty Tortoise Chariots were five-hundred enormous puppet beasts. These puppets beasts were all over ten-zhang tall, had different shapes and were completely forged with a special kind of alloy. These especially heavy and gigantic puppets were moving forwards slowly. Every time after they had taken a step forward, their feet would sink into the ground by a few feet. Even the solid rock ground of the Chi Ban Mountain couldn't hold their weights.

These gigantic puppet beasts' bodies were thickly dotted with all kinds of large-scale battle machines and tools. Every single puppet beast had over a hundred human warriors standing on their bodies

and manipulating these battle machines and tools.

Along with a loud buzzing noise, streams of dense yellow light continuously flowed between the bodies of these puppet beasts when they were walking. Those master Magi tutors who had mastered magic formations had linked these puppet beasts together with a powerful large-scale defensive magic formation. Therefore, if the enemies tried to destroy these puppet beasts, they had to destroy all five hundred of them at once, otherwise, ordinary attacks would not come even close in harming them.

All four armies encircled Di Sha's army from all four directions. The alliance of human clans, under the command of Si Wen Ming, had finally, slightly showed its sharp tusk.

Chapter 280: Start the War

"Are you the crazy girl Man Man? Okay, I'll remember you!"

Lie Mountain Gang walked back while complaining. There were large pieces of his skins that were burned black, and his breath even smelled like meat that had been grilled.

All the three thousand armed warriors were fine for the majority. A few burn marks on their skin and a bit of fire that had gushed into their bodies, which were small injuries and would recover as soon as they activated their blood power; after all, they were all Senior Magi.

However, after moving a bit backwards, all of them, even the black cheetahs, were all keeping a safe distance from Man Man.

The tender little face of Man Man seemed a bit embarrassed. She frowned so hard that her eyebrows seemed to coil around each other. She abruptly sighed and said, "Well, as I had said earlier, it would have been easier if you were the people of Lie Mountain Xu. In that case Man Man wouldn't even need to apologize, even if I had killed all of you."

With an embarrassed face, Man Man awkwardly, yet seriously bowed deep in front of Lie Mountain Gang and all those warriors standing behind him.

Lie Mountain Gang paused suddenly, while he stared at Man Man shocked.

All the warriors were also shocked slightly by this. Some of the warriors who had heard about Man Man's background whispered to the others about her family.

She was the most doted on and cherished little girl of Zhu Rong, the current Fire God. Her status was even nobler than that of those princes within the Lie Mountain Family. Although these princes were descendants of the Flame God, they were all distant and

branch family descendants. Man Man, on the other hand, was the own daughter of a pureblood Fire God. There was no doubt about who the Fire God was by now.

Taking a deep gasp, Lie Mountain Gang and his three thousand warriors started laughing loudly. Along with the series of loud and manly laughter, they gathered into a dense, square-formed formation and stood closely behind Man Man. Not long after that they were focused on the main army of Di Sha, which was approaching them with every step, but from time to time, they would glance at Man Man out of the corners of their eyes.

Ji Hao was quite shocked as well, but at the same time he looked at Man Man with warmth.

He hadn't realized that after all this time, the naughty little girl who had only known how to bully others and steal bird eggs back in the Southern Wasteland had silently but surely grown up.

He held the long black dagger in his right hand, while preparing his left hand to catch the stone sword which would come out his spiritual space at his will. Ji Hao shouted loudly and activated his bloodline power at the same time. Along with his shout, the Gold Crow shell on his chest, the fiery feathered boots on his shanks and the spear on his right hand, all started to shine with faint red light.

Although he was yet unable to freely manipulate these Divine-Magus-level magic treasures, when his Gold Crow Bloodline power flushed across the three inherited magic treasures, only a slight trace of power released by the three magic treasures would double the defensive power of Ji Hao's body. His body became lighter while the power contained inside his body grew wilder and hotter.

"Attack!! Warriors of the Blood Moon... without withdrawing!!" Di Sha stood on the first floor of the divine tower and growled harshly.

"Indeed, you never withdraw, only surrender!" yelled Ji Hao harshly as well, "Di Sha, why do you think we could put bug eggs

into the bodies of those bug puppets that we sent to attack you before? Ha, they surrendered, submitted to be arrested with folded arms! Allowing us to do whatever we wanted!"

Di Sha had just stabbed himself and stimulated the morale of his army, but with only these words, Ji Hao had dispelled a big half of it, once again. He stared at Ji Hao in both rage and shame, gritted his teeth and roared, "Ji Hao! Today I will chop your head off myself! I will make your skull into a wine container, which I will carry everywhere with me! I will wash off the humiliation that you brought to my family and me!"

"Well," Ji Hao raised his black dagger high into the air. Huge numbers of spell symbols sparkled brightly under the sunshine. Ji Hao then laughed aloud and continued, "More and more humiliations will come to you and your family! Sooner or later, I will take an ancient beast to your ancestral temple and let it poo on the graves of your ancestors! That is, if monsters like you know how to worship your ancestors!"

Ji Hao had humiliated Di Sha's ancestors with his words, and Di Sha and all the others in his army had already known that Ji Hao was one of their archenemies. Under this situation, none of them had any other choice but to fight.

Di Sha swung his long sword that still had his own blood on it, pointed it at Ji Hao, along with which orderly and heavy footsteps rose from the army. Tens of thousands of fully armored, over five meters tall, Jia Clan warriors popped out their two pairs of huge eyes, roared out and rushed towards the exit of the valley.

Great Gale Bao immediately gave the order, and archers under his command instantly let out thousands of arrows, swooshing towards those Jia Clan warriors like the tidewater. Those arrows thickly and accurately pierced into the bodies of those Jia Clan warriors. Each arrow had pierced into the vital body parts of the enemies, with not a single arrow missing its target.

Those raindrop-like arrows rapidly consumed the defensive power of the armors of those Jia Clan warriors, and some of their armors and shields had already been torn apart by arrows.

The warriors of the Jia Clan rushed forward with big steps, while their skins turned dark bronze, as if they had completely transformed into copper statues. Some of the warriors of the Jia Clan, who were among the strongest among all Jia Clan warriors of Di Sha's army, were rushing at the front of the army. Their bodies had turned silver and had silver-like luster. These warriors didn't even make any defensive motions; they just ran towards the exit of the valley against the heavy rain of arrows. Countless numbers of arrows clashes and broke against their skin, without any being able to even leave a single mark on their bodies.

Behind these warriors of the Jia Clan, hundreds of elite warriors of the Yu Clan began incanting a spell simultaneously. The blood-red swirl inside their erect eyes started to rotate rapidly. Along with that, a faint-red blood symbols emerged in the air above the heads of the Jia Clan warriors. The blood-red symbols gradually became even more clear and vivid, and rose instantly the running speed of those warriors Jia Clan by a few times. Also, the sense of power released by their bodies suddenly expanded with a few times.

A short while ago, only over two hundred Jia Clan warriors had that silver-like luster on their skins, but after being improved by those blood-red spell symbols incanted by those Yu Clan's warriors, over three-thousand Jia Clan warriors, who had been rushing towards Ji Hao and the black cheetah army, suddenly felt that their spirit blood began boiling, and a silver-like luster quickly appeared on their dark bronze skins.

Watching these Jia Clan warriors about to rush out of the valley, the three-thousand black cheetah soldiers were preparing for a bloody fight, and this great war was on the verge of breaking out...

From the air, tens of Magi Palace's apprentices suddenly emerged

while waving those banners in their hands, along with which, countless bug eggs darted out from the ground in all directions. Millions of bugs were instantly hatched in the air; those poisonous, weirdly-shaped bugs rushing towards those Jia Clan warriors in streams, while screaming in horrible voices and with their bodies wrapped in sticky liquid.

Just like the last time, over ten millions of Jia Clan warriors were entirely submerged in the ocean of bugs. However, different from the last time, these Jia Clan warriors were all soldiers of Di Sha's official army. They were standard warriors who had the responsibilities to kill for the Yu Dynasty. These Jia Clan warriors were way more powerful than those guards belonging to those wealthy families, and they were all a lot more experienced than them

Thousands of dazzling flame balls abruptly rose into the air. Raging flame wrapped the bodies of the ten-thousand Jia Clan warriors, while blood splashed everywhere. Those Jia Clan warriors madly swung their weapons and let out thousands of freezing and sharp light, which flashed across the air. Within a single moment, at least a hundred million poisonous bugs were killed by them.

Followed by a loud clattering noise, the ocean of bugs swooshed down from the ground. Within the last moment, even though at least ten million bugs were killed, more bugs ceaselessly appeared and approached. The total number of these newly-emerged bugs was hundreds, even thousands of times bigger than ten-million.

At the back, the warriors of the Kuafu Family already approached Di Sha's army.

They swung the over two-hundred zhang long huge trees that had been using as sticks, slowly towards a Jia Clan's warriors, who had fallen behind in the army.

Followed by an earth-shaking bang, a Jia Clan warrior was

suddenly smashed into meat pie, and deeply sank into the ground.

"Kill!" yelled all Kuafu Family's warriors while feverishly and excitedly raising their gigantic and solid 'tree sticks'.

Chapter 281: Blood Scent

"Weak, ignorant barbaric creatures," murmured Di Sha while a blood-red, moon shaped ring suddenly lit up on his left middle finger.

Human-head-sized, pure and clear, all-adapting magic crystals flew out from the ring one after another, which then were quickly absorbed by the divine tower. The ten zhang tall divine tower was like a bottomless black hole, devouring over a hundred thousand pieces of magic crystals within a second.

After having absorbed all the crystals, the blood-red erect eye that was floating above the tower began to shine. Suddenly it emitted a zhang-thick beam of blood-red colored light, which struck violently against the ocean of bugs, followed by a second and third beam of blood-red colored light. Within the blink of an eye, a total of twelve beams of blood-red light had struck down onto the swarm of bugs.

Each of the beams struck down with a loud, muffled boom, causing countless tiny spell symbols to be sent flying everywhere. At every bit of space that was hit by the beam, masses of bugs would be blown into puddles of sticky, bloody liquid. Before the surviving bugs were able to devour those puddles of blood and could lay eggs again, the beams of light drained all the power contained in that blood.

Clouds of power of the Blood Moon were injected into the bodies of the warriors of the Jia Clan, who were trapped in the ocean of bugs. Due to the injection of power, their bodies began to swell and reached soon the length of ten meters. The weapons they were holding in their hands changed along with their bodies, and became even bigger and heavier, making them look even more wildly-shaped.

The twelve beams of blood-red light wiped the majority of those

bugs out, and nearly a thousand Jia Clan warriors, who had been trapped in the ocean of bugs, rushed out with their skins shining like silver, while shouting and roaring crazily, rushing towards Ji Hao with big steps.

Two Jia Clan warriors holding gigantic axes threw a fierce glance at Ji Hao, while each grinned hideously. They abruptly swung their axes, bringing up two beams of cold, sharp light, hacking towards Ji Hao's head.

Each of the Jia Clan warriors were over five times taller than Ji Hao, which made them look like small hills in front of him. Their huge body gave them a definitive advantage in physical strength and a battlefield like this, allowing them to fully exploit their height. They could beat up a kid like Ji Hao very easily, without any worries. After all, a kid like Ji Hao would not be able to reach their vital parts.

Mr Crow rose into the air and hovered around, while cawing with a resonating sound. He expanded his body swiftly from one foot to over hundreds of feet wide, while being wrapped in a blazing fire. He waved its pair of huge blood-red, jade-like claws and gripped onto the two axes.

The two warriors of the Jia Clan burst out in a series of angry yelling. Temporarily they stopped attacking Ji Hao and instead pulled their weapons as hard as they could, trying to compete with Mr Crow in strength.

If looked at their anatomical structure and the shape of their body, the warriors of the Jia Clan would have undoubtedly a huge advantage in physical strength against human warriors, but when faced with an offspring of the ancient and legendary powerful animal, their huge bodies of what they were so proud of, turned into a weakness.

Mr Crow was more powerful and wilder than these Jia Clan warriors. The two Jia Clan warriors couldn't even stand steadily

and were dragged by Mr Crow, staggering a few steps forward.

Ji Hao gave a long growl. He put away the long black dagger, which was less effective against these Jia Clan warriors, and instead pulled his stone sword out. All the power contained in his over ten Magus Acupoints suddenly swooshed out and gushed into the stone swords. Once that had happened, the seemingly dusky stone sword let out an over ten-zhang long fiery light, turning entirely glowing red, while tens of dim flame patterns slowly emerged on its surface.

The stone sword was a naturally-formed holy weapon. Nature had only given it a simple, original shape, and as for its spirit, power and soul, these were all depended on its owner. The owner needed to cultivate it and build a connection with it. Ji Hao had been ceaselessly injecting his fire powers into the stone sword and gradually guiding this stone sword to turn into a fire-power adapted holy weapon.

"Die!" Ji Hao roared out. He trod on a drifting cloud and abruptly rose into the air. He swung the stone sword, leaving a huge, bright arc in the air. He launched the Sky-Opening with all of his power.

Blood immediately spurted out. The two skilful and powerful Jia Clan warriors were held at bay by Mr Crow and couldn't free their own hands within a short while. Ji Hao took this opportunity and accurately attacked their weakest body parts. The amazingly sharp stone sword sliced their heavy armors open and cut both of them into two. In the next moment, raging flames swooshed out from their bodies. These two Jia Clan warriors howled out, but they had an incomparably strong life-force that allowed them to not die immediately. Instead, they fell onto the ground in pieces, howling, twitching and madly rolling their broken bodies.

Raging flames enveloped their bodies. The stone sword had completely cut their meridians open, disabling them from self-healing. They stared at Ji Hao with despair, while continuously uttering the most vicious curses they knew at Ji Hao in a strange

language that Ji Hao didn't understand.

Taisi swung his bone cane and created large clouds of black smoke, shrouding the two Jia Clan warriors immediately. The black clouds rapidly drained out all of their life-force from their bodies, and soon transformed them into tens of black, twisted spell symbols, floating right beside Taisi's body.

"Go."

Taisi swung his left hand forward and said in a low voice. Following his order, those black spell symbols darted out and quickly merged with the bodies of the other Jia Clan warriors, who had just rushed out of the ocean of bugs and were now running towards Ji Hao. Once those black spell symbols bumped into their bodies, these Jia Clan warriors suddenly slowed down and their bodies seemed to become stiff. Tremblingly, they kept trying to move forward while screaming out; their faces were filled with fear.

"Kill!"

Lie Mountain Gang shouted. He waved his long spear and rushed up with a squad of black cheetah warriors. They whipped their black cheetahs, rushing towards those stiff Jia Clan warriors at a lightning speed. All those sharp long spears they had been holding in their hands were sent out along with beams of fierce light.

Those Jia Clan warriors, who had been cursed by Taisi, were not able to dodge those sharp long spears at all. They could only watch as those spears pierced right through their own throats. Those long spears each brought up a few light sparks, easily piercing into their neck armors and going through into their throat while squeezing out streams of hot blood, and then coming out from the back of their necks.

"Kill!!!"

Another hundreds of Jia Clan warriors rushed up like wild raging

tigers. They moved as fast as beams of light, accurately and swiftly launching attacks at Lie Mountain Gang and his soldiers, who didn't have enough time to pull their spears back.

Streams of blood spurted out like a heavy and warm rain. Except Lie Mountain Gang, who had barely blocked three machetes hacking towards him simultaneously with his solid muscle and powerful armor, whole one hundred armored black cheetah warriors who had rushed up along with him, were all suddenly killed by those Jia Clan warriors! Behind Lie Mountain Gang, a hundred humans head were sent flying into the air simultaneously.

All the black cheetahs, which had been ridden by those brave warriors, turned furious after their owners were killed. They angrily showed their sharp teeth and claws, darting into the group of Jia Clan warriors. Their sharp teeth and claws created huge amounts of fire sparks against the armors of those Jia Clan warriors. These black cheetahs set their soul and spirit blood ablaze. They traded their lives for more power, launching a final attack on those Jia Clan warriors who had murdered their owners, their comrades.

Ji Hao popped out his eyes.

He saw these brave and loyal battle beasts leaving deep marks on the armors of those Jia Clan warriors with their claws and teeth, but none of them managed to break those thick, solid and exquisite armors. These black cheetahs were powerful and fearless, and launched their final attacks with their lives on the edge. However, the armors of those Jia Clan warriors had perfectly blocked their attacks.

"Stupid animals!"

Those Jia Clan warriors raised their machetes again, and in the very next moment, a hundred black cheetahs were all chopped into two, nearly simultaneously. Those sharp, cold and fierce machetes

chopped their bodies apart, and sent their broken bodies flying into the air along with beams of cold light, soon shattering them into pieces.

Another Lie Mountain Clan black cheetah squad dashed out. They laughed out loud while swinging their long spears as hard as they could, piercing right towards enemies' bodies.

Those Jia Clan warriors showed absolutely no fear. They lined up in straight manner and raised their machetes high, hacking down onto the necks of those black cheetah warriors. Those warriors riding on the backs of the black cheetahs finally reached the same height as those Jia Clan warriors, and could fight against them in a relatively fair situation.

Another bloody rain came from the air, while another hundred black cheetah warriors were beheaded by those Jia Clan warriors. But this time, without the help of Taisi's curse, only eighteen Jia Clan warriors were killed in the fight!

Chapter 282: Cruel

"God damn it!!" Ji Hao couldn't help but shouting out.

He had been used to not regarding Jia Clan warriors as dangerous enemies. This was because back in the Southern Wasteland, the Jia Clan warriors had not been hard to kill.

He was also not used to taking them seriously as well, because all of them had been acting careful and cautious back at home.

After arriving at Pu Ban City and realizing how powerful the human race was, he had assumed that this Chi Ban Mountain war was nothing too serious and only an ordinary war. The alliance of human clans had gathered these many powerful forces, what would those monsters be able to achieve?

Also, in the past few days Ji Hao and his teammates had successfully annihilated so many monsters. Using Ginger's bug formation, they had been able to easily wipe a surveying army of non-human race monsters out and take hostages, whom they had used to kill even more enemies.

However, currently, before his eyes, he witnessed a true direct confrontation between the humankind and the non-humankind monsters. Only now did he gain a clear understanding about the power that the non-human race monsters possessed and did he see the true difference between humans and the non-humans.

Those brave and fearless Lie Mountain Clan warriors were all decent, professional soldiers, but they were not like Ji Hao, who had all kinds of magical experience and talent. Although they too had high-quality weapons and solid full-body armors, still, the quality of their weapons and the grade of their defensive powers of their armors were far below and weaker than the gears of those Jia Clan warriors, who were even armed to their teeth.

The first time Ji Hao had seen Lie Mountain Gang, he had

thought that the three thousand armed black cheetah warriors under his lead were more than enough to fight against the army of Di Sha. Only now did he realize how naive he truly was.

He finally was able to understand what Lie Mountain Gang had meant when he has said 'life and death battle'.

After being sent by Lie Mountain Kang to fight against the main army of Di Sha, Lie Mountain Gang and his black cheetah army considered themselves as dead men.

Another squad of black cheetah warriors whipped their beasts and rushed up to Di Sha's army. All their awakened Magus Acupoints were letting out dazzling bright lights, while they were waving their long spears as hard as they could and squeezed the last bit of power out of their bodies, letting out their last growls.

"Kill them all!" yelled a Jia Clan commander with a deep voice, along with which, tens of Jia Clan warriors took out their gigantic, wall-like shields from their backs and heavily stamped those shields against the ground. Instantly, a solid, thick metal fence wall appeared in front of those black cheetah warriors.

A group of Jia Clan's warriors standing behind the fence wall pulled their longbows open and aimed at those Lie Mountain Clan warriors who had rushed up. They calmly and silently shot out those huge, spear-like arrows, one after another.

Without any doubts Ji Hao was able to see clearly that those tremendous arrows created beams of freezing light in the air and were accurately shot onto the bodies of those cheetah warriors. Each of those arrows pierced through a body of a cheetah warrior, easily and swiftly, throwing them of the backs of their mounts into the air, after which the bodies were dragged and flew far away before they stopped.

The Lie Mountain Clan warriors roared out in rage. They gripped the thick arrows pierced into their bodies and pulled them out with all of their strength. Although they all had been sent flying,

with their powerful spirit blood and life force they were able to heal the wounds in their chests quickly. However, the very next moment even fiercer, lightning bolt-like arrows flew over, piercing through their heads, permanently ending their lives.

With only two waves of arrows, a hundred black cheetah warriors were killed easily, even before they could approach those Jia Clan warriors.

The mounts of those warriors roared desperately while running crazily towards the metal shield wall, colliding against it. With faces that were devoid of any expressions, the Jia Clan warriors leaned against the wall with half their bodies. They waved their weapons and killed all those black cheetahs instantly.

The elite warriors of the Yu Clan stood behind those Jia Clan warriors and began incanting a spell. Along with their voices, the blood of those dead black cheetahs rose into the air, transformed into blood-red spell symbols and merged with those Jia Clan warriors. After that, the sense of power released by these Jia Clan warriors became denser and denser, more and more violent, becoming even more terrifying than it had been before.

"Kill, kill them!!"

Ji Hao shouted hoarsely at Man Man with a pair of blood-red eyes.

Man Man gritted her teeth, glanced at Ji Hao's red misty eyes, and abruptly took out a handful of flame bombs, throwing them towards those Jia Clan warriors.

"You damned little bastard!" Far away, Di Sha was still standing on the first floor of the divine tower. Enraged greatly, he yelled out, while huge numbers of magic crystals flew out from his ring. Similar to the previous time, those pure, flawless pieces of pure magic crystals were absorbed by the tower immediately.

This time, Di Sha's face was twitching. For this fight, not

mentioning the numbers of warriors he had lost, the consumption of these magic crystals was extremely high as well. If he couldn't get enough contribution and loot out of this war, he would definitely be broke after returning to the Yu Dynasty.

Followed by a sudden and loud buzzing noise, the divine tower had absorbed enough amount of magic crystal and let out a zhang-thick blood-red beam of light, which darted straight into the sky, hundreds of miles far from the ground. After that, the beam of blood-red light split into countless tiny yet sharp blood-red beams of light, diving down from the air at the speed of lightning and quickly attached to the bodies of the Di Sha warriors.

A blood-red, shining light armor appeared on the bodies of every single warrior of Di Sha's army. Within the shining blood-red light armors, one could see tens of bean-thick chains, which were shining faintly and were formed from squirming blood-red spell symbols.

To manipulate those spell symbols and form them into chains required an unbelievable amount of power in their power system, as this was an abnormal phenomena. The power should be great enough to trigger a particular type of natural law. The thin layer of blood-red light armors had even greater defensive power than the metallic armors worn by the Jia Clan warriors.

"Left and right side! Go block the enemies!" growled Di Sha loudly, "All the others, stay where you are! Wait for reinforcement!"

The warriors of the Kuafu Family had been madly chasing and attacking them from the behind. Every single attack launched by these giants were impossible to hold off, therefore, the backside of Di Sha's main army had already fallen into an insane chaos. Both the left and right side of his main army hadn't clashed against their enemies, but those Thunder Luster warriors were now only less than ten miles away from the main army, while those serpents were slightly farther, about twenty miles from the main army.

These two armies would instantly start the frontal fight after they moved up to Di Sha's main army.

"You little group of bastards! What the hell are you doing?! Do you want to watch me lose?!" cursed Di Sha was extremely enraged. "Di Suo, Di Mo, if you don't want to help me, fine! But Ju Xiu! You bloody woman! Have you forgotten our engagement?!"

The thickest beam of blood-red light spurted out by the divine tower struck on the ground right in front of the valley's exit, and immediately expanded into miles in radius. It formed a zhang-thick blood-red light shield, shrouding all the Jia Clan warriors, who had just rushed out of the valley.

Seven to eight flame bombs, which were thrown out by Man Man, collided against the light shield, then exploded simultaneously, releasing terrifyingly great streams of flames that rose directly into the sky. Scorching hot airwaves swept across the entire area. The formidably great shocking waves sent Ji Hao and his teammates flying backwards for over ten miles.

The whole area within a radius of over ten miles was instantly submerged in those streams of flames that had burst out from those flame bombs. The mountains on both sides of the valley were shaken so to the point that they collapsed and melted, turning into waves of lava surging on the ground. The ground collapsed as well. Those streams of flames grew stronger and stronger as if they would devour the sky, while boiling hot airwaves flowed around in streams. The blood-red light shield let out by the divine tower began to shake violently within the flame, and was being weakened by the fire power, becoming thinner and thinner.

At the back, Di Sha was trembling all over and out of desperation threw even more crystals with rage, letting the divine tower absorb them. His face had entirely turned into a terrifying and deadly green color.

Instantly, the divine tower released an even thicker beam of

blood-red light straight onto the nearly broken down blood-red light shield.

Chapter 283: A Mass Brawl

Man Man's flame bombs had caused an unpredictable consequence.

Seven to eight flame bombs exploded all at once, and those overwhelmingly great flame streams released by these bombs had nearly burned everything out. Within a radius of over ten miles, the whole space was temporally ruled by the power of fire. Those flame streams merged together and formed an ocean of fire, within which, the trembling blood-red light shield was barely able to support itself. Inside the blood-red light shield, over ten-thousand Jia Clan warriors raised their heads, while staring expressionlessly at the fire that blazed ragingly at the other side of the shield.

Before the fire died, these Jia Clan warriors didn't dare to rush out of the shield, whereas Ji Hao and the others didn't dare to rush in. Neither would Ginger send his bugs into the flame, just to be burned for nothing. Therefore, the battlefield had quieted down temporarily.

The backside of Di Sha's main army was still in an extremely great chaos. A hundred warriors of the Kuafu Family were practically slaughtering Di Sha's warriors.

Although judging from the overall situation, the power of the human warriors and their equipment were all weaker than the non-human race ones, a few families and clans among the human race were special and different, which, to a certain degree, could completely crush those non-humankind monsters.

For example, these giants from the Kuafu Family, they were so strong and gigantic that even the Magi Palace was not yet able to make a weapon that would fit in their hands. Their weapons were all naturally-grown towering trees, which were conveniently pulled out from the ground. They broke off all the branches and turned those huge trees into very effective weapons.

A whole hundred, over two-hundred zhang long wooden stakes, had been randomly and madly striking and whipping towards the ground, without any pattern, formation or plan at all. Those warriors of the Kuafu Family enjoyed this one-sided fight pretty much, while the warriors on backside of Di Sha's main army had completely fallen into a hopeless situation.

A thousand fully armored, powerful Jia Clan warriors, who were experienced, skillful and had exquisite top-quality gears, led by a Yu Clan commander, launched a frontal attack at those warriors of the Kuafu Family. However, their attack had only lasted the span of three breaths. After that, a hundred swiftly swooshing tremendous wooden stakes randomly smashed down and struck all of these fully armored elite warriors into meat pies.

What was even more terrifying was that the shortest one among the Kuafu Family's warriors squatted down and picked out those exquisite but crushed armors with some difficulty. He ripped those broken armors worn by those dead Jia Clan warriors off, from their smashed and scattered dead bodies, then conveniently wiped those sticky and bloody armors on his own clothes, happily putting those into a storage back tied around his waist.

Was this a typical example of recycling battle gears and not wasting any resources?

Watching all this, those slaves and slave warriors of Di Sha's army had suddenly lost their courage to fight, and nearly broke down. If it wasn't for the strict army rules, these slaves and slave warriors would have fled long ago.

Along with a harsh and resonating shouts let out by a Yu Clan commander, over ten-thousand slaves and slave warriors lined up into what could barely be considered a square formation while quivering, then tremblingly blocked the way of those warriors of the Kuafu Family. A Yu Clan commander with a luxurious cloak stood in front of these slaves and slave warriors, screaming hoarsely, "The great Blood Moon will gift us great inexhaustible

power, and these lowly, weak, negligible barbarians..."

A sturdy Kuafu warrior dropped his wooden stake, put his arms around a mountain that was nearly ten-thousand zhang tall, slightly straightened his muscular waist and pulled it entirely out from the ground, then threw it right onto heads of the Yu Clan commander as well as those slaves and slave warriors.

Over ten thousand of them were smashed into meat paste, and not a single one survived. Holding that mountain, the Kuafu Warrior spun it on the ground a few times as if he was making mashed potatoes, while murmuring, "Negligible? My hair is even thicker than your waist, you call me negligible?"

Only a small part of elite warriors were arranged on the backside of Di Sha's main army, the rest warriors were all slaves and slave warriors, who were mainly responsible for shipping and guarding gears and supplies. Watching the Yu Clan commander smashed into a pile of meat paste, these slaves and slave warriors all screamed out in fright then began madly fleeing towards random directions, like a nest full of freaked out ants.

At that moment, the rear of Di Sha's main army had completely descended into chaos. The Kuafu warriors laughed out loud, squatted down one after another and heavily slapped the ground with their huge palms. Every single slap launched by them could smash tens of fleeing warriors or slaves dead.

At the eastern flank of Di Sha's main army, the Thunder Lustre's cavalries had arrived.

Seven to eight miles away, a Thunder Lustre's commander had already raised a pair of huge drumsticks and beat the pair of enormous drums that hung on both sides of his riding beast's body.

The pair of drums, that were made from dragon skin instantly let out a series of thunderous booms, along which, ripples of white airwaves swooshed out from the drums and swiftly spread out in the air, and countless thick and fierce lightning bolts suddenly fell

down from the sky like a dazzling rain. Terrifyingly loud thunder mixed with the drums, turned into powerful sound waves, striking on the eastern flank of Di Sha's army.

In both the eastern and western flanks of Di Sha's army, all Yu Clan warriors came from wealthy and influential families. This time, they were sent join the army and came to Chi Ban Mountain for the war, that was started by Dishi Yanluo. The true purpose of these people was gain experience, build achievements and earn money through capturing slaves and robbing, these were all they had planned.

Therefore, facing those Thunder Lustre's warriors, who had been rushing over along with amazing lightning bolts and shocking thunders, these Yu Clan warriors choose to push all of their slave warriors and slaves to the front. Each of the hundreds of Yu Clan warriors had over a thousand slave warriors, and thousands, even more than ten thousand slaves.

These slaves and slave warriors lined up orderly in a square formation. Those square formations linked together and extended for tens of miles long, looking quite formidable and amazing.

But once the Thunder Lustre's commander beat his drum and let out the horrible sound waves, those slaves, who were the weakest kind amongst Di Sha's army, were all shattered into clouds of blood-mist by the fierce sound waves instantly, before they could even let out a howl.

Broken body parts and blood rose into the air within fierce sound waves, then splashed on faces and bodies of the other slaves and slave warriors in behind.

"Spears!" Growled the Thunder Lustre's commander resonantly, following his order, tens of thousands of Thunder Lustre's warriors swiftly pulled out their specially crafted metal spears and threw them with all of their strength.

Every single spear transformed into a lightning bolt in the air.

Wrapped around by popping electric sparks, they swished towards the tightly linked square formations.

The spears abruptly blast out in the air, sending out countless thumb-sized metal fragments which were wrapped in sparks of lightning which darted towards the thickly lined up slaves and slave warriors like a rain of daggers. Large groups of slaves and slave warriors were accurately hit in vital body parts by those sharp and dazzling metal fragments then fell on the ground and died without even letting out a slight moan. Tremendous clouds of blood mist instantly rose from the linked square formations, that extended for over ten miles long.

In the western flank of Di Sha's main army, the situation wasn't optimistic either. The western flank of the army broke down even faster than the eastern flank.

The hideous, creepy serpents, which would make people instantly quiver by merely taking a glance at them, had already wriggled up to the army. The ten over especially gigantic serpents, which were all over ten miles long, slightly opened their jaws and took a long and seemingly leisurely breath. Following which, tens of thousands of slaves and slave warriors were sucked up into the air, then into those serpents' immense jaws, while screaming despairingly.

Those serpents squirmed their bodies in a joy. Judging from their magnificently gigantic bodies, tens of thousand of slaves and slave warriors could only barely serve as an appetiser.

A brave and crazy Jia Cla's warriors rushed up while growling. He raised his machete high and hacked towards the largest serpent's head.

The serpent opened its jaws once again and spurted out a stream of venom that had an extreme stench. Once the venom splashed onto his body, that Jia Clan warrior was immediately melted down like a bucket of boiling water poured on an ice statue. Even his

armour had quickly melted into a few broken and fragile metal pieces.

Those elite Yu Clan young warriors, who came from wealthy family and had never been through anything like this, were all freaked out. They turned around and flew away as fast as they could without saying a single word. Just like this, thus, both the eastern and western flanks of Di Sha's main army were disintegrated.

Chapter 284: The War Between Emperors

In the air above the Chi Ban Mountain, around a billion feet above the ground, were two magnificent floating mountains. Both were over ten-thousand zhang tall and had radiuses of over a hundred miles. And even though the two floating mountains faced each other, they were far away from each other.

One of the floating mountains seemed primitive and simple, filled with naturally crafted cliffs and mountains, as well as ancient, towering trees that were coiled around by thick vines. Streams of crystal clear spring water ceaselessly gushed out of a spring hole and flowed on the floating mountain along a coiling stream, after which they turned into different sized waterfalls on the edge of the floating mountain, falling onto the Midland world.

On the peak of the mountain, on top of craggy gigantic rocks, nearly a thousand tall and muscular men were standing. They were either wearing roughly sewed leather capes, or had bared their upper bodies. Coiled around their bodies were either huge serpents or nimble magical snakes. Some of these men even had flood dragons or fierce wild tigers coiled on the ground behind them. Others were accompanied by powerful, legendary creatures such as Peacocks, Cyan Phoenixes and Great Gale birds.

Each of these men was releasing an extremely dense and strong sense of power, which gave a feeling similar to magnificent mountains and boundless oceans. Their eyes were sparkling like stars, and behind their bodies, all kinds of natural element-related phenomenon were clearly visible.

Three thousand miles away, the other floating mountain looked incomparably beautiful and exquisite. The entire mountain had a jade-like texture and was purely white without so much as a single slight flaw. Every piece of rock was carefully crafted by a master craftsman and entirely covered in seemingly naturally-formed spell symbols.

This floating mountain was filled with all kinds of perfectly designed sceneries. Beside the small trail that wriggled up to the peak were fresh plants, blooming flowers and streams. Every single petal, leaf, branch, stone, water, the shadows or even the sand was extremely exquisite and well designed. All these elements formed an amazingly beautiful, heaven-like scene that was beyond any description.

Tens of magnificent palaces were located on the mountain side. All of these palaces were made of pure gold, silver and other rare, expensive materials, and cast with a single mold, without so much as a single joint. These palaces were all thickly decorated with large gemstones and magic crystals, brightly shining under the rays of the sun.

With those dazzlingly shining palaces, this exquisite and beautiful floating mountain seemed even more glorious, even more ravishing and unimaginably beautiful.

In the front of those palaces were groups of young and beautiful girls. They were wearing long and pretty dresses, which didn't cover their shoulders and arms. Now and then they would chase each other while chuckling that made their dresses flutter in the air, showing their perfectly shaped legs. Outside the front gates of these palaces one could see large groups of armored warriors and even more beautiful girls.

Whether it was the Jia Clan warriors or the Yu Clan warriors among these warriors, all were carefully selected for the special purpose of guarding these palaces. These warriors all had the exact same height and body shapes, as if they were forged from the same mold. All of them had especially handsome, pretty and carefully embellished faces. All fine hairs were shaved off and every single eyebrow was brushed meticulously as well.

The armors worn by them were well designed for both defensive and ornamental functions. But apparently, those designers and craftsmen had paid more attention to the exhibitive and

ornamental function of these armors. Every single armor had completely different patterns, which were all kinds of magical, rare plants, legendary animals or buildings, cities and natural sceneries. All of these patterns were exquisitely embossed on their armors by master craftsmen, then carefully decorated with gemstones of different colors and sizes.

Most of those palaces were completely empty. Only the most magnificent palace located at the top of the mountain, which was broad enough to contain over ten-thousand people all at once, had over two hundred Yu Clan men, who were wearing the same blood-red cloaks. All of their eyes, hairs and skins had a faint blood-red luster. They were sitting in the lobby, enjoying wine and food, while chatting with pleasure.

A few long jade tables were randomly placed in the lobby, on top of which, all kinds of delicious desserts as well as fresh and rare fruits were placed. There were also wines that had an amber-like luster and were emitting nice alluring fragrance. Every single move made by these Yu Clan men, who were all tall and handsome, seemed elegant and noble. They were all wearing the exact same luxurious blood-red cloaks, and were freely and gracefully choosing those desserts and wine while whispering to each other and letting out chuckles from time to time.

Around these men of the Yu Clan there were over two hundred Jia Clan warriors standing in a circle. These men were wearing blood-red armors and their skins had a faint silver and blood-red luster. These Jia Clan men were chatting and laughing loudly as well.

From time to time, these Yu Clan men and Jia Clan warriors would throw a glance at the muscular humans standing on the other floating mountain. No one could hear what they were whispering to each other, but abruptly, a series of loud laughers would burst out from the group.

"Oi, oi, why don't we make a small bet?" One of the men of the Yu

Clan laughed aloud and said, "I offer an opportunity for having a secret date with Miss Meilin, and I bet that that kid down there, what's his name again? Di Sha? Right? Okay, I bet that he and his army can last at most three days till the human army wipes them out."

The group of Yu Clan men all laughed out loud, while glancing at one of their fellows.

"Di Melang, isn't Di Sha one of your family's younger generation?" Said a Yu Clan man teasingly. "Although the army under his command is an official Blood Moon army, it is only a newly formed one and his situation seems truly not so well."

"Well, you can't blame him for that," said another Yu Clan man in a low voice. "After all, in the past five-hundred years, he had only been a leader of a group of slave traders. Catching and selling those poor barbarians is nothing like leading an official army and fighting against real human armies in a true battlefield."

"If Di Sha loses this army now under his command..." said another Yu Clan man, who seemed a bit surprised, "Di Melang, will your Di Family offer him enough resources, keep supporting him and help him build another army? Ah, I heard that lately, productions of your territories have had some problems?"

"If Di Sha loses this army," said the man who firstly brought up this topic, while chuckling in a very low voice, "Di Melang, my dear brother, I assume that your family will certainly help him build another army. After all, this concerns the glory and reputation of your family. However, to build a new army requires too many resources and a huge amount of financial investment is needed. Can your family still afford to do that under your current situation?"

Shrugging his shoulders then lightly flicking the exquisite crystal glass held in his hand, this Yu Clan man intentionally said with grace and poise, "Maybe you would like to sell your territory

located in the Du Luo Mountain to me? On behalf of my family, I am more than willing to offer a sweet price."

Di Melang raised his glass, slowly drank up the blood-red wine contained in it, then looked at the man who brought up the topic right in the eyes and said blandly, "Dishi Tei, I've fancied Miss Meilin since long ago; her angel-like face and dreamingly beautiful body. I bet Di Sha and his army will not be wiped out in three days, but on the contrary, he will build his contribution by winning this battle. For not only an opportunity for a secret date, with my Du Luo Mountain territory, I bet for the ownership of Miss Meilin!"

"Whoa!"

All the men of the Yu Clan sitting in the lobby exclaimed out, while complicated expressions such as excitement and shock emerged on their faces. Countless jade slips were passed around in their hands quickly. Without making any noise, they had each already wagered a huge sum on the bet between Di Melang and Dishi Tei.

Dishi Tei grinned slightly, then slowly and elegantly bowed to Di Melang and said, "As you wish, Di Melang, my dear brother. Jiatu, go bring a human Magus King's head back to me... I want to taste their brain right now, to match this fancy delicious wine!"

"As you wish, my master!" A nearly eight-meter tall Jia Clan warrior, whose skin was entirely silver, responded in a thunder-like voice. After that, he suddenly leapt high into the air, transformed into a stream of silver light and flew towards the other floating mountain, were powerful human Magi had gathered.

"I, Jiatu am here! Who dares to battle me?!"

Chapter 285: Onlooking

In the outer region of the Midland world, where the fierce hurricanes transformed from the natural power streams were the most violent.

In this space, the natural powers were primitive, chaotic and violent, nearly similar to how those powers had been before this world came into existence. Even the spirit magic treasures made by powerful Divine Magus could gradually turn into powder by these sharp and fierce power streams. To ordinary creatures, even if they had the power to travel across the void, not a single one would dare to even to approach this space.

From deep inside a completely dark hole, where these fierce natural streams of powers were coming from, a slight wisp of cyan mist was forming within these streams of power, holding a faint cyan-colored Ru Yi. From the cloud-like head of the Ru Yi, an extremely thin beam of cyan light spurted out and up to a hundred zhang high, and bloomed in the air, transforming into a Ganoderma-shaped cloud, with a small cattail hassock placed upon it.

There was a young man with red cloak sitting on a cattail hassock with a faint, cold smile on the corner of his curved mouth. He was watching the two floating mountains, which had been confronting each other, with his arms coiled before his chest. Streams of cyan mist had been rotating around his body, while purple smoke rose from the edges of each of the streams of cyan mist ceaselessly, and slowly formed a tremendous purple yurt around his body, decorated with flame patterns.

The purple flame yurt condensed the purple smoke that had magical light spots sparkling on it. Every time a spot light sparkled on the purple yurt, it seemed a certain kind of unpredictable change regarding the entire universe had happened, or something magical had emerged from the light spot, which was more than

mysterious. The entire yurt released a strong sense of ancient, primitive power.

The young man with red cloak looked incomparably handsome and special, comparable to Zhu Rong who was also known as a handsome face. This young man looked not as wild and proud as Zhu Rong, instead, he looked more stately, as if he stood high above the masses.

Seeing Jia Tu challenged human Magus Kings, the young man with red cloak laughed aloud, then conveniently took out a purple calabash, slightly shook it, then pulled out the bottle plug and poured a few mouthfuls of wine into his mouth. The wine instantly let out a dense, alluring fragrance.

After having drank a few mouthfuls of wine from that calabash, not a single drop of wine would be left in it. The red-cloaked young man couldn't help but frown and complain in a low voice, "Big brother is too, too lazy. It has been so many years but he only made this little bit of wine! All he does is concoct magical pills, bloody magical pills, without even taking even a single apprentice. Those well-cooked magical pills are about to expire."

"He should rather make thirty or fifty thousand calabashes of wine than spending all the time on concocting magical pills. Making wine is a truly serious business!" Shaking his empty calabash, the red-cloaked young man sighed slightly, then out of convenience threw the calabash away. After that he flicked his finger, creating a powerful gust of wind towards the empty calabash. Along with a resonating and high-pitched buzzing sound the purple calabash was struck immediately into pieces, breaking into shreds and turning into a thick stream of natural power, which dissipated into the air.

He put his hand into his sleeves and took out another purple calabash, pulled out the plug and prepared to pour the wine contained in it into his mouth again. But abruptly, this young man let out a sigh and slowly put the calabash back into his sleeves

while murmuring, "Not much left, not much, I have to save it, save it. Hm, just wondering if my apprentice, Po, has robbed some spirit monkeys for a few vats of special monkey-style wine for me, in the Southern Wasteland?"

Slightly patting his own knees, this red-cloaked young man continued murmuring with a faint smile on his face, "Back then, I had tried quite hard to teach their monkey ancestors to make wine... God, even a few of my hairs turned white doing that. I have spent that much effort on it, I assume those younger monkeys should have inherited that secret winemaking skills from their ancestors, shouldn't they have? Hm, if so, I will have some good stuff to drink!"

Thinking of that, the young man took out the purple calabash again and happily took three big mouthfuls of wines from it, right after which his face suddenly twisted. He sadly shook that calabash and began complaining again, "Eh, another three mouthfuls of wine are gone. That big brother of mine is way too lazy, why didn't he make more delicious wine?!"

After murmuring for quite a while, this young man slowly pulled out a long sword from his sleeve, pointed at a distance, where those fierce natural power winds were swishing madly.

Hesitating for a few seconds, this young man started murmur to himself once more, "Should I do it or not? Once I swing my sword down, their heads will thud against the ground and this space will be quiet and nice, but, to bully weaker and younger people, if the others knew about this...well, such things as reputation, I don't give a damn at all but, those two elder brothers of mine, they care a lot about such stuff."

After pondering for a while, this young man let a long sigh out then unwillingly put his sword back into his sleeve, while continued sighing. He took another few mouthfuls of wine, then complained again about his big brother being lazy and blamed him sorrowfully for not giving him enough to drink.

Less than three-hundred miles away from that young man, where he had pointed at with his sword, also near the air hole, were two young mn standing side by side. These two young men were wearing simple flax clothes, had bare feet, long hair hung loosely on their backs, and had roughly made grass ropes tied around their waists, serving as belts. Their bodies were faintly shining with white lights, and within the space a hundred zhang in radius around them, the violent wind transformed from natural power streams had turned gentle and soft, like nice warm dogs, slowly flowing past the two of them in small streams.

The faces of both of them had turned dark and sorrowful The corners of their eyes and mouths were curved downwards, while they were staring at the two floating mountains. One of the two suddenly sighed and began talking.

"All creatures are pitiful. Poor Ku Mu, a quite talented one amongst our apprentices, who could have imagined that he would be killed suddenly, and we couldn't even discover who did this. Poor Ku Mu, he has even lost his chance of reincarnation."

"Truly bitter life, truly bitter. Brother, your apprentice is killed by unknown enemies, it's indeed sad. I have an apprentice as well, named Ku Quan. He is a nice and kind one, always concentrating on spreading out the spirit and expanding our sect. He has never caught any trouble, but lately, that evil creature, Gui Ling, hurt him."

"Gui Ling? Apprentice of that person? That well-cultivated gigantic turtle?"

"Exactly, brother, you should know that apprentices of that person are the biggest bullies and supremely violent. Poor Ku Quan, such a bad luck kid, how did he even offend that turtle?"

Remaining silent for a while, the other young man responded slowly, "Since that evil animal has come to Pu Ban City, we should temporally lay low. As your big brother, I recently have an

important mission that will allow us to build great achievement after finishing it. I think you might like to lend me a hand."

"Eh? Brother, what kind of important mission?"

The big brother let out a bitter grin, then his entire face twisted into a mess, and said in an embarrassed tone. "On the north side of the Chi Ban Mountain is a human clan that possesses territory with more than ten-thousand miles of radius, and over a hundred million people. During all these years, I have a few apprentices spread out spirit in that area, but only gained a few new believers."

"Only a few? That's because those people haven't yet tasted the bitterness of life. Brother, we should use special methods to guide them toward us."

The other young man nodded with a serious face, then said slowly and compassionately, "Therefore, my younger brother, could you please send your apprentices over there and give me some help. Draw a non-humankind army to that area to attack this clan. Some of their clansmen are extremely resistant to our spirit. Those, we should let the non-human race send them to heaven."

"My dear brother, you surely are merciful, this is exactly how things should work. People like us, who have spent all our lives cultivating ourselves, our hands are clean and cannot be stained by blood... yours is the best idea."

The other young man nodded slightly, then waved his hand and said, "Only after they tasted the real bitterness of life, understood the horror of death and life, and learned how full of despair and helpless lives can be, they could..."

Standing not far away, the red-cloaked young man had been listening to the conversation of these two. Finally, he frowned and conveniently pulled out his long sword again and swung it slightly in the air. Invisible power of sword swiftly swept across the air. The two young men in flax clothes paused suddenly, then disappeared into the air without leaving any traces.

Not even a single hair of them had been left remaining. It was as if those two had never even existed in this world.

"Noisy," complained the red-cloaked young man. "Two stupid bloody bastards, you don't even know the true meaning of the natural law and death yourselves, and you have taken a bunch of even more stupid apprentices, randomly spreading your bullshit spirits in the human world. You two bastards, you're serious scoundrels."

A thunderous boom came from afar, between the two floating mountains; Jia Tu and a human warrior had started their combat.

Chapter 286: Yanluo

Jia Tu brought up a beam of blood-red light and instantly arrived in front of the mountain where the human warriors were standing.

Before he had stopped, a muscular man, who had a piece of leather wrapped around his waist and thick yellow snakes coiled around his arms, laughed out loud with resonating voice at Jia Tu, while walking down from the top of a huge rock on the mountainside.

"Barbarian! Die!"

Jia Tu roared madly as a faint blood-red beam of light swiftly flashed across his silver skin. In the following moment, large clouds of blood-red smoke spurted out from his palms and condensed into a tremendous blood-red machete and hacked right onto the man's head.

Hundreds of Magus Acupoints lit simultaneously up on the body of the muscular man, and from a great distance, a bright star sparkled in the air. Right after the star sparkled, a stream of thick and solid star power darted over from the sky and connected with those sparkling Magus Acupoints on the body of this muscular man.

Along with a sudden, loud swishing noise, the pair of yellow snakes rose their heads from the man's shoulders and let a stream of yellow smoke out, each.

One stream of yellow smoke transformed into a huge and thick shield right in front of the machete of Jia Tu. The gigantic blood-red machete clanged fiercely against the shield, causing a shockwave that turned the surrounding natural power into a hurricane, which then turned into waves of terrifyingly great air bombs and spread out.

The other stream of yellow smoke turned into an axe and fell

right into the man's hand. The sturdy man opened his mouth and let out a thunderous growl while hacking down towards Jia Tu's head with that axe. A stream of star power flashed across the edge of the axe, and right after that, the surrounding space was suddenly overcome by an immense gravity that even caused Jia Tu to quiver slightly.

"Hah!"

Jia Tu growled once again in a low voice, while his body suddenly released a bright blood-red light. Those beams blood-red light were like countless sharp thorns, as they pierced into the void.

Both of the snakes leapt up from the shoulders of the man one after the other, and opened their jaws in an attempt to bite Jia Tu on the neck. However, as soon as the beams of blood-red light appeared, both snakes stopped from moving suddenly. Countless thin, sharp light thorns pierced into their bodies, breaking their skins, muscles and bones, ultimately turning them into griddles.

The blood-red machete didn't stop. It avoided the thick shield and clashed directly against the man's axe.

A cloud of yellow smoke rose into the air while beams of blood-red light sparkled out from it. After only a thunderous boom, the muscular man let out a mountain shaking roar. The very next moment, Jia Tu chopped his neck with the machete and sent his huge head high into the air. At the same time, Jia Tu howled out as well. The muscular man had hacked right onto Jia Tu's chest with his axe. Half of the axe had chopped into Jia Tu's body, while a corner of the axe came out from his back. In order to kill that human warrior, Jia Tu was badly injured.

Streams of blood-red flame slowly rose from the edge of the machete, as the blood of that human warrior was quickly absorbed by it, while the body of that human warrior shook intensely. Human Magus Kings were able to fly in the air and travel underground. After a Magus stepped into the level of Magus King,

he or she would gain a legendary strong life force, which was even hundreds of times greater than the life force of Senior Magus. This meant that although this human warrior was beheaded, his life-force still remained in his body. At this moment, as long as the joints of the wound on his neck were put together, he could completely heal himself with just his great life-force, without needing any magical medicines at all.

Nevertheless, how could Jia Tu leave any opportunity for this man to live? Before the other human warriors on the mountain could make a move to save him, Jia Tu let out an evil grin and suddenly chopped the man's head into two.

"Jia Tu! An invincible man!!" Jia Tu raised his arms high and growled to the other human Magus Kings, who were apparently shocked by the death of their friend. "Weak barbarians! Anyone else?! Who is willing to taste death?!"

A series of buzzing noises came out from the dead body of the killed human warrior, along with which, all the Magus Acupoints on his body exploded suddenly. Simultaneously, streams of sticky and solid, yellow star power burst out from his body, swooshing across the air and flying towards the star, billions of miles away.

That bright star, which had been sparkling when the warrior had been fighting against Jia Tu, sparkled again in the sky. Those streams of power that were released from the man's body had reached the star seemingly instantly through an immeasurably great distance, and were absorbed back into the star.

The star shone even greater than it had before. After a while, the bright shining star gradually dimmed down, and slowly merged together with the lights of the other stars.

Jia Tu spent all of his power to pull out the axe which was stuck in his chest. Blood poured out along the edges of the axe, and Jia Tu's face instantly turned as pale as a piece of paper. But still, he laughed arrogantly and crooked his finger at the other human

Magus Kings while yelling, "Another one! Let me kill you!!"

Another Magus King with a horned flood-dragon coiled around his waist, and whose body was wrapped by a large, flashing fiery cloud, rose into the air, trod on the cloud and walked towards Jia Tu in big steps.

"Chi Lao, from the Fiery Flood Dragon Clan, Southern Wasteland!"

Waves of flames rose into the air, which instantly dyed the entire space that had a radius of a million miles, red. Facing the flames, Jia Tu abruptly let out a mouthful of blood while quickly withdrawing towards the other floating mountain; in the meanwhile, he didn't stop yelling.

"You are shameless! I am seriously injured! How can you..."

Waves of fiery light quickly drowned Jia Tu, while a horribly great heat swept across the entire area. From the ocean of flame, a thin beam of blood-red light suddenly rose into the air. After that, muffled metal clashing noises coming out of the flame. After only the span of ten breaths, a resonating shout rang like the bell, while the blood-red light and flame split up.

Chi Lao was coughing out blood while staggering back. A huge wound, which nearly divided his body into two, appeared on his waist, while his internal organs were falling out from his body through the wound.

Jia Tu's left arm was chopped off entirely, and his pale face had turned even paler than it had been before. Moreover, a fist-sized hole appeared on his left chest, which had blazing streams of fire constantly spurting out of it.

Apart from all these, the flood dragon coiled around Chi Lao's waist had left a terrible wound on Jia Tu's face with its sharp claw. Three of Jia Tu's four eyeballs were smashed, and his skull was broken. However, the flood dragon's claw was hacked off by Jia Tu

as well, deeply stuck in Jia Tu's shoulder. The flood-dragon that was now coiled on Chi Lao's shoulder was licking its wounds with its long and thin tongue, while letting out a threatening hissing sound.

Chi Lao stepped back quickly, sat down on top of the floating mountain and couldn't move anymore.

Jia Tu had lost his courage and arrogance. He teleported himself back into the hall, where a party was still ongoing, staggered for a few steps then fell right down on the floor.

After killing a human Magus King and wounding another one, Jia Tu had been seriously injured. Chi Lao's power had directly gushed into his internal organs. It was not possible to cast that power out from his body within a short period of time.

Beyond the two floating mountains, tens of billions feet higher in the air, a throne that was seemingly condensed from red and black air streams coiling around each other floated.

A man, who looked handsome yet terrifyingly cold, wearing an all-black cloak, with an erect eye embroidered on his chest with blood-red silk threads, sat straight up on the throne. He was holding a red and black colored long sword with both of his arms, while staring at a few silhouettes who had been standing in the void in front of him with a cold expression.

Emperor Shun, who usually only wore simple flax clothes and looked exactly like an ordinary villager, was now in a long luxurious cloak, which had nine coiling dragons embroidered on it, and a pair of boots that were decorated with phoenix feathers. Under the luxurious cloak was an exquisite golden armor that was embossed with multicolored clouds and all kinds of magical, legendary animals, which seemed to be guarding a piece of beautiful land. With a supreme stateliness, Emperor Shun stood right in front of the man in a black cloak.

"Dishi Yanluo, right? From the Blood Moon." said Emperor Shun

in a bland tone, "If I had known you would take over the throne of the Emperor, then back then..."

"Don't mention the past, take all your useless words back." Dishi Yanluo interrupted Emperor Shun and said, "You failed to kill me during that fight back then, and now, it's my turn to kill you. Such a beautiful world, what qualification do you, the human race have that allows you to rule this world? Only us, the Yu Clan, deserve this piece of land. As for you, you should lay low and be slaves... that is all you are all meant to be."

"Ridiculous!" sneered Emperor Shun while slightly moving his finger. Following by this move, a long sword hung around his waist suddenly brought up tens of thousands of dragon silhouettes, which roared towards Dishi Yanluo like a tsunami.

Chapter 287: Seeing a Ghost

Once Emperor Shun had pulled his sword out, even the clouds and the wind of the entire Midland had changed. Ji Hao, who was down at the Chi Ban Mountain area, which was located billions of miles away from Emperor Shun, suddenly raised his head and seemed to have felt something. He felt a mysterious type of surging stream of hot power deep inside his body that had been hidden all this long, but was now gushing wildly within his body, making Ji Hao feel as if this power would burst out of his body and rise towards the heavens anytime.

Not only Ji Hao, all the other human warriors on the scene raised their heads as well and all turned their heads towards the same point that was located deeply in the void, beyond those clouds, even beyond the sky. But soon, they turned their eyes back down, growled out and continued to fight.

Each of these human warriors somehow became three times more agile and powerful than they had been earlier. They could now wave their weapons faster and punch harder on the faces of their enemies. The blood vessels of each of them were standing out from under their skins, making them feel as if their blood was boiling and that their power was increasing naturally within their bodies. None of these warriors could feel even the slightest bit of fear remaining in their hearts.

"What happened?" Ji Hao couldn't help but be shocked deeply.

Inside his spiritual space, the mysterious man appeared, with dim blue light spots sparkling inside his eyes while murmuring in a low voice, "The sword, was it left here?"

Up in the air, Dishi Yanluo narrowed his eyes, while he stared at the long sword held in Emperor Shun's hand. That sword was wrapped in a bright sphere of golden light. With Dishi Yanluo's power, he could only hazily see that the sword was embossed with

large amounts of complicated patterns and characters.

"You're not Emperor Xuan Yuan!" Dishi Yanluo grinned teasingly, stood up from the throne while pulling out his own sword with his right hand. A beam of sword light, which combined the streams of red and black lights, darted suddenly out. At the same time, half of the sky was shrouded by dark clouds, out of which countless blood-red light streams poured down like a waterfall.

"Therefore, this sword can never release its true power in your hands!"

Dishi Yanluo laughed out loud, took three big and heavy steps forward while at the same moment hacking thrice towards Emperor Shun with his sword.

The first of the three launched attacks emitted a great stream of blood-red light, which instantly crushed the tens of thousands of dragon silhouettes that were released by Emperor Shun.

The second of those hacks released an enormously great cloud of black mist, which made the brightly shining golden sword held in Emperor Shun's hand dim down suddenly.

The third one completely darkened the sky and seemed to have shaken the entire universe. Emperor Shun gave a slight, muffled moan, after which he staggered tens of steps - each of them being nearly a hundred miles - backward. Even though all this transpired in a single moment, Emperor Shun had still moved thousands of miles away from where Dishi Yanluo was standing.

"Look, look at yourself!" Dish Yanluo gripped his sword while letting out a series of high-pitched laughter, which sounded more as if he was screaming.

"Back then, you were still a minister of Emperor Yao and I was only a commander of the Blood Moon army. At that time you were able to chase me for a whole three months without even resting

once. You were able to kill a whole twelve hundred of my personal guards, while gravely injuring five of mine blood brothers, who almost died because of those wounds."

"But, look at yourself now, Shun. This is the difference between us, the Yu Dynasty and your human race!" Dishi Yanluo shouted while raising his sword high in the void and releasing hundreds of miles long beams of black light from all of his three eyes. Everywhere those beams of black light passed through, the space - even the void - would twist slightly and show signs of rippling.

"How many years have you been sitting on that chair of the human emperor? Three-hundred years? Five hundred years? A thousand years? And how much have you improved during all this time?" growled Dishi Yanluo. "I have been the Emperor for only a year and eight months, but the great Blood Moon has granted me inexhaustible power. Now, I am far more powerful than you!"

Emperor Shun gasped slightly for air, while the longsword held in his hand emitted a buzzing noise and released again a bright golden light. He looked at Dishi Yanluo and responded blandly.

"Although I am unwilling, I have to admit that monsters like you are indeed hundreds of times more powerful than our human race... but, so what?"

Raising his long sword slowly again, Emperor Shun continued in a low yet reverberating voice. "Back then, you failed to keep us enslaved, and even now, after so many generations, you won't be able to achieve it again this time. Although those three legendary ancient emperors have passed on, we won't be defeated easily!"

Dish Yanluo let out a heavy breath, while a dim yet fierce light flashed across his eyeballs, then he said, "The thing I hate most is your so-called pride and dignity! Why wouldn't you just lower your head and be our slaves nicely? Isn't that something great? Look at those creatures who are enslaved by us now, aren't they all living happily right now? You're just like them, weak, stupid and

ignorant. Those things were enslaved by us more than willingly, why can't you do the same?"

Emperor Shun smilingly shook his head slightly. Suddenly, another tens of thousands of flying dragon silhouettes swooshed out from his sword. At the same time, four human silhouettes standing right behind him simultaneously took a step forward.

All of these four silhouettes were hazy. One could not even clearly see their faces, only incomparably great and mysterious powers could be sensed, which were ceaselessly gathering over from unknown sources. When Emperor Shun waved his sword in the air, an odd-shaped sword abruptly appeared in each of these four silhouettes' hands. Followed with this, black, white, red and green, four multi-colored sword lights suddenly spurted out from their swords, then perfectly merged into one with the golden sword light, released by Emperor Shun.

The five-colored beam of sword light turned into a dazzlingly bright light stream and roared up into the air. The tens of thousands of dragon silhouettes were sent towards Dishi Yanluo, but now they darted up into the air, seemingly on their way to shatter the entire world.

The dark clouds that were shrouding the entire sky suddenly dissipated, while those blood-red light beams shattered into light spots. The facial expression of Dishi Yanluo changed slightly, and the sword light that his black and red long sword had emitted began to twist intensely. An invincible power crushed the light till it started sending out light spots.

"Who the hell are you?!" Dishi Yanluo took a deep breath, while staring at the four silhouettes quite cautiously and yelled. "You are not even really here...You're just streams of spiritual powers... who sent you?!"

Emperor Shun laughed out loud, while the four silhouettes simultaneously let out a faint and hazy sneer. All five of them

stood side by side, gripped their swords with both of their arms and quickly stepped forward towards Dishi Yanluo. Tens of thousands of dragon silhouettes were flying around them, roaring like the raging ocean, shaking even the entire void, and constantly bringing up huge ripples of power in the void.

"Hah!" sneered Dishi Yanluo as well.

From the shade of his magnificent throne over ten silhouettes walked out. Among these people, the majority were of the Yu Clan, while the remaining were people of the Jia Clan. All the people of the Yu Clan were wearing blood-red cloaks, while the people of the Jia Clan were wearing blood-red armors.

All the people of the Yu Clan that walked out from behind the throne had blood-red eyes and there was a hazy blood-red, erect-standing eye floating above each of their heads. The skins of the people of the Jia Clan had turned into a faint gold color, which made them look like golden statues that had been bearing gale and rain through ages, causing them to look heavy and powerful.

"Shun, you have only brought four people here today. I will not pretend to be polite with you, and will just chop off your head!" said Dishi Yanluo while showing a proud smile on his face. "I will certainly take out your skull in whole by myself, then let my craftsman turn it into the most beautiful art piece, to decorate my palace!"

"Yo hoho~ hoho~"

A weird, creepy laughter abruptly came from not far away, along with which, two spheres of green spooky flames suddenly appeared in the air. Right between the two flames, a purely dark, metallic, arched door gradually emerged, upon which, two huge devil statues widely opened their mouth, and gave that high-pitched, horrible laughter.

Dishi Yanluo paused instantly, while even his jaw dropped slightly due to shock, and subconsciously murmured, "Damn it,

you, the Netherworld Priest, what are you doing here?"

The black metallic, arched door slowly opened, from which, a black straw cushion flew out. On that straw cushion, a scrawny young man, whose skin was so pale that one could even see his blood vessels through it, but had a pair of cherry-like tender lips that made him look quite handsome, was sitting with his legs crossed. A pair of weirdly shaped longswords, in black and white colors, were floating on each side of that young man, while an enormous black banner was fluttering behind him, ceaselessly releasing huge streams of cold, freezing wind.

"Emperor Shun said that if I fight against you for him, from now on, the souls of all human warriors who die in battles, will join my side upon their own willingness," said the Netherworld Priest in a soft and gentle voice while letting out a grin, "Therefore, although I have nothing against your Yu Dynasty..."

While speaking, the Netherworld Priest slightly raised his finger and pointed at Dishi Yanluo. At exactly the same moment, the pair of black and white swords silently and swiftly darted out, and following that, a Yu Clan young man standing behind Dishi Yanluo instantly let out a howl.

By the time Dishi Yanluo had turned his head back and looked at him, the head of that Yu Clan young man had already fallen off from his neck without making even the slightest noise.

Chapter 288: Tangled Fight

This Netherworld Priest looked scrawny and gentle. He did not seem dangerous at all, but he had launched his attack swiftly, without talking too much.

Both of his swords were amazingly powerful. That young man of the Yu Clan had been comparable in power to a human Divine Magus, yet the sword light released by the Netherworld Priest was able to easily cut his head off, without even giving him time to react.

"Netherworld Priest!"

Enraged, Dishi Yanluo growled out. He was an evil and violent emperor of the Blood Moon, otherwise he wouldn't have started such a great war as soon as he took over the throne. Through years Dishi Yanluo had been able to launch attack at enemies and invade lands as he pleased. There was no one who dared to provoke him on their own initiative. Especially after gaining the backing of the former emperor and earning increasing amounts of power within the Blood Moon, there had passed ages since someone besides the twelve emperors in power, dared to go against him, in front of his face.

Although Dishi Yanluo was clearly aware that with his power he couldn't even bare to enrage this Netherworld Priest, who was a legendary, bloodcurdling powerful being, he still raised his sword without showing any fear. He transformed his entire body into a black and red stream of dazzling light, bringing up countless sharp, blood-red beams of sword light and darted towards the Netherworld Priest.

"You're seeking death!" roared Dishi Yanluo in rage while injecting all of his power into the longsword in his hand.

"Ignorant little kid...hehe, back at that time, even the first generation of Emperors in power of your so-called Yu Dynasty

didn't dare to wave his swords at me. Well, well, the world has been changing so quickly... so, so quickly," said the Netherworld Priest with a ghost-like voice, along with hissing, cold laughers, while pointing his finger at Dishi Yanluo again.

The tremendous black banner instantly rolled up, right after which, a cloud of thick and smooth black smoke rose from under the Netherworld Priest's feet that condensed into a thick flat shield in front of him, firmly blocking Dishi Yanluo's attack.

The dazzling black and red sword light emitted by Dishi Yanluo fiercely pierced into the black smoke shield along with a shrill swishing voice. Countless electric bolts were sent flying adjacent the black smoke shield. The thick black smoke shield seemed soft, even empty without any counter effect. The sword light released by Dishi Yanluo struck directly into the shield of black smoke, but he only felt as if he had punched into the void and that all his power were drained by a bottomless black hole; this terrible feeling made Dishi Yanluo nearly vomit.

At the same time, Emperor Shun and the four mysterious silhouettes raised their swords high with both of their arms and rushed over once again along with tens of thousands of dragon silhouettes.

From the shade of the throne of Dishi Yanluo another ten silhouettes walked out. Added with the first batch who had walked out earlier, over twenty Yu Clan men sneered altogether while letting out beams of blood-red light from the erect eye on their foreheads. These blood-red light streams gradually condensed into a blood-red moon above their heads.

The dense blood-red light lit up the entire space, while Emperor Shun and the four mysterious men roared out ragingly along with those dragon silhouettes, and launched a monstrous attack at that blood moon. The blood moon instantly began shaking, and soon became dimmer. In the meanwhile, five-colored, gigantic dragon silhouettes shattered the adjacent blood-red light one after

another. Emperor Shun and the four men had been quivering slightly as well, and it seemed that they were all affected by a great counter force.

Over ten Jia Clan warriors pulled out their weapons simultaneously and rushed silently towards Emperor Shun and the four hazy silhouettes.

Emperor Shun took a deep gasp, along with which, a pair of pupils in each of his eyes began to shine brightly. Soon, a Magus Acupoint on his chest lit up, within which, an incomparably gigantic star was rotating slowly, ceaselessly releasing pure essence of fire power.

Judging from the size and shape, the Magus Acupoint of Emperor Shun was only as big as a thumb, while the star rotating inside it was only the size of a half thumb. However, at the very first glance, everyone who saw it would feel that the star was immeasurably huge, and its bright luster had the ability to light up the entire universe, while the heat released by it could warm the whole world.

"This is my spirit star, the blazing Arcturus!" Emperor Shun growled in a resonant voice. Suddenly, seemingly inexhaustible fire power spurted out from his body. With this pure essence of firepower, those dragon silhouettes hovering around the five of them instantly became clear and solid, making it possible to even clearly see their scales. Judging by their roars and attacking effects, each dragon silhouette had improved by Emperor Shun's fire essence power by at least a hundred times.

The over ten Jia Clan warriors simultaneously launched their attacks at Emperor Shun. Emperor Shun slightly waved his sword and let out a thunderous boom, along with which, blood gushed out of the mouths of the over ten Divine Magus level Jia Clan warriors when they were sent flying while rotating, for thousands of miles.

Dishi Yanluo turned his head around and glared at Emperor Shun with a blazing look. He yelled, "Shun! If this crazy old bastard didn't mess around in here today, I would certainly kill you!" He then turned back and growled, "Go! Do whatever you can to kill him! I would like to find out without an emperor, what do you, the weak human race, have left to resist our attacks!"

The human emperor was elected by the leaders of all the clans of the human race cooperatively in the alliance of the clans of human race, which meant, if Emperor Shun died, his son could not take over the throne directly. Instead, the new emperor would only be elected by those leaders of the large-scale clans, who were qualified to vote during the emperor elections, after they gathered together in Pu Ban City.

This process of election would waste three to five years!

During these three to five years, the alliance of the human race clans would be like a group of leaderless dragons, and with this great opportunity, Dishi Yanluo could easily break into Pu Ban City with his Blood Moon army!

Along with Dishi Yanluo's growl, thirty silhouettes more walked out from the shade of his throne, and among these people were two old men of the Yu Clan, who had shining silver hair and wrinkled skin.

"Netherworld Priest...if you had stayed out of this, our Yu Dynasty would never turn against you, but since you have already stepped in, you should not blame us for killing you!" One of the Yu Clan old man sighed slightly, while slowly taking out an eyeball that had been carved out of a piece of blood-red crystal.

Another Yu Clan young man approached Emperor Shun along with a few others, while murmuring in a low voice, "Is Arcturus the human emperor's spirit star? Hm, such a great cultivation...just wondering how many stars the human emperor's power equals to?"

Emperor Shun let out another resonant growl while another eight Magus Acupoints lit up on his body, one after another. Every Magus Acupoint of his had flame-red, brightly shining stars slowly rotating within them. The sense of power released by him suddenly became much stronger than it had been before. At this moment, the sense of power he was releasing could even compete against Dishi Yanluo.

The facial expression of Dishi Yanluo changed slightly. He turned back and glanced at Emperor Shun, then shouted out harshly.

"Do it! Kill!"

The Netherworld Priest smiled blandly while slightly waving his hand. Followed by that movement of his, hundreds of black silhouettes instantly rushed out of the arched door behind him. All of these people seemed creepy and weird. There were green flames blazing in their eyes, and their bodies seemed so scrawny and stiff as if they couldn't even move agilely. These were not the living but were instead zombies created by the Netherworld Priest with a secret special magic!

These were the zombies of the Netherworld Priest, which could fly in the sky, move underground and be even as powerful as a human Divine Magus!

Dishi Yanluo couldn't help but show a badly shocked look on his face while shouting out loud.

"Netherworld Priest! Do you seriously want to turn against our Yu Dynasty?"

Before the voice of Dishi Yanluo had faded, a gentle and warm voice interrupted him. That voice sounded like it had come from the heavens. "In broad daylight, how can we tolerate evil creatures like this?! Netherworld Priest, you made zombies and against the natural transmigration, disorganized the Yin and Yang... This is against the natural law. This world will not allow you. Today, I enforce justice on behalf of this world!"

Along with this voice, a shining white lotus descended down. The dazzlingly bright light released by it instantly lit up the entire space, which then struck directly towards the Netherworld Priest's head.

The Netherworld Priest let out an angry shout when the hundreds of zombies sent out by him howled out simultaneously. Over thirty zombies dissipated directly in the white light, while all the others were apparently badly harmed and even had black smoke streams puffing out of their bodies.

The handsome young man, who had been hiding deeply in the void and was watching this great show, suddenly burst out a great growl, stood up and began yelling.

"You little shithead! This is between them, what does it have anything to do with you?! Don't you feel shameless?! You bloody bastard! Duo!"

Along with his roar, four flying longswords darted out from his sleeve, flashed across the air and momently reappeared above the battlefield. Right at the following moment, along a thunderous boom, the four flying swords began rotating overhead the white lotus, instantly shattering the brightly shining white lotus into pieces.

After dealing with the white lotus, one of the four flying swords let out another beam of sword light. Dishi Yanluo growled madly when this sword light hacked his exquisite throne into two.

Chapter 289: Continue the Battle

Back on the ground, the great flame shrouding the entire valley had finally dimmed down. Countless warriors of the Jia Clan showed their silhouettes in the dying flame, while gasping quickly.

The light shield, released by the divine tower, had been able to protect them from being burned into ashes by the flame. However, the great essence fire power still penetrated through the light shield and injured them gravely. The body fluids of over ten thousand Jia Clan warriors had evaporated for the majority part; the skin of most of them had even cracked open like a piece of dry land.

"Kill them!" One of the commanders of the Jia Clan raised his weapon high and pointed at Ji Hao and the others.

However, the following moment, along with a slight puffing noise, the head of the Jia Clan commander had been punctured by a sharp long spear, while raging flame flakes spurted out from the spearhead, causing his huge head to explode right away. The sturdy body of that Jia Clan commander then thudded heavily against the ground.

The warriors of the Jia Clan who standing around the commander shouted out shocked and tried to look who the enemy was who just now had launched such a fatal attack on their commander. However, before they even could move, a machete and sword rose simultaneously into the air; large amounts of blood splashed everywhere. Accompanied by a horrible series of bone cracking noises, a muscular silhouette broke through the encirclement of Jia Clan warriors and staggered at great speed towards Ji Hao.

This man, who had killed a Jia Clan commander with a single attack and had afterwards broken through their encirclement, was none other than Lie Mountain Gang. Lie Mountain Gang had taken

a squad of black cheetah warriors and launched a wave of attacks on those Jia Clan warriors, but had suddenly disappeared. Ji Hao had assumed that he had been killed during the battle sometimes ago. At this moment, the body of Lie Mountain Gang was covered in blood; in his left hand he was holding three heads of Jia Clan warriors, while there were seven to eight swords and machetes stuck in his body. With big steps, he rushed towards Ji Hao. Each step he took squeezed streams of blood out of his body through those terrifying wounds.

"It's our turn!!"

Seeing Lie Mountain Gang, Ji Hao raised his head and let out a great shout, while putting down the thick facial mask of his. He gripped the long black dagger with his right hand and the stone sword in his right hand, and darted out towards Lie Mountain Gang.

"Hah, I've tried!" Lie Mountain Gang gave a twisted grin to Ji Hao while nodding, then multiple streams of blood gushed out of his body simultaneously, while his muscular yet dilapidated body thudded on the ground and he fainted. Although the body of a Senior Magus could be incomparably solid and powerful, there surely was a limit on how far it could bear.

Being encircled and attacked by hundreds of Jia Clan warriors simultaneously, then making it out alive, Lie Mountain Gang had nearly created a legend.

After removing his broken armor, one was able to see that tens of Magus Acupoints of Lie Mountain Gang had been damaged by the sharp weapons of those Jia Clan warriors, causing thick, pure streams of power to transform into fierce gusts of wind and gush out of his body. Judging from the current situation, the loss of these Magus Acupoints would reduce his power and even worse, his great life force contained in his spirit blood would flow out vigorously. Currently, not only did Lie Mountain Gang lack enough life force to heal himself, even if he was healed, he would

be far less powerful than he had been before.

Ji Hao didn't have the luxury of time to hold Lie Mountain Gang with his hands. He could only throw a kick on Lie Mountain Gang's waist and send him back into the black cheetah army.

A few warriors of the Lie Mountain Family hurried to catch him and dropped him backwards. In the meanwhile, a few other warriors began pouring bottles of magical medicines into his mouth and spreading all kinds of ointments on his wounds.

Tens of swords, machetes and spears had already swooshed up to Ji Hao's face, while roaring arrows darted towards his back.

Ji Hao puffed up his chest. A dense cloud of black mist, which was condensed from the pure water essence power that had been rotating, surrounded his body. Ji Hao didn't even dodge, he only stood perfectly still and let those weapons strike right onto his body.

The defensive power of the turtle shell armor, gifted by Gui Ling to him had amazing defensive qualities. With only a cloud of black mist, the attacks of those enraged Jia Clan warriors had been blocked firmly. None of those sharp and heavy weapons were able to break through the mist, or even touch the turtle shell armor.

The black dagger created streams of fiery light and fiercely hacked towards these Jia Clan warriors. The dazzling fiery light in combination with the black mist disabled the vision of most of them, causing them not to see clearly. At the same time, the stone sword held in Ji Hao's right hand made a simple swing from left to right, attacking the Jia Clan warriors in the most basics of manner.

Those Jia Clan warriors encircled Ji Hao and started attacking Ji Hao crazily with all of their powers. Ji Hao didn't even try to dodge or block their attacks. He only waved his weapons swiftly and struck accurately the vital body parts of his enemies along with beams of dazzling light.

In a real battlefield, there was no space at all for a warrior to dodge. One would be surrounded by people, either enemies or own companions. One had no choice other than pushing forward, while trying the best to harm one's enemies. Even a single step backwards could bring death to one's companions or oneself.

The long black dagger brought up beams of dazzling fiery light against the armors of those Jia Clan warriors, from which, one could hear shrill caws of the Gold Crows. This inherited magic treasure, belonging to the Gold Crow Clan, was quite powerful. If Ji Hao launched the Sky-Opening with it, he could manage to slice those solid and thick armors worn by the Jia Clan warriors and actually hurt their bodies.

The Jia Clan warriors howled out in pain. The great heat released by the long black dagger caused them an unbearable pain; when being cooked by the essence firepower alive, not everyone could cope with the pain.

But the most terrible weapon in Ji Hao's hands was that stone sword!

This stone sword was a natural-formed holy weapon that looked grey and simple, dim without even a little bit of luster. Compared to other magical weapons; it was simply heavy and sharp. With its heaviness and sharpness, Ji Hao didn't need any special method or pattern. Everywhere the stone sword was swung across, armors would be cut open and weapons would be split into pieces. The solid bodies of those Jia Clan warriors seemed to have become like fruits and vegetables in front of the stone sword. Under the stone sword's edge, anything could be easily sliced into two.

The black long dagger held in Ji Hao's left hand had only made groups of Jia Clan warriors howl out in a burning pain, while the stone sword in his right hand caused the surrounding area to be covered with broken heads and body parts. Now and then, Ji Hao sliced over ten Jia Clan warriors into pieces by only simply swinging the stone sword. The mysterious power contained in it

directly eliminated all their whole life-force.

Ji Hao moved forwards in big steps. Behind him on the left side, the ground was covered by broken dead bodies, while groups of howling Jia Clan warriors were left on the right side.

Man Man gritted her teeth and closely followed behind Ji Hao, while randomly striking the ground with her pair of gigantic hammers. Man Man was clever enough to discover the great attacking opportunities that she now had stopped paying any attention to those enemies on the left side of Ji Hao's and only concentrated on smashing those injured Jia Clan warriors on Ji Hao's right side.

These poor Jia Clan warriors were just burned half dead by the great flame, then were wounded further by Ji Hao's long black dagger, and to make it worse, when they were disabled from moving flexibly, this terrible crazy little girl, Man Man, showed up with her pair of enormous hammers.

The pair of hammers was like two small hills constantly striking onto the ground. Along with series of thunderous booms, those Jia Clan warriors were smashed into meat pastes one after another. Huge amounts of blood splashed everywhere, making the battlefield look like a wood of peaches, and those splashes of blood drops were like the blooming flowers of peach trees.

"Watch out! Pay attention to those two!" A Jia Clan warrior, who was burned dry by Man Man's flame bombs earlier, stepped out and yelled while gasping. He was preparing to give orders to his soldiers, telling them to reorganize and launch another group attack.

But, as soon as he had said the first sentence, Feng Xing's arrow accurately and silently flew over, swept closely above Yu Mu's head, allowing Yu Mu to apply a handful of highly toxic poisonous drops on it.

The poisonous arrow pierced deeply into the throat of the Jia

Clan commander. A small hole on the throat was not fatal to a Jia Clan warrior at all. However, Yu Mu's poison showed its effect right away. Before the Jia Clan commander could pull out the arrow, the poison turned his entire body dark green and put him down on the ground permanently.

Taisi and Shaosi began incanting spells together. Taisi was rampantly draining the life-force of all the Jia Clan warriors on the battlefield while Shaosi continuously stealing the good luck that belonged to these Jia Clan warriors with her gifted talent, and transmitting that luck to the human warriors.

Right behind Man Man and Ji Hao, over two thousand black cheetah warriors were growling resonantly and pushing the battle line forward. Quickly they had pushed those Jia Clan warriors, who just moved out of the valley, back into it.

Chapter 290: Collapsing

Behind Ji Hao, Man Man's hammer was swooshing in the air along raging streams of fire. Now and then, a few Jia Clan warriors who were struck by those pair of blazing, enormous hammers that would thud against the ground, with their head smashed in.

On the left and right side of Ji Hao, the numbers of black cheetah warriors were growing like a tsunami. They straightened their spears and lined up in two slightly straggled yet incomparably firm, solid metal walls, which stood firm against all the attacks launched by those Jia Clan warriors.

Occasionally, there would be a few Jia Clan warriors who still managed to break through the walls of spears and rush into the group of black cheetah warriors with their monster-like strength, but tens of sharp long spears would immediately simultaneously pierce into their bodies. These reckless Jia Clan warriors, who dared to rush out of their own group into the army of their enemies, would quickly be pierced into griddles by those sharp spears, after which they would fall on the ground while blood spurted out in streams out of their bodies.

All the Jia Clan warriors were now wrapped in a faint stream of black mist, and from time to time, some of them would abruptly slip down, or let out a sudden sneeze in the middle of a deadly fight, or their eyes would unexpectedly be blocked by blood that would spurt out from the bodies of their fellow warriors.

Those who slipped couldn't resist the violent attacks of Man Man and Ji Hao. As a result, they would be killed immediately. The others who sneezed suddenly would cause a breach in their formation at the front lines, causing a few spears to instantly arrive and pierce into their bodies. And the ones whose eyesight was blocked would give their lives away because of sharp arrows that would silently flash across the air and pierce accurately into their vital parts.

What was even worse for these Jia Clan warriors was that wisps of creepy black smoke was spiraling around them the whole time. The energy of these warriors was consumed rapidly, while Taisi was ceaselessly extracting their life force with his dark curse. At the back, outside of the valley, Taisi was wrapped in a thick layer of life force energy, which he then injected into the bodies of the black cheetah warriors.

These black cheetah warriors had all been injured pretty badly earlier during the waves of attacks launched by the Jia Clan warriors. They were tired and nearly ninety percent of their powers had been depleted. But, at the moment Taisi was replenishing their power continuously, causing new powers to grow within them, enabling them to continue to fight even harder than they had being doing before. Although the power inside their Magus Acupoints had depleted long ago, their bodies continued to remain in its peak state the whole time.

These brave and fearless black cheetah warriors gripped their spears and attacked with them over and over. Those spears brought up beams of dazzling, sharp light under the rays of the sun. Some of them were shielded off by those Jia Clan warriors, while the others pierced straight into their bodies.

Yu Mu, the fatso, who had been hiding among the groups of warriors, was swinging both his arms hard in the air. Along with his moves, handfuls of drug powders were sent flying into the air. Black, red, white, green, all kinds of drug powders drifted in the air above everyone's head.

All those lethally poisonous drug powders fell accurately on the bodies of the Jia Clan warriors. With a single touch of these poisonous drug powders, their wounded bodies began festering right away, and the poison spread inside their bodies, causing them to weaken considerably.

All the life-saving drug powders fell on the bodies of those black cheetah warriors, continuously healing their wounds. By breathing

more medicinal powders in, they were able to timely stop their internal injuries and pulling themselves back from the jaws of death, over and over again.

Thanks to the aid of Taisi and Yu Mu, at least a thousand black cheetah warriors who should have died long time ago were still growling loudly and fighting against the enemy.

While making light hissing noises, Feng Xing shot another lightning-bolt-like arrow from the rear of the army. Every single time, the arrows shot out by Feng Xing were able to accurately pierce into a vital body part of a Jia Clan warrior who was about break through the line of defense that had been set up by the black cheetah warriors. Feng Xing's arrow made them either retreat or get them killed straight away.

From the side Di Sha was standing on, more and more Jia Clan warriors were continuing to move forward, intending to reinforce the group of Jia Clan warriors who were involved in an arduous battle at the exit of the valley. However, Great Gale Bao and ten thousand elite archers that were under his command were hovering in the sky on the backs of their gigantic eagles, while raining down arrows, which poured like a storm into the valley, blocking it entirely.

With especially crafted solid arrows and thick shields, some of the Jia Clan warriors attempted to push forcibly forward against the storm of arrows while shouting madly. Every single time when a Jia Clan warrior tried to do so, Great Gale Bao and his archers would teach him a great lesson with their arrows and make them learn what a human-shape hedgehog would look like. Quite a few elite Jia Clan warriors joined hands, but only made tens of miles forward in the valley before the archery unit in the air turned them all into human-shaped hedgehogs.

The ground was covered in blood and broken pieces of dead bodies. Seeing all this, Ginger chuckled creepily, while sending countless bug eggs down, which landed on the ocean of dead bodies

and blood. The eggs hatched into crazily huge groups of bugs that went buzzing towards the group of Jia Clan warriors near the exit of the valley and even towards the main army of Di Sha inside the valley.

As long as there were corpses, Ginger's army of bugs could not be exterminated.

Along with high-pitched chuckles of Ginger, countless buzzing bugs surrounded the elite and fully-armored warriors of the non-human race, one after the other. They drowned those non-human race warriors completely with their sharp teeth, claws and venom. The armors of these warriors were ripped apart easily, after which their flesh and blood were swallowed by them. Those non-human race warriors howled out in pain each time they were surrounded by these bugs and struggled as hard as they possibly could to attempt running away, but they would quickly be devoured into nothingness by these devil-like bugs.

"Di Sha!"

Ji Hao roared, while a faint stream of red light spurted out from the stone sword, and a stream of flame appeared at the dim lusterless edge of the sword. Ji Hao had continuously been injecting his fire power into the sword, causing the natural flame quality of the sword to awaken.

"Di Sha, it was me who has killed your idiotic brother Di Luo! It was also me who destroyed your family's slave trading business, the Blood Fang! Come, kill me and take your revenge! Don't hide in the rear like a coward, while watching your warriors die for you! Come! Fight against me like a real warrior! Just fight!"

Ji Hao shouted at Di Sha and abruptly waved the long black dagger he was holding in his hand. The black dagger transformed into a raging stream of flame that rose into the air and transformed into tens of zhang long stream of flame under the control of Ji Hao's spiritual power, swishing among the group of

Jia Clan warriors.

The black dagger was one of the inherited treasures of the Gold Crow Clan. It transformed into a flying dagger under Ji Hao's control and started to slaughter the enemies from afar!

Ji Hao grabbed the stone sword with both his hands and gathered all his physical and magical powers in order to control this natural-formed holy weapon. Faint sparks of fire emitted from the stone sword, which instantly caused a rain of blood among the Jia Clan warriors.

Thanks to the solid turtle shell armor, Ji Hao was able to endure every attack launched by these enemies without even feeling the slightest of discomfort.

The stone sword possessed an indescribable level of sharpness. No matter how powerful these Jia Clan warriors were or how noble their families stature was or how solid their armors and sharp their weapons, each and everything that was touched by this stone sword for even the slightest bit would be cut into two. Bodies, weapons, armors, shields...all were cut into two.

"Kill!" Ji Hao let out another resonant shout and single-handedly pushed the defensive line of those Jia Clan warriors backwards for an entire hundred zhang.

Ji Hao's battle efficiency frightened even these Jia Clan warriors. A commander of the Jia Clan who had been cut into two by Ji Hao balanced on his upper body and screamed towards the sky.

"The great Blood Moon! We, your people, we have tried! We have tried!! We couldn't break his armor! We couldn't break his r! We couldn't!!"

Boom!

Man Man's hammer struck straight down and instantly smashed this Jia Clan commander, who was still over three-meter tall after being chopped into two pieces. Within the raging flame released by

Man Man's hammer, this smashed Jia Clan commander had immediately been burned into a puff of smoke.

"Di Sha! Get the hell out! Fight against me!!"

Ji Hao continued to yell; his voice resounded across the entire battlefield!

Di Sha didn't respond, not even once. The morale of Di Sha's army disappeared immediately. In all four directions, Di Sha's army began falling apart and his warriors all started to flee.

Chapter 291: Teleporting

The human army managed to push forward from all four directions and encircled the army of Di Sha in a small square area that was less than thirty miles squared in area.

Thirty miles, that was a distance even the arrows shot out by the weakest Senior Magus level archer could across.

Thirty miles, any of the four human armies which were battling against the main army of Di Sha, were capable of launching fatal, full-scaled attacks onto the enemy at the center of their encirclement.

Arrows that were darting like the raging storm, lightning bolts that were striking with loud, sky-shaking thunder, giant serpents, which were spraying venom in flood-like streams, warriors of the Kuafu Family who were throwing huge rocks continuously into the army of Di Sha, with each rock delivering an earth-shaking boom. All kinds of attacks were constantly being launched onto Di Sha's army from out all directions, quickly throwing the great army of the Blood Moon into chaos.

These young men of the Yu Clan were sent by their noble families to earn contributions and wealth, but they were already at the end of their wits. They were now crying desperately in fear. They surrounded themselves with their guards and tried to flee towards the west, but the venomous serpents had been awaiting them, which squirted huge streams of venom at their faces, causing them to flee towards the north.

In the north however, the great warriors of the Kuafu Family were expecting them, who smashed a few of them into meat paste. These desperate, wealthy young masters cried even louder, screamed and turned towards the exit of the valley where Ji Hao was.

Seeing those Yu Clan warriors fleeing towards them, Yu Mu

laughed evilly. At the same time he was laughing, large mist clouds rose into the air and shrouded the entire area within the radius of a few miles. Faint-green, poisonous rain poured down from those clouds onto those thousands of slave and slave warriors, turning them into puddles of black, sticky blood, which made the Yu Clan young men immediately return towards the east.

However, as soon as they had taken a few steps towards the east it dawned upon them that east was the place where they had initially had fled from. Watching countless thunder beasts running towards them while making thunder-like roars, these young men finally realized the ditch they were in. They all turned back and started to cry and scream, while fleeing towards the divine tower.

The warriors started to flee back towards the divine tower from all directions while hoarsely screaming and growling. These young men from the noble families all pushed their slave warriors to the outer periphery of the circle of guards, using them as human shields. They were used to block the continuous incoming attacks of the human warriors, while the young nobles themselves fled as fast as they could towards the divine tower. Each of them were currently trying to get as close to the tower as they could.

Di Sha was standing on the first floor of the tower with wide-opened eyes and stared at all of the fleeing warriors. He was so shocked that all three of his eyes and the corners of his mouth were twitching intensely.

He had been in charge of this Blood Moon army for only less than three years. Compared to other, experienced elite armies that had great reputations among the Yu Dynasty, his army was weaker as far as equipment and battle experiences were concerned. However, no matter what, his army was still one of the official armies of the Blood Moon.

Di Sha had undoubtedly and firmly believed that every one of the soldiers under his command was incomparably brave. He believed that he would be able to defeat any barbarian army with one fight,

even if that army possessed ten times more warriors. But, today, within only a couple of hours, the great Blood Moon army under his command had collapsed in such a sorry state.

"Lord! Lord! We can't hold this anymore!"

One of Di Sha's close deputy commanders said in a low voice. "Please lord, take the banner and prepare...prepare to..."

Take the banner and prepare? Di Sha threw a glance full of disgust at that deputy commander, who was normally quite close to him and valued by him, and said, "Are you asking me to abandon my warriors and flee for my own safety? This kind of thing, no! Hmm?!"

While he was talking, a stream of blood-red light released by the divine tower began moving quickly. Along with it, large, water-like ripples emerged in the air and spread quickly out. Seeing this, the countenance on Di Sha's face returned instantly. The calm and confident look reappeared on his face. He smiled, then waved his hand carelessly. Along with it, large pieces of magic crystals darted out from around his wrist and were quickly absorbed by the divine tower.

A stream of blood-red light rose straight into the air and curved back immediately, striking hard on the ground beside the tower. After that, beams of blood-red light surged out along with horribly great buzzing noises. With the great power of the Blood Moon, those beams of light rapidly carved a huge magic formation that had a radius of a mile on the ground. The depth this formation was carved into the ground was a zhang. Each of the lines looked smooth and natural, making it look as if it was a naturally carved formation pattern. The patterns of this magic formation were filled with a sticky, liquid-like blood-red light.

The air started shaking and the earth started vibrating. Those warriors of the Thunder Luster Clan in the easy yelled cautiously to stop their mounts.

At the western front, the Maguspriests from the Northern Wasteland ordered their serpents carefully to stop attacking as well. The eyes of everyone were now fixed on the divine tower, which was now wrapped in streams of blood-red light.

Only those warriors of the Kaufu Family at the northern side, who were magically powerful and had god-like solid bodies but simple minds, were still waving their huge stakes while gasping loudly, and smashing enemies in front of them like beating rats, and continued pushing forward without showing any fear.

The blood-red, immensely large formation on the ground suddenly released a dazzlingly bright light, from out of which tens of thousands of silhouettes emerged quickly. The divine tower of Di Sha emitted another dense beam of blood-red light, which connected with another dazzling light released by the formation itself.

The two great streams of power merged together, causing the air to twist suddenly. After this, tens of thousands of fully-armed Yu Clan and Jia Clan warriors walked out straight from the air.

Another divine tower appeared in the air, and the two towers simultaneously released even brighter streams of blood-red light. There was a Yu Clan commander standing on the first floor of the newly-emerged divine tower, who smiled and nodded at Di Sha and said, "Di Sha, your situation seems to be not that well, does it?"

Di Sha raised his right hand, pressed on his own chest, slightly saluted the young commander and said, "Di Mo, thanks for your reinforcement. You know what, you shouldn't worry too much about such things and come so quickly. Well, these stupid barbarians can never win against me anyway. Actually, I am thinking about a way to launch the counterattack."

Di Mo spread his hands and gave a faint smile.

Di Sha looked at Di Mo and smiled politely as well.

They both understood clearly that they were from the noblest of branch families of the Di Family. Therefore, even if they were killed on the battlefield, they would choose the most decent way of dying. Wanting to make a noble of the Yu Clan to admit that he had failed was impossible.

"Great, since you have already been planning the counterattack, I assume that you wouldn't mind a little bit help from me, would you?" Di Mo glanced at Di Sha with a smile and said, "Since we're all brothers from the same family, you should just give that magical cold tungsten mine of yours to me."

Di Sha took a deep breath, then nodded slowly at Di Mo and said, "That is fair enough. That magical cold tungsten mine is yours now...Next month is your birthday, I'll just give it to you as your early birthday gift."

Di Mo laughed out loud then waved his hand in the air, along with which, tens of thousands of elite warriors swiftly rushed out of the magic formation. Right after that, both divine towers began to shake intensely and a stream of blood-red light darted out from each of the two towers. Even more tens of thousands of non-humankind warriors were teleported over through the magic formation on the ground, but this time, it took much longer.

"Di Suo, I'm glad that you came to help me!" Di Sha said while saluting the newly arrived Yu Clan army commander.

"Di Sha, since I am now doing you a favor, I hope that from now on, you will not show up around Miss Xiu Mo'er anymore." Di Suo politely saluted back to Di Sha and said, "After all, you're an engaged man, and my care is more than enough for Miss Xiu Mo'er."

"That is absolutely fair and reasonable, I will never show up around that lovely lady from now on," responded Di Sha. Hearing Di Suo's request, Di Sha let out a long breath of relief. Compared to Di Mo's request, Di Suo's condition was way easier for Di Sha, but

it was also reasonable, as based on bloodlines, although all three of them were from the Di Family, Di Sha and Di Suo were much closer relatives.

The three divine towers floated above the battlefield and abruptly, another bright blood-red light stream flashed across the air and within that, another army appeared on the battlefield.

The commander, who was leading the third army that had been teleported to the battlefield through the formation, was a surprisingly beautiful girl.

Chapter 292: Counterstrike

Seeing the arrival of the reinforcements, the fleeing and frightened warriors of Di Sha's army instantly regained their morale. They quickly calmed down and gathered orderly towards the four divine towers.

The three newly arrived Blood Moon armies launched the counterstrike as quickly as they could.

The army of Di Suo had forty thousand fully-armored warriors, who were riding large, fully-metallic, beast-shaped puppets. These warriors lined up in twenty horizontal rows and rushed towards the warriors of the Thunder Luster Clan while roaring loudly.

These metallic puppet beasts were also wearing thick and solid metallic armors, which were densely dotted with countless sharp blades that could slice parts of the human body apart by the slightest of touch. All of these puppet mounts were chained together with a shining blood-red chain. Due to this chain, these forty thousand warriors moved as a unified entity. They moved while roaring towards the Thunder Luster Clan like a huge mountain pressing down from the sky, putting the warriors of the Thunder Luster Clan under immense pressure.

Long spears thrown out by the warriors of the Thunder Luster Clan swooshed across the air, along with dazzling light bolts, clashing fiercely against the solid armors of Di Suo's warriors along with loud bangs. Within the span of only a few breaths, tens of thousands of spears struck down from the air, sending up countless broken armor pieces. However, not a single warrior of the non-human race had been struck from the backs of their puppet mounts.

All the Jia Clan warriors had chained themselves to their puppet mounts, using exquisite metallic chains, so unless their bodies were struck into pieces, it would be impossible to make them fall

off their puppet mounts.

Followed by a thunderous, earth-shaking boom, the army of the Thunder Luster Clan clashed against the Di Suo's army.

The warriors on both sides raised their long spears simultaneously, burst out resonant roars, and thrust their weapons fiercely towards the vital body parts of their enemies.

As powerful Senior Magi, the warriors on both sides were skillful and experienced. They would never miss their targets within such a short distance. Those sharp weapons pierced into the bodies of their enemies one after another, squeezing out streams of fresh, warm blood.

Those warriors, whose bodies were torn apart and fell on the ground while bleeding, were all from the Thunder Luster Clan.

The spears held in the hands of the Jia Clan warriors were strangely sharp and solid. The armors of those Thunder Luster Clan warriors were not able to block those crazily sharp spears. With only the slightest of touches, their armors were sliced open and their bodies were sent flying away by those thick, sharp spears.

The thunder beasts roared out in rage, while attracting countless thick, dazzlingly bright lightning bolts down from the heaven, which struck hard onto those Jia Clan warriors. However, streams of light emerged from the surface of their solid armors, which rotated around their bodies. These streams of light neutralized the majority of the lightning bolts, leaving only a small portion that managed to break through the layer of light and struck on the armors.

Some of the Jia Clan warriors were struck by the powerful lightning bolts, causing their bodies to tremble intensely, while black smoke rose out of their armors. A few of them were even burned instantly to pieces of black coke by those bolts. Even though they died, their bodies still remained seated firmly on the

backs of their mounts.

While roaring loudly, the Di Suo's army swept across the front lines. The Thunder Luster Clan army was not able to hold off the fierce onslaught launched by the warriors of the Jia Clan, retreating quickly.

Water-tank-thick lightning bolts struck down from the heaven one after another. Although countless warriors of the Thunder Luster Clan were sent flying by those long spears of the Jia Clan warriors, equal number of Jia Clan warriors were burned to death by those forceful lightning bolts. The number of warriors who were falling in the battle began to rise swiftly, and after the span of a few breaths, Di Suo's army began to retreat as well.

Over two thousand Jia Clan warriors were killed during the short period of confrontation, while over four thousand warriors had fallen on the side of the Thunder Luster Clan. An additional two thousand were seriously injured and couldn't even stand back up from the ground.

Ji Hao was completely stunned by this short yet bloody confrontation. It was obvious that both, the equipment and the fighting skills, of Di Suo's army was way above than that of Di Sha's army.

Shrill whistles abruptly came from afar. Along with those whistling noises, the beautiful Yu Clan female commander who had arrived through the teleportation formation as the last one, trod on a multicolored, shining round flat disc, and rose into the air. The zhangs-in-radius round flat disc suddenly released large amounts of dazzling light streams. Along with loud and strange buzzing noises, those streams of light instantly darted up into the sky, tens of miles away from the ground.

Behind the female commander whose name was Ju Xiu, twenty thousand fully-armed Jia Clan warriors, who also were trodding on similar round flat discs, also rose straight into the air.

Over ten thousand archers under the command of Great Gale Bao had been hovering around in the air and waiting for right opportunities to launch their attacks. After Ji Xiu and her army had risen into the air on those weird-shaped round flat discs, cracks suddenly started appearing on those round flats discs, after which streams of blood-red light darted out along with loud swooshing noises, to over tens of miles away.

Within those swiftly darting blood-red streams of light, countless thumb-thick, three feet long metal arrows were shot out followed by high-pitched swishing sounds.

Great Gale Bao gave a loud resonating shout, followed by which he and all the archers behind him ordered their flying mounts to turn around and dive downwards, trying to dodge those arrows along arched flying paths. Each of those twenty thousand flying round flat discs had shot over a hundred arrows in a passing moment, which meant, a whole two million, fully alloy-based metallic arrows, which were enhanced with special magic symbols, had been shot towards Great Gale Bao and his archers.

They eyes of Ji Hao popped wide open and he released his |Golder Crow Pupils|. He could clearly see that on each of those armor-breaking owl-shaped arrows, at least three hundred spell symbols were sparkling rapidly.

Judging from the techniques of weapon forging mastered by the Magi Palace, if three hundred spell symbols were embossed on a single arrow, that arrow would definitely be powerful enough to threaten the life of a Senior Magus.

Although Great Gale Bao had given the order instantly, and the archers behind him dodged as quickly as they could, those swooshing blood-red arrows had still shrouded the entire piece of sky within a single moment. Over two thousand archers were enveloped by the storm of blood-red arrows, and soon, blood began dropping down to the ground along with the sounds of muffled moans.

Over a thousand archers were hit right onto the heads and had died. The remaining one thousand were injured seriously, and fell onto the ground directly.

Ju Xiu pointed her finger at the air, and followed by the motion of her hand, the twenty thousand flying round flat discs released those streams of dazzling blood-red light once again, which swooshed directly towards Ji Hao and the others, who had been guarding the exit of the valley. Ji Hao immediately gasped deeply in shock while activating the power contained in his turtle shell armor, and released the pure water essence power that instantly shrouded the area within a radius of a few miles. Right at the following moment, those arrows struck straight down.

The layer of black mist released by his armor rippled intensely. Although the black mist near Ji Hao remained perfectly still, in the outer circle, the black mist layer was way too thin. Those fierce arrows quickly broke into the black mist after the black mist had slightly neutralized their power.

Waves of howls rose from behind Ji Hao. The black cheetah warriors who had remained behind Ji Hao were hit by those arrows one after another. The power contained in these spell-symbol-embossed metallic arrows was terrifying. If one of those arrows hit a warrior in the shoulder, his entire arm would explode into pieces immediately; if it hit on one's leg, one would lose a leg as well, and what was even more horrible was that it would blow a warrior into two if would hit him on his chest.

After the first wave of arrows, three hundred of the remaining two thousand black cheetah warriors were killed.

Ji Hao gritted his teeth and glared at Ju Xiu, the beautiful woman, who had been hovering around, up in the air.

How could the newly-arrived three armies be so much more powerful than Di Sha's army? Whether it was their equipment or fighting skills, they were all much, much better than Di Sha's

army!

Before Ji Hao could figure out the reason why these three armies were so much more powerful than Di Sha's army, Di Mo's army had already built up a miles in square solid metal wall around the four divine towers, with constructional metallic pieces that were well-prepared earlier.

By the time Ji Hao had turned his eyes towards the metallic wall, a few muffled yet thunderous booms came from the western side of the battlefield. Two odd-shaped, gigantic crossbows shot two huge arrows and instantly pierced through the bodies of the three most enormous serpents under the control of those Maguspriests of the Northern Wasteland. The arrows had pierced seven inches below the head, which was where their hearts were located. These serpents screamed out shrilly while their hearts were punctured by the human-waist thick and ten zhang long arrows.

Followed by the screams of those serpents, raging growls emitted by the Kuafu Family giant warriors also resonantly rose into the air - one of them was shot by this kind of gigantic arrow as well on the leg.

Chapter 293: Withdrawal

While looking at that magnificent metallic wall around the four divine towers, which had been set up within the span of a few breaths, Ji Hao felt dizzy from shock.

He had clearly seen that a few seconds ago tens of thousands of Jia Clan warriors had taken different-sized metallic pieces out from their storage magic tools. These metallic pieces were like living animals; they instantly flew up into the air while countless spell symbols began sparkling on their surfaces, and releasing a beautiful, multi-colored stream of light, then quickly merged into one.

The pieces of metal had automatically put themselves together into a square city wall, gradually forming a metallic city. The four divine towards formed the four corners of the city. The metallic city wall had a circumference of nine miles and was embossed with extremely exquisite patterns of people, animals, plants and other natural sceneries, in accordance with the taste of the Yu Clan people.

On floor-shaped top of the city wall, large-scale crossbows lined thickly up, while human-waist thick and around ten zhang long metallic arrows had been put on bowstrings. Each of these arrows had countless blood-red spell symbols shining on it, and a dense, crystal-like stream of light was flowing around it.

Even from out a great distance, Ji Hao was able to smell the dense scent of blood from those arrows. Judging from that, it could be concluded that these huge metallic arrows must have been made with some kind of extremely cruel and blood-secret method, and were incredibly harmful to all kinds of living creatures.

Those three gigantic serpents, which had been shot through the hearts, were the best example. The serpents possessed immensely huge bodies and had nearly inexhaustible amount of life force.

Additionally they had the ability to spurt out toxic venoms, which meant that their bodies could resist all types of horrible poisons.

However, after being shot at the heart, the wounds of the three powerful serpents immediately began corrupting, while streams of black, sticky blood gushed out of their bodies. Soon, a huge hole had appeared on their bodies, seven inches away from their heads, from which, one was even able to see their intensely beating hearts.

A few Northern Wasteland Maguspriests chanted spells hoarsely while throwing big handfuls of magical medicines into the wounds of those serpents. Those powerful magical medicines clashed hard against the dense blood-red stream of light coiled around the arrows, constantly letting out thick and pungent smell. Every place that was touched by the smoke, even the ground turned pure black.

Seeing that the most powerful group of serpents had been struck like this, the other serpents, which were relatively smaller, stopped one after another, angrily letting out their fork-shaped tongues while hissing, but didn't dare to take another step forward.

At the northern side, the warrior of the Kuafu Family whose leg had been shot by a huge arrow fell on the ground while howling in pain. But at the same time, he picked up a huge rock and ragingly threw it towards the metallic wall, which was miles away from him.

Although it had been a slightly bigger stone for a warrior of the Kuafu Family, in the eyes of ordinary people it was a gigantic rock with a radius of ten zhang. No matter how thick or solid the armors of the Jia Clan warriors were, they would be completely smashed under such piece of rock.

However, the four divine towers each emitted simultaneously a beam of blood-red light, which then connected together and

flashed across the air. It seemed that the four towers had somehow connected their powers together, forming a certain kind of magical and powerful formation. Because of this, they could release even greater powers than before. A dense and thick blood-red mist wall rose from the metallic wall and soon shrouded the entire metallic city.

The giant rock clashed against the metallic wall and emitted a muffled boom, after which it exploded against the wall. However, the shield of blood-rest mist above the city only trembled slightly.

The non-humankind warriors inside the city wall burst out waves of cheering and yelling. In the meanwhile, tens of gigantic-scale crossbows slowly and automatically pulled open, preparing to launch a wide range of attacks. The commander of the Kuafu Family immediately growled out, while grabbing the injured warrior and stepping backwards with big steps along with the other warriors.

The tortoise chariots slowly moved over to the frontal line, while a thick layer of water shield gradually emerged in the air.

Accompanied by a series of ear-piercing bangs, tens of huge arrows clanged against the tortoise chariots. Followed by only a faint hissing sound, all tens of arrows had been crushed into ashes, which caused the tortoise chariots to only sway lightly, but had failed to leave even the slightest of marks on its surfaces.

The tortoise chariots were quickly followed by hundreds of immensely huge metallic puppets, which had countless crossbows and other attacking equipment attached to their bodies. All those equipment created muffled yet loud noises simultaneously. With the power of the magic formation that had connected all the puppets, they turned countless magical crystals into great waves of power, enabling all those equipment to shoot out a roaring rain of arrows and bombs towards the metallic city.

The shield of blood-red mist released an even brighter light, and

the fierce wave of attacks launched by the hundreds of metal puppets failed to cause even a tiny bit of harm to that metallic city.

Di Sha began to chuckle loudly. He cleared up his armor and draped cloak, then carefully brushed his long hair, slowly stepping onto the south wall. While staring at Ji Hao proudly from a great distance, he said, "Ji Hao, do you now dare to attack this metallic city?"

He then patted hard on the solid metal wall and continued with a harsh, shrill tone, "If you're a brave warrior, come, launch your attack. I will let you know what despair feels like."

Looking at Di Sha standing behind the shield of dense layers of blood-red mist, holding his head high so proudly, Ji Hao shook his head while sighing and rescinded, "Well, if you're still a man, come down here and fight against me yourself... Just stop blathering."

Sneering, Ji Hao raised his hand up to Yu Mu. Yu Mu immediately brought out a pack of highly poisonous drug on his hand.

Ji Hao waved that small leather drug pack at Di Sha, curved his lips upwards and said, "Have you just asked me if I dare to attack your crap iron city? Well, I am now asking you, do you dare to swallow this pack of drugs? If you do, I would be more than fearless to launch that attack."

Di Sha shut his lips tightly while glaring at Ji Hao with an indescribably resentful expression.

Ji Hao was not dumb enough to launch an attack on that solid city wall, which was obviously created by the most advanced magic weapon making techniques that the non-humankind possessed, while Di Sha was neither stupid enough to take the secretly concocted highly poisonous drug, which was cooked by an especially talented drug user of the Magi Palace.

From the back, thirty dense streams of red smoke rose abruptly

into the air, along with low yet resonating roars of dragons. There were tens of messengers mounted on the back of the dragons, who flew swiftly towards Ji Hao and the black cheetah army, while shouting at them.

"Give out the orders! All the armies of the humankind! Retreat!!!"

Once having heard the order, all the Maguspriests of the Northern Wasteland immediately let out high-pitched screams. Followed by those screams, their serpents instantly turned around and slithered away at the highest possible speed. Before Ji Hao had even turned his head towards the west, the army of serpents had travelled tens of miles away. By the time Ji Hao saw them, he could only see hundreds of silhouettes disappearing in the woods, hundreds of miles away.

"Yeah you retreated really fast!" Ji Hao cursed unpleasantly. The behaviour of the army of serpent worsened the bad impression of those clans in the Northern Wasteland in Ji Hao's heart even more.

With the shield of the tortoise chariots, the warriors of the Kuafu Family began to retreat quickly as well, and soon disappeared in the vast mountain area.

The warriors of the Thunder Luster Clan didn't turn back and retreat immediately. They rushed towards Ji Hao along a long large arc path and met the black cheetah army and Ji Hao.

Ji Hao stood on top of a small hill, while staring at Di Sha right in the eyes and crossing his own neck with his straightened hand.

"Oi, Di Sha, we're retreating! You have four armies together now, aren't you gonna chase us? I can promise that there is absolute no ambush behind us! Absolutely none! Haha!"

Laughing out loud, Ji Hao shook his head again while sighing, then intentionally waved the pack of poison in his hand. After that, he turned around and hopped on a thunder beast, retreating quickly with the black cheetah army and the army of the Thunder

Luster Clan.

Up in the air, Ju Xiu sneered, pulled out a long arrow and aimed at Ji Hao, then shot out the arrow without any hesitation.

The arrow darted across the sky like a bolt of lightning and reached Ji Hao's back right in the next moment. Ji Hao swung his arm back and accurately gripped the arrow. The arrow, which was embossed thickly with patterns that looked like dragon scales, clashed loudly against his hand armor, and sent up large amounts of fire sparks. The power contained in the arrow was incredibly great, which allowed the arrow to drag Ji Hao's hand further and eventually clanged against Ji Hao's back armor, then finally stopped.

Grabbing that arrow, Ji Hao turned back, threw a quick glance at Ju Xiu.

The thunder beasts and the black cheetahs ran amazingly fast, carrying Ji Hao's team and the two armies swiftly away from the battlefield.

Chapter 294: Formidable Enemy

Back at the campsite of the special army...

After continuously retreating for a couple of days, Ji Hao and the two armies had finally managed to shake off their pursuers and return to the campsite.

"Ai, my poor waist! Finally we can sit down and peacefully eat some meat... such a journey!" yelled Yu Mu.

Within the broad tent that was made from thick leather, ten thick and solid flagstones were placed in a straight line.

Yu Mu took out a piece of bear skin and rolled it out as a sheet on one of the flagstones, then extremely happily lied on it and immediately fell asleep. These past few days, they had been rushing out and fighting in the mountain area without taking a single break. Yu Mu had been badly wounded for quite a few times. Therefore, both his power and his strength were so exhausted that he was on the verge of breaking down.

Not only Yu Mu, Man Man and Shaosi looked tired as well, and Taisi had already fallen asleep; he was even faster than Yu Mu. He didn't even have the strength to find himself a piece of leather or a straw sheet, just simply lied on the flagstone and began snoring right away.

"Man Man, Shaosi, you two should rest as well," said Ji Hao, before opening the tent flap and walking out.

Feng Xing had disappeared again; no one knew where he had disappeared to. Feng Xing was like an energetic monkey that couldn't even sit still for a single minute, and had always been full of energy. Right after the armies had arrived, he had rushed into the campsite and disappeared completely. God knew what he was up to now.

Compared to the last time, Ji Hao and his team came to this

campsite, many more people were now resting here. Amongst these people, part of them were special army members like Ji Hao, and were sent out into the battlefield earlier. They had just returned and were healing their wounds. The others were newly arrived special army members who were just sent over by the headquarters and hadn't received their missions yet.

On a flat area next to the campsite, large pieces of leather were set on the ground. Many special army warriors who had just finished a deadly fight and got back here, placed their booties on those leathers, while peddling loudly.

"Oi~ Take a look, come and take a look, a sword of a Jia Clan big warrior! Exquisitely crafted, and can cut any kind of metal! You will be invincible in battle with this! It will only cost you three bottles of nine-poison life-saving pills, or any other equally effective healing magical medicines!"

"Brothers! Over here! Rare, top quality space magic tool that belonged to a Yu Clan nobleman. Its inner space is thirty-zhang square and five-zhang tall!! It's a genuine top quality magic tool! We're all close brothers, so anyone with ten full armors crafted by Master Magi tutors of the Magi Palace can have this space magic tool!"

"Woman! Yu Clan women! Just captured on the battlefield! Still a virgin!"

Not far away, a loud yell started, instantly stirring the entire market. Everyone curiously turned their heads around, stood up and looked in that direction.

A Yu Clan girl, wearing luxurious armor, with her whole body covered in blood and mud was struggling and crying on the ground. Two sturdy warriors, who each had a thick serpent coiled around their waists, tightly grabbed her on the shoulders and pressed her down against the ground.

"Brothers, look at this lovely little one, isn't she pretty enough?

She is a true noble girl from the Yu Clan, and had over a hundred guards protecting her back in the battle! We lost seven to eight brothers when taking all of those guards out!"

"Fixed price, five hundred thousand jade coins, or treasures of equal value; crystals or anything! Pay us and you can take the girl away." yelled a nearly four meter tall muscular man, with large clouds of watery mist coiling around him, within which, a silhouette of a gigantic Henggong fish was visible faintly.

Hearing the price, the surrounding warriors began mocking and cursing simultaneously. Some of them even let out waves of shrill whistles to show their dissatisfaction.

"Henggong Fu, aren't you being way too greedy?! Just a woman and you want a whole five hundred thousand jade coins for her. Is she wrapped in gold?"

"Just get lost, you! With that much of jade coins we can afford any kind of magic tools or weapons, which can largely improve our powers in battles. We're in a huge war you know?! Survival is the first priority! Who would pay that much for a woman?!"

"Tell me about it! Sacrificing that many brothers for a little girl! Not worth it, not worth at all!"

However, quite a few among those warriors were looking greedily at that girl's pretty face. One warrior offered his hand and yelled at Henggong Fu, "Oi, I don't have five hundred thousand, I only have fifty thousand jade coins, will that be enough? Oi, let us taste this Yu Clan woman, Henggong Fu, just talk!"

Hearing these words, the faces of Henggong Fu and his fellows instantly darkened, to the point of contorting badly. They had lost quite a few powerful warriors in order to capture this young girl, and a mere fifty thousand jade coins wouldn't even make up for what they had lost.

Ji Hao glanced at that crying and struggling girl, shook his head

and walked immediately away.

This was what war looked like, cruel and without any humanity whatsoever. This was a war between two different races, therefore, there was no justice or sense of morality, neither was there any nobleness or lowliness in this war. Only the struggle between life and death.

"There are no women in the battlefields, only female enemies." Ji Hao murmured while walking away "Stupid girl, she shouldn't even have come here."

While walking and looking around, Ji Hao came up to the directing tent of the special army.

On a huge jade board, lines of blood-red characters gave the clear and detailed information about the three armies that had arrived as reinforcements for Di Sha, several days ago.

Among the three reinforcing Blood Moon armies, Di Suo's army was the best at fighting at the front lines, whereas Ju Xiu's army was the most flexible one. Judging from the fighting skills and power, Ju Xiu's army had definite advantages that allowed them to be able to crush any human archer battalions. As for Di Mo's army, they were the richest one; with their wealth, they could even afford a portable, city-sized metal fort. Only that metal city, which had tremendously great defensive power, wouldn't be broken without an army at least fifty times larger, fiercely attacking with no regard for their own lives.

Called by Di Sha, the four armies which had complementary advantages had gathered together into one. Back in the battlefield, if the human armies had continued launching attacks on them, the only result would be more and more warriors dying in vain. Therefore, once Di Mo's army had finished the construction of the metal city, the headquarters, where Si Wen Ming was, immediately gave the order to retreat.

Ji Hao stood in front of the jade board with a frown and carefully

listened to the conversations between a group of warriors of the Huaxu Clan.

The structure of non-humankind armies was weird. Take the Blood Moon armies for example, all official armies were under the command of the Emperor in power, Dishi Yanluo. However, Dishi Yanluo wouldn't give a coin to any official army for their supplies or weapons, which meant that all costs needed to be covered by themselves.

Di Sha's army was a newly organized young army, and only had the most basic, standard equipment. Their weapons and armors were all of the lowest quality among the Blood Moon official armies.

Unlike him, both Di Suo and Di Mo had been leading their armies for over a thousand years, and compared to other official armies, the two of them were quite influential and powerful. With over a thousand years of battle experience and accumulation of wealth, all warriors in both of their armies were armed to the teeth. With a same number of warriors, Di Suo and Di Mo's armies could be ten times more powerful than Di Sha's army.

As for Ju Xiu, according to Si Wen Ming's detailed, secret information which he had gotten from god knows where, she was also a new commander like Di Sha, and had taken over that army for over less than three years.

However, Ju Xiu's family was extraordinarily rich. They had spent a fortune to equip Ju Xiu's army, which was how her flexible yet horribly powerful and effective army was created.

Those Huaxu Clan warriors even knew that Ju Xiu and Di Sha were engaged.

Ji Hao stared at these guys in shock and silently straightened his thumb to Si Wen Ming in his head for grabbing this detailed and gossip-like information.

Since Di Sha and Ju Xiu were engaged, hmm...

Ji Hao lowered his head and pondered for a while, then took out that arrow which was shot towards him by Ju Xiu herself from the storage bag tied around his waist.

Chapter 295: Nailhead

Ji Hao returned to the tent his team was allocated.

Within the tent, the body position of Yu Mu and Tiasi hadn't changed at all, the two of them still deep in sleep. The huge hammers of Man Man and a few other objects of hers, which were all releasing a great heat, had been randomly thrown in the tent, but neither was she or Shaosi in the tent at the moment. Ji Hao had no idea about where the two girls had gone.

But he did notice that the innermost three flagstones were each nicely sheeted by a piece of soft and clean belly leather of a fiery dragon. This kind of leather was three inches thick, soft, elastic, could block moisture and naturally remain warm; it definitely could be counted as a luxury mattress in a campsite like this.

Three small jade slips had been placed near each flagstone orderly, and judging from the twisted, leaning characters written on them, these were the works of Man Man.

The characters on the three small jade slips were-Shaosi, Man Man, Ji Hao.

Man Man had set up beds for the three of them and arranged herself in the middle. Ji Hao and Shaosi were at her left and right side. Ji Hao was arranged in the innermost flagstone.

"Haha, this little girl." Ji Hao shook his head, smiled, then turned towards Yu Mu and Taisi, who both were snoring thunderously. He shook his head again then pitifully murmured, "Well, you two should have built good relations with our little rich girl. Look at you now, you can't even have a nice mattress."

Yu Mu at least had a bear hide, but poor Taisi, he was lying directly on the cold and hard stone.

Ji Hao walked up to Taisi and threw a heavy kick on his butt, but Taisi only twitched his neck slightly and moaned, then began

snoring again. Ji Hao kicked him once again. This time, Taisi slapped hard on Ji Hao's foot while sleeping and murmured, "Hmm, don't, don't...I am sleeping,...wake me up... if, if there's meat."

Ji Hao sighed, grabbed Taisi up and put his head closely near Yu Mu's feet. The team had been running and fighting out in the mountain area for these many days. Yu Mu had been so tired that he didn't even have the energy to take a quick shower after they had returned. Even worse, he was only wearing a pair of straw sandals, which had soaked in mud, sweat and blood over and over again; one could just imagine the smell!

The body of Taisi tightened suddenly, and he sneezed shockingly hard. Right after that, he burst out in long series of screams while leaping up from the flagstone.

Awakened by the ear-piercing screams of Taisi, Yu Mu grabbed a huge iron pot without opening his eyes but directly shielded himself under the pot. The next moment, his muffled, badly frightened voice came out from under the pot.

"Who attacked us? How many people are there? Why didn't that bastard Feng Xing raise the alarm?!"

Taisi shook his head and finally awakened from his deep sleep. He was now looking at the soft fiery dragon belly leather under Ji Hao's butt and murmuring sadly, "What? You're only slightly bit more handsome looking, so you got someone to set a nice bed for you? But I, I look pretty good as well..."

Yu Mu calmed down, took out a cold boar leg and a small dagger, sliced a thin piece of meat off and thrust it into his mouth, then began chewing with a joyful look. Hearing Taisi's complaint, Yu Mu couldn't help but quickly throw a measuring glance at Taisi's scrawny face, after which he showed the whites of his beady eyes.

This time, even Minister Si Wen Ming had miscalculated the enemies 'improvements'. Ji Hao frowned and told Yu Mu and Taisi

all the information he had gotten from those warriors of the Huaxu Clan.

In the past few wars that had occurred between the human race and the non-human race, quite a few of the Yu Dynasty's official armies had been encircled by the human armies, but every time this occurred, their reinforcements could only reach them by traveling a long distance to arrive at the battlefields. Or the encircled army had to spend quite an effort to build a teleportation magic formation right on the battlefield, following which the reinforcement would come through it.

If this time such a magic teleportation formation had been hand built on the battlefield by Di Sha, then the four human armies who were surrounding him would definitely be powerful enough to destroy that formation, completely cutting the connection between him and the reinforcement off.

However, no one had thought that the reinforcements would arrive through a built-in teleportation function of the divine tower. Something like this had never occurred before! Si Wen Ming and his team were trying their best to discover if this was a trump card the Yu Dynasty had been hiding all this time or if those non-human monsters had actually made a breakthrough in the last couple of years in the area of magic spell symbols and formations, which allowed them to directly incorporate magic formation functionality in the divine tower.

"No matter which it is, it's the problem of those ministers. What concerns me is how we can defeat Di Sha, and how to take his damn army out!" Fiddling with that exquisitely crafted arrow, Ji Hao said in a cold voice, "After Di Sha and his three reinforcement armies have gathered together, they have now become incredibly powerful."

Four Blood Moon armies being gathered together meant that at least twenty-thousand Yu Clan warriors and two hundred thousand Jia Clan warriors were in that allied army. The majority

of the slaves and slave warriors belonged to to Di Sha's army, but he wasn't sure if the other three armies hadn't already teleported their own slaves and slave warriors over through the divine towers.

Even if these things were put aside, according to the estimate made by the warriors of the Huaxu Clan, without an army that was fifty times greater than the current one, it would be close to impossible to break through that solid metallic city and the great defensive magic formation, which was jointly constructed by the four divine towers.

However, a fifty times larger human army meant an army with over ten millions warriors.

Those four official armies were not the only four active armies in this Chi Ban Mountain area. There were over a hundred more official armies of the Blood Moon, which were attacking human clans in the northern parts. Once they had swept across all the human clans over there and were unable to find any more targets, they would immediately push forward into the Chi Ban Mountain at their highest speed.

"Therefore, the current situation is that Minister Si Wen Ming still wants to take Di Sha's army out, but he doesn't have enough available military strength at this moment," continued Ji Hao in a cold voice. "He has already applied for reinforcement to the Pu Ban City, but those elders of the big-scale clans...It's not that easy to persuade them."

"Without enough military strength, well, to be more accurate, even if we did have it, minister Si Wen Ming wouldn't give the order. If we forcibly attacked that metallic city, we probably would suffer losses that we couldn't afford. Therefore, we have to figure out another way to take them out."

Ji Hao gave an especially fierce and evil glance to both Yu Mu and Taisi, which made both of them to quiver simultaneously. At this

instance, the sense of power his body was releasing was incredibly sharp and malicious, which made Taisi and Yu Mu feel that this Ji Hao in front of them was totally different from that friendly and charming boy who they were normally familiar with.

"If we want to defeat a group of powerful enemies, we have to turn them against each other."

"If they are not against each other at present, we can create some issues between them to turn them against each other. After all, rumors are always impossible to defend against effectively," continued Ji Hao while staring at Taisi with a cold expression. "Is there any dark curse that will definitely kill a person but in a relatively longer time, and which no one else could undo?"

Straightening his fingers, Ji Hao gritted his teeth and grinned, then he said, "Twenty days, thirty days or forty days, I just want a person to die slowly while suffering."

Taisi frowned, took a tiny calabash out of his sleeve and took a small sip of the alcohol contained in it, then gave a complicated glance at Ji Hao. He nodded slowly and responded, "I know many fierce and cruel curses, which will take a person's life away in an instance, but I also can kill someone slowly."

Raising his hand and abruptly turning his palm up, a stream of black light emerged, and within that light, a small black book, a tiny bow and seven thin and short arrows appeared.

"Nailhead Seven Arrows Book, an inherited dark magic treasure of my family," said Taisi in a weird bland tone, "As long as you are powerful enough, you can even curse the Emperor of the heaven to death with this treasure."

Chapter 296: Spies

After having the discussion with Yu Mu and Taisi, Ji Hao sent each of his close tutors a message with a special magic tool.

After having asked for some information, Ji Hao then went to another campsite in a valley, located two hundred miles away from the special army campsite. He had a quick talk with a few of the warriors at guard duty, then directly walked towards the northwest corner of the campsite.

The condition in this campsite wasn't as good as that of the special army campsite. The ground was full of bumps and pits, which were not even being fixed, and except for a few regular tents, all the others were living in shacks that were built by straws or branches.

It was lunch time. A few warriors from the special armies were delivering supplies with a few large vehicles and were distributing grain cakes, which had a huge amount of salt and dry meat mixed in them. Men, women, young kids and elderly people, everyone received a large grain cake like this.

The campsite was pretty broad, extending to over ten miles long. There were watch towers densely packed inside it, with warriors guarding on them. When Ji Hao walked across the campsite, squads of fully-armed warrior walked past him from time to time, while glancing around every corner of the campsite vigilantly.

Living in this campsite were all refugees, who had come from the northern side of the Chi Ban Mountain. All of their clans were attacked by the armies of the non-humankind, and most of their elders and Maguspriests died in battles. The refugees who had survived and were assigned to this campsite hardly knew each other. Therefore, the possibility was strong that spies working for the non-humans were hidden among them.

Because of the above mentioned reasons, the refugees had to be

kept inside this campsite until their identities had been confirmed and not a single one of them was allowed to set a step outside of the campsite.

In fact, they probably wouldn't get a chance to go out of this campsite until this great war had ended. After the war would end, they might be sent back to the original territories of their clans and official aid to reconstruct their clans would be arranged by Pu Ban City.

In the northwest corner of the campsite, a tiny yard had been built by a circle of short fence wall, made from branches. Lang Lie was leaning against a simple thatched cabin, expressionlessly staring at a group of ants cutting and carrying a tiny piece of dry meat that he had just thrown on the ground.

"Lang Lie!" Yelled Ji Hao.

"Oh my god! Brother Ji Hao!!" Lang Lie quivered instantly when he heard the voice of Ji Hao. He immediately lifted his head and looked at Ji Hao, then laughed loud while stretching his arms and rushing towards Ji Hao.

After giving Ji Hao a great hug, Lang Lie hurriedly asked, "How, how did it go? Have you taken those monsters, which were chasing after us, out?"

Hearing his loud voice, a group of Golden Wolf Clan and Cyan Wolf Clan clansmen walked out from tens of thatched cabins that were in the back. They all grinned in a friendly manner and nodded to Ji Hao after seeing him standing there. These people would never forget that Ji Hao and his team had blocked the enemy and saved their lives from the edges of swords of those horrible monsters of the non-humankind.

A few warriors of the Cyan Wolf Clan, who looked quite embarrassed, also gave big grins to Ji Hao, but Ji Hao couldn't sense even the slightest bit of happiness from their faces. However, when he observed closer, he discovered that these few warriors

had their eyes fixed on Lang Lie and himself all the time, while a slight trace of excitement would appear on their sour faces from time to time.

Of course, none of the other simple and honest human warriors could possibly notice those kinds of subtle, abnormal micro-expressions, but with his spiritual power, Ji Hao was even able to clearly observe the tiniest of movements made by the fine hairs on their faces. Ji Hao couldn't help but grin widely.

After all, he had come all the way for these few guys.

Sitting on a rock, Ji Hao took out steaming grilled meat and delicious wine, which he gave to Lang Lie and the other warriors. The tens of surviving warriors from both the Golden Wolf Clan and Cyan Wolf Clan gathered around the rock, happily wolfing the grilled meat and wines down, which were brought by Ji Hao.

In this stressful time of war, the alliance of the human clans could only ensure that the refugees living in this campsite would not die of starvation. Although lots of dry meat and salt had been mixed in the daily supply of grain cakes, it could only fill up the bellies of ordinary people. To these tall, sturdy and muscular warriors, who usually needed many times more amount of food than ordinary people; it was a suffering to chew on those grain cakes everyday.

This time, all of the grilled meat brought by Ji Hao was carefully cooked by Yu Mu himself, and the wines came from Pu Ban City, tasting pure and delicious.

The group of warriors ravenously engorged all that meat and wine. After that, Lang Lie's pale face finally showed a bit of human color. He punched hard on his own chest while yelling loudly, "Brother Ji Hao! You had saved our lives, and now, you have given us all this delicious meat and wine...after we, we have reestablished our Gold Wolf Clan, you should definitely come to visit us. You will be treated with the most luxurious banquet in the

world!"

Ji Hao liked simple and straightforward men such as Lang Li a lot, because back in the Southern Wasteland, all those uncles he had known in the Gold Crow Clan were good and honest men like this.

Ji Hao swept across a few warriors of the Cyan Wolf Clan with his spiritual power, then grinned at Lang Lie and began talking, without even take a glance at the few suspicious warriors.

"That's great! I have achieved quite many contributions and earned some credits these days. In a few days, I will be earning a sky-high contribution in our war, haha! Till then, I'll just trade some of my credits for some nice armors and weapons for you to reconstruct your clan my brother!"

Before Lang Lie could respond, Ji Hao laughed out loud and continued, "If you do consider me as a brother, just accept that stuff. After all, good armors and weapons are always necessary for the reconstruction of a clan. Furthermore, as long as I can complete what I am now planning to do, some armors and weapons would be like nothing compared to the amount of credit that I am about to earn! Haha!"

Lang Lie stared at Ji Hao in shock and murmured, "Ah? Are you preparing to..."

The group of warriors of the Cyan Wolf Clan popped out their eyes and were staring at Ji Hao. Lang Li's question was exactly what they wanted to know. A sky-high contribution? What kind of contribution could be counted as sky-high? They wanted to know Ji Hao's plan so much that even their hearts felt itching about it.

However, Lang Lie immediately slapped his own face after saying those words, and said, "Haha! Look at me! You can't just ask around about such kind of things!"

Ji Hao smiled, shook his head and said carelessly, "No! Why does

it have to be such a secret? Well, it would be fine even if all the others knew about my plan... it has nothing to do with those official plans anyway."

Intentionally lowering his voice, Ji Hao then made a mystical face and said, "This time, I am planning to murder a commander of an official Blood Moon army with a special, secret magic, and that commander is a beautiful young woman. Haha, what do you think about it? Murdering such an important enemy commander, will that be counted as a sky-high contribution?"

Puffing out his chest, Ji Hao continued proudly, "Well, this is only the first step, as for what will come next...hahaha, brother Lang Lie, you know that the Yu Dynasty is not like a solid steel board anyway. Once that woman dies, haha, we will have a great show to watch!"

Ji Hao had said that he was planning to murder an army commander, and that person was a beautiful woman, which was all true. He was indeed planning on letting Taisi cast a horrible, slow-killing dark curse on Ju Xiu and murder her from a great distance.

As for 'The Yu Dynasty is not like a solid steel board', this phrase contained quite a lot vague, yet important information. As long as someone could bring this to those non-humankind, anyone among them would became extremely suspicious.

Ji Hao didn't give any unreal information, but neither had he told Lang Lie any details about how exactly he was planning to murder Ju Xiu, because no matter how reasonable that fake information would sound like, they could never be as perfect as genuine information. Many of those Yu Clan people were quite smart, and they would definitely be able to discover the unreasonable lies contained in Ji Hao's fake information. Even if those unreasonable lies were as slight and inessential as a spider's thread, they would discover it and prove that Ji Hao had lied.

Nevertheless, at this moment, Ji Hao just wished that those non-humankind became as clever as they could, because from a simple and vague phrase as 'The Yu Dynasty is not like a solid steel board', too much information and possibilities could be dug out that would make those 'clever' non-humankind geniuses suspect each other without any limitation, and eventually throw the entire Blood Moon into distrust!

After having a belly-worship with Lang Lie and the other warriors, and leaving Lang Lie another few huge, freshly-hunted and cleaned preys, Ji Hao walked out of the refugee's campsite staggeringly and with his whole body releasing a strong scent of wine.

Chapter 297: The First Shot

In the northeast side of the alliance of human clans' main camp, at the crossing of two rapidly flowing rivers, was an over ten miles in radius alluvial island.

The island was covered in thriving plants and great numbers of water fowls had built their nests on this island. Showering in bright, beautiful starlight, one could see those tiny, fluffy baby birds were tremblingly flapping their small wings and playing with their brothers and sisters, in those huge bird nests that were built in the vast bulrush woods.

In the center of the island there was an area, about a mile in square, where all the bulrushes had been cleaned up, exposing the pure black soil. Seven thatch cabins were built in that area in a circle forming a small-scale military campsite. Old bronze oil lamps were lit up in each cabin. Creepy, spooky flames were dancing on those weirdly shaped old bronze lamps, making the entire island look dark, green and scary, as if ghost were living there.

In the middle of the circle formed by the seven cabins was a small altar, which was built with the bones taken out from the bodies of ten different kinds of wild beasts.

During the daytime, Taisi had made an exquisite, six-feet tall straw doll himself, which now was placed right in the middle of the altar, with a string of black jade slip worn on its neck. Two twisted, ancient style characters were embossed on the jade slip, 'Ju Xiu'.

Inside the body of the straw doll, where the spine was supposed to be located, was an exquisitely crafted arrow that was thickly embossed with countless spell symbols, struck straightly and firmly. This arrow was the same one that Ju Xiu had used to attack Ji Hao that day on the battlefield. A slight trace of her power was

still attached to this arrow, which would form the main medium of the dark curse Taisi was about to cast.

Ji Hao was wearing a long black cloak and had crossed his arms in front of his chest while silently watching Taisi's movements.

"Nailhead Seven Arrows Book...I've heard about it in my previous life, but it was a legend...Never thought that I would be able to see the real thing here. This creepy thing even made the stone sword let out screaming-like buzzing sound. It should be a naturally formed treasure as well, even possibly, it could be one of those legendary treasures, formed along with this world!"

At the thought of this, Ji Hao couldn't help but sense a strong wave of numbness from his scalp. During all these years, Taisi and Shaosi had been bullied by quite a lot of people in the Magi Palace, but if people knew that, except those terrifying curses that Taisi could do, they also had been carrying the Nailhead Seven Arrows Book around, with such a legendary powerful treasure, would those idiots of the Southern Wasteland Society and Great Dark Ocean Society still dare to bully them?

"A faint wisp of power will do just fine."

Taisi was now wearing a weird-looking black cloak. Both his eyeballs had turned completely dark and the bone cane held in his hand was emitting a high-pitched, weeping-like noise that could make people feel cold and terrible.

"For ordinary dark curses, the exact time of birth of the targeted person is usually required. It would even be better if we could get a wisp of her hair or a drop of her spirit blood, but now, with this Nailhead Seven Arrows Book, the inherited magic treasure of my family, which was powerful enough to twist the fate of an entire clan, we can cast the curse with that faint trace of power. As for the name written on the jade slip, that's only for convenience," said Taisi.

Taisi was so excited that he was even trembling the whole time.

He then chuckled with a low and creepy voice and said, "Hmmm, let me think about it, how should we let her die? Should we make her suffer more or less? Hm, should we slice her into pieces, s-low-ly, or...knock her down right away? Hm, ah ya ya, too many choices!"

Ji Hao couldn't help but quiver when looking at Taisi, who now looked like a total psychopath, and said carefully, with a very low voice and a polite tone, "In order to enrage Di Sha and the other army commanders and make them suspect each other at the same time, we can only do it in a relatively cruel way, but over a longer period of time. She can suffer pretty badly, and end up in a quite terrible shape, anyway..."

Taisi turned around and stared at Ji Hao right in the eyes with his pair of purely dark and completely lusterless eyeballs. That pair of emotionless eyes made Ji Hao feel as if someone had poured a bucket of ice directly into his clothes, and waves of goosebumps immediately rose on his body.

At this moment, Taisi seemed to have completely turned from a human being into another kind of creature. He was now more like some mysterious, dark kind of creature that had existed since the beginning of this world. A creature that had been coexisting with this world all the time, and would live to immortally, isolated and beyond all the other creatures, cold and emotionless.

Even though Ji Hao had always been a brave and fearless person, being stared by Taisi made him feel quite terrible and uncomfortable.

"Hehe, the more cruel and merciless, the better? Ji Hao, we have the same taste regarding this," said Taisi. He now sounded extremely cold-hearted, even inhuman. Excitedly, he turned back around slowly, and opened that black small book and placed it on the altar.

Along with a series of paper ruffling noises, countless pages of

the black book instantly rose into the air and merged quickly into an enormous, opened black scroll painting, then slowly wrapped around the straw doll standing on the altar.

Shaosi was standing silently at the side with her eyes narrowed. She was focused on the tiniest of changes in the facial expressions of Yu Mu, Feng Xing and Ji Hao.

Seeing all three of them showing absolutely no intention of being greedy for the Nailhead Seven Arrows Book, her tightened face became much more gentle and relaxed than before.

In the main camp of Di Sha, right in the middle of that metal city, was a small-scale palace, inside which, Di Sha, Di Suo, Di Mo and Ju Xiu were sitting in the middle of a broad hall with luxurious decorations, surrounded by large groups of elite commanders of the Yu Clan and Jia Clan.

There were groups of human young girls, who were only wearing thin silk dresses, and looked frightened by these non-human race people. While being yelled at by a few non-human race slaves, these girls carried exquisite jade trays, continuously bringing well-cooked food and delicious wine into the hall.

Waves of thunderous laughter burst out from the hall now and then. Although they had only temporarily pushed the human armies back, in the eyes of these proud and arrogant non-humans, this was a sign of ultimate victory. Now that the four armies of the Blood Moon had joined hands, the human armies would be unable to fend their attacks off.

"Cheers! For the victory!!" Di Sha raised a glass of wine and yelled out loud.

"Cheers!!"

All those commanders and deputy commanders of the Yu and Jia Clan also raised their glasses and drank the wine. Some of the Jia Clan commanders who were excited and thrilled even took off

their armors and tore apart their own clothes, showing their bronze colored muscular chest and shouted aloud.

"As long as we have this metal city of mine, those weak stupid barbarians will never, ever be able to break through our defense!" said Di Mo proudly, "I traded this giant treasure from those bloody vampires of the Xiu Clan with all the wealth I had accumulated over five hundred years. You know what, the defensive power of this portable, large-scale battle fort is equal to one percent of the main defensive power of Liang Zhu City!"

All the commanders of the Yu and Jia Clan, including Di Sha, exclaimed in shock.

The Liang Zhu City was the capital of the Yu Dynasty. The city's main defensive power was flabbergasting. Even if thousands of Divine Magi attacked simultaneously, they wouldn't be able to break through it. If the defensive power of this metal battle fort had reached one percent of the Liang Zhu City's main defensive power, it meant that as long as they had enough amount of magic crystals in storage as energy supplies, this metal city would allow them to ignore any kind of attack launched by Magus Kings. In another word, with enough magic crystals, no matter how many human Magus Kings would be sent over here to launch their attacks, this city would never be broken through.

"It's, really a good treasure!" Di Sha looked at Di Mo and grinned, however, his jealousy was quite obvious... The savings of a whole five hundred years? That's...really... you bastard! thought Di Sha.

Back on that small island, Taisi carefully pulled the tiny arrow that matched with the Nailhead Seven Arrows Book, open, and shot it out towards the straw doll on the altar.

Followed by a slight clapping sound and while being stared by Ji Hao, Man Man, Shaosi, Yu Mu and Feng Xing, the arrow missed the target.

The arrow had been shot from less than three zhangs distance

from the target and yet Taisi had managed to miss it!

The face of Shaosi darkened instantly and her hand subconsciously gripped the handle of one of Man Man's hammers.

Seeing this, Taisi quivered and hurriedly picked the arrow back. This time, he carefully aimed at that straw doll for quite a while, then with extra carefulness, he shot out the arrow once again.

Slightly, this tiny arrow pierced into...three inches lower than the straw doll's lower abdomen. Such an embarrassing body part...

Inside the luxurious hall in the metal city, Ju Xiu, who had been laughing happily, suddenly let out a screech. She then fell onto the ground from her seat, holding her own lower belly with her hands and began twitching her body madly while screaming herself hoarse.

Chapter 298: The Second Shot

Ju Xiu had passed out from the pain in the hall.

At this moment, this breathtakingly beautiful woman looked horrible because of the pain. Her face had turned blue and was twitching intensely, the erect eye in the middle of her eyebrows popped out by nearly an inch, almost falling out of her eye sockets. All three of her eyes were now surrounded by thick and purple blood vessels that had swelled to the size of a little finger.

"What is wrong with her?!" Di Sha growled harshly in anger.

Two men of the Xiu Clan, who had grey hair and looked not so young, walked quickly over. They pressed their fingers on Ju Xiu's wrists, neck and near her erect eye. After that, they took a few exquisitely crafted tools out, which were of various shapes and were shining faintly, and rolled them all over Ju Xiu's body, but shook their heads after some time.

One of the men from the Xu Clan opened all five of his eyes, and with all five of his dark blood-red eyeballs shining dimly, said confusedly, "We don't understand, Lord Ju Xiu's spirit blood is flowing regularly and peacefully. We can't find any sign that something is abnormal in her body, and neither can any sign of poison or magical curses be discovered from her body."

Two young girls of the Yu Clan held Ju Xiu up and put her on a large chair,in the middle of the hall. They carefully untied Ju Xiu's luxurious tight armor, and took out a thumb-sized, ingenious jade talisman from her underwear.

That blood-red talisman was shining faintly, with wisps of blood-red light flowing around it. Now and then, faint blood-red ripples, which were caused by the great power contained in it, would appear around the talisman.

"Her life-protecting magic talisman shows no signs of anything

being abnormal. We can say with certainty that she wasn't hit by any physical attack." One Yu Clan girl nodded affirmatively and said in a low voice, "The two master physicians were right... Lord Ju Xiu hasn't been cursed, neither has she been poisoned."

Di Sha, Di Suo and Di Mo all subconsciously pressed their hands on their body, on where they had put their own life-protecting talismans. Every one of them had a life-protecting talisman like this, which they had been wearing since their childhood. Every year they would purify and cultivate their talisman with their own spirit blood.

This tiny, decoration-like jade talisman was not able to ward off any kind of physical attack, not even from an ordinary Novice Magus, who would be able to smash it with a single punch. However, the power of this talisman was connected with their own power and mind. Even more importantly, a stream of the magical Blood Moon's power, which they had been worshipping for eons now, was contained in such a talisman. This talisman had a high resistance towards all kinds of magic poisons, curses and other kinds of spiritual or soul based attacks.

Consider magic curses for example. If a magic curse had been cast at someone who possessed such a life-protecting talisman, the talisman would immediately emit an eye-piercing bright light and become boiling hot. At the same time, the body of its owner would be wrapped in a layer of blood-red light, which would weaken the power of the curse greatly, enabling the owner to have enough time to deal with the curse and prepare for what would follow.

Ju Xiu's magic talisman was not showing any sign of abnormality, which meant that she was indeed not attacked by any type of magic.

"It's also possible that the power contained in the magic curse is at an even greater level than..." murmured Di Mo in a low voice.

"Nonsense! No power can surpass the protection of the great,

supreme Blood Moon!" said Di Suo in a similar deep voice, "In front of the great Blood Moon, no evil power could possibly draw near us without giving a sign!"

"That was back in our hometown, where were had the great Blood Moon floating in the sky and protecting us with its invincible power, but now, we're in the..." Di Mo argued unpleased.

Di Suo and Di Sha simultaneously turned towards Di Mo and stared at him with a threatening expression, then said, "Shut up! The great Blood Moon's power has shrouded the entire world. Wherever we are, we are constantly being protected by it."

Di Mo's face instantly became a bit pale. He then let out an embarrassed grin, and said, "Yes, you're right, we are protected by the Great Blood Moon's power, no matter where we are... Anyway, what's wrong with Ju Xiu? Hm, does she have a stomach ache or is it something else?"

While saying this, complicated and subtle facial expressions appeared on Di Suo's and Di Mo's faces. They both glanced quickly at Di Sha.

In the strictly feudalistic Yu Dynasty, which was almost ruled by males, Ju Xiu, as a woman, was powerful enough to become an army commander. Judging from that, her body should be more than strong enough to be immune to all kinds of illnesses. If it was not an illness that had given such a sudden and intense pain to this woman that had even caused her to pass out, then there was a real problem Indeed, some special physiological status could bring such kind of sudden and unbearable pain, but...

Di Suo touched his own beardless chin and murmured while pondering, "Well, I haven't heard about any intimate male friends of Ju Xiu. I can tell that Ju Xiu is quite traditional, to...to do that kind of things."

Di Mo touched his beardless face as well, took another glance at

Di Sha and added with a complicated look, "Well, but you know, nothing is definite. Although Ju Xiu hardly ever hangs out with young men from our Blood Moon, she is actually quite close to the side of the Yan Moon...You all know that Ju Xiu is pretty interested in all kinds of power transformation and advanced knowledge."

Di Sha glanced at the two of them a bit angrily. Of course he knew what they were trying to imply. There was no need to say those things when talking about the lifestyle of young people of the Yu Clan. Di Sha, being one the young Yu Clan noblemen, knew that they were nowhere near 'traditional' when it came to having a sexual experience.

Romantic affairs were a necessary pastime of these noble Yu Clan people, it was like an important seasoning for their long and boring lives.

The thing was that Ju Xiu and Di Sha were engaged to each other. That engagement was settled only ten years ago, which was also the main reason why Di Sha could be promoted from the Blood Fang to Liang Zhu City as an official army commander. It was not hard to tell that their engagement was made upon many complicated, profit-related conditions.

Nevertheless, no matter what, the engagement was real and well known. Therefore, if anyone other than Di Sha made Ju Xiu pregnant before they got married, it would be a huge humiliation for Di Sha and his family. If it really was so, then due to his current position and power, he and his noble family would never be given a chance to pretend it never occurred.

Back on the small island, Ji Hao and the others were staring at Taisi speechlessly.

That last shot hadn't missed its target, but, it hit in such an embarrassing part of the body of that straw doll...Did Taisi do that intentionally? Or it was only because of his lousy shooting skill?

Ji Hao rubbed his own face for a short while, then asked, "Well, anyway, what does that Nailhead Seven Arrows Book say?"

Taisi carried that tiny bow, gave an embarrassed grin, and responded, "Shoot seven arrows each day at her, which will take a part of her life-force away each day. Seven days, twenty one days, at longest, we can make it three hundred and forty three days. During this period of time, she will suffer pretty badly and will die eventually."

Ji Hao nodded and said, "We don't have too much time, neither should we finish it too soon... twenty one days sounds perfect."

Taisi raised that tiny bow quite proudly and said in a cold voice, "Let's make it twenty one days then."

A series of weird, ancient spells smoothly flew out of Taisi's mouth, after which he raised the tiny bow and aimed at that straw doll again and took another shot.

He managed to hit the target again, well...barely. Ji Hao began wondering if Taisi had received special training on how to miss the target; for someone that was standing three zhang away from the target which was an over six-feet tall straw doll, he took the overbearingly lousy shot, but the arrow ended up on the fingertip of that straw doll.

In the luxurious hall, suddenly all three eyes of the unconscious Ju Xiu popped out. Three seemingly huge eyeballs all popped from her eye sockets for over an inch out, and the blood vessels around her eyes popped out as well. At the same time, her left hand became twisted in a weird shape. Followed by an abrupt bone cracking noise, the little finger of her left hand cracked entirely off, right in front of everyone.

Blood gushed out instantly.

This scene made all those commanders of the non-human race gasp deeply in shock.

Chapter 299: Take A Disciple

Half of the small island that was located in the middle of two crossing rivers was lit by the light emitted by the flames of the spooky green bronze lamps. Dense streams of freezing yet immense power were rising directly into the air. The whole island seemed to have been isolated from the surrounding areas by the green light and those power streams, into an independent, mysterious world.

In the bird nests built on the shoal, the baby chicks were now all huddled up under the wings of their parents and were afraid to move even a little bit. With the instinct that they possessed deeply in their bloodlines, these creatures had somehow perceived the existence of an extremely powerful and dreadful being in their immediate vicinity.

Candle Dragon Gui, that old legendary person, who was called Master Candle Dragon back in the Magi Palace, was now wearing a straw raincoat, and was walking creepily out of the woods near the river like a thief. He moved slowly into a bulrush wood, and carefully observed the small island through the gaps between those swaying bulrush leaves. That light of the gloomy green lamp made it so that he couldn't help but raise his eyebrows in excitement, and soon, he even began waving his arms and stepped slightly on his feet against the ground, nearly laughing out loud.

At the same time when he was trying hard to restrain his laughter, the handsome man in red cloak, who had been watching the fight between Dishi Yanluo and Emperor Shun while remaining hidden in the void, appeared behind Candle Dragon Gui, just like a ghost.

As the most respected and eldest elder of the Magi Palace, and minister of the human Emperor, and the master Maguspriest of the Candle Dragon Clan, which was the most mysterious one among all the human clans, Candle Dragon Gui didn't even perceive the slightest sense of someone appearing right behind his

back.

He was still observing with all his focus every single move made by Taisi in front of the altar, on the small island, while chuckling slightly.

"Good, talented boy... very, very talented! Haha, if I can take him back and tutor him for a few years, another marvelous, young hero will probably emerge from our human race! Ha, at that time, even the eyeballs of those bloody little idiots would pop out!"

The red cloaked young man had already raised a long sword that was sparkling with a magical light behind Candle Dragon Gui and was preparing to behead him, but hearing his murmur, the fierce killing aura surrounding that young man disappeared instantly.

He thrust the long sword conveniently back into his sleeve. The corners of the red cloaked young man's mouth curved slightly. He pressed both his hands silently and lightly on Candle Dragon's shoulders then abruptly pressed him down into the puddle of mud, which was beside the river, then threw a heavy punch on his head.

Poor Candle Dragon Gui...back in Pu Ban City even Emperor Shun wouldn't talk loudly in front of him. As the most respected elder among the entire human race, he had directly been knocked out by the red cloaked young man. With the powerful bloodline of the Candle Dragon Clan, his body was incomparably strong and solid, nearly indestructible. However, he was knocked out straight in a puddle of mud beside the river by the red cloaked young man, without even twitching.

"You little bastard...you should be glad that you were not thinking about taking the same boy as your disciple as I am. Hm, that boy is mine. Anyone who wants him as well, you can just try if you're not afraid of death."

The young man rolled up his wide sleeves, showing a pair of tender arms. He then took out a purple calabash, face filled with struggle and unhappiness. Grimacing and showing his gritted

teeth, this young man carefully unplugged the calabash and took a tiny sip of the wine contained in it. At that moment he lost his self-control a bit and took another slightly bigger sip, then another sip. After nine sips, not a single drop of wine was left in that calabash.

"Ah! That big brother of mine really is lazy! This time when I return, I will certainly smash his pill cauldron and force him to make more wine!" complained the young man while raising his head and looking at the sky sorrowfully, "It would be fine if I was the only bibulous one, but, I have a bunch of disciples and all of them are like me, living on alcohol! If that lazy big brother doesn't make more wine for me, I will have nothing to treat them when I call them together for a lecture!"

Sighing, the red cloaked young man narrowed his eyes and began observing the six young people who were standing in the middle of the small island.

Gradually, terrifying scenes that happened when this world was first opened emerged in the young man's eyes. Roaring tsunamis, flame streams swooshing across the air along with hurricanes; space, time, and the natural power appeared one after another. Clear and positive power rose into the air while muddy and negative power descended into the ground; within the vast and pure, newly emerged natural power, an enormous human silhouette flashed across.

Gui Ling appeared silently behind that red cloaked young man. She chuckled and said in a low voice, "Dear master, all these kids are great."

The face of the young man started to twitch instantly. He gnashed his teeth and complained, "Yes, yes I know, of course they are all amazing... but I can take only one as my disciple! Only one! Do you know how crappy that feels like? Well, look, that brother and sister, they're offsprings of the Netherworld kind, I can't take them; that little girl with terrifyingly great strength has mixed bloodline of the Fire and Green God, I can't take her; that fatso, he

is an offspring of the ancient Disease God and Rain God, I can't take him either..."

"What the hell?" When he was speaking about Yu Mu, the young man paused slightly and his face twitched once again, then he murmured, "How did such a thing even happen? The bloodlines of the Disease God and the Rain God mixed together? But they are so far away from each other, one in the south and one in the north, how did they meet each other?"

"Anyways." taking a deep breath, the young man grinned bitterly and continued, "The last kid, the tall and slim one, well, judging from his bloodline, which is half god and half human, I can still barely take him as my disciple without breaking that damn agreement that I made back then at the top of the Sky Pillar... But, he has that longbow with him. Ah...that longbow...I can't take him with that bow."

Licking his own lips, this young man then soaked that purple calabash in the river and filled it half with the river water, then took it out, shook it carefully slowly and mixed the last bit of wine contained in the calabash with the river water, then poured it into his mouth. After drinking, his face twisted badly.

"Ah, ah, someone please kill me! All six kids are amazing! But I can take only one!"

The red cloaked young man then observed Ji Hao closely from head to toe, then finally let out a grin and said, "This one is pretty clean, pure humankind bloodline, without any shocking previous life history. Neither is he a reincarnation of some god or legendary person. Hmmm, he doesn't have any high status among the human race at present. Ha, this is my good disciple!"

The primitive scene in his eyes slowly dissipated, and instead, inverted images of stars appeared in his eyes. He then smiled at Gui Ling and said, "Go, take care of your own business, I'll be perfectly fine. Ah, it's not that easy to meet another nice kid that I'm

interested in... Hm, this Chi Ban Mountain war is such a mess. Some shameless bastards might hurt this kid, therefore, I have to stay close to him and take care of him for a while."

The young man chuckled and grinned broadly, showing his shining white teeth. His teeth were strangely white, which could even reflect the bright and multicolored starlight. He then continued slowly, "Well, a couple of days ago, I couldn't help but smash a lotus of that shameless old twat... he will certainly not let that go. And while hacking that damned lotus, I conveniently hacked that Dishi Yanluo's ugly throne... um, that was equal to...like, knocking his front door open and slapping his face."

Laughing out, the young man showed a trace of cruelty on his face, and continued, "Hmm, yeah it is, but so what? They're all idiots anyway. The only thing that matters is that this little brother of yours is too weak at present, so I have to pay more attention to him, in case he gets hurt. Although he has quite a few magic treasures, which are pretty powerful, but he can't activate them yet. Hmmm, so troublesome, what should I do?"

Gui Ling sighed and showed the whites of her eyes, then said in an extra polite tone, "Well, of course you should do your amazing magic and lend our little brother a hand."

"Ah haha." The red cloaked young man gave her such a big grin that his face even looked like a blooming flower, then he responded while nodding slowly, "That is a very reasonable suggestion, hm, therefore, I will probably spend a few more days here in this war zone. I'll go back after the war is over...hm, and I'll collect as many wine-making materials as possible. When I get back, I'll schedule a duel against my big brother, and I will certainly defeat him! I need to force him to make more wine for us, even if I have to destroy his cultivation room!"

Laughing out loud again, this young man slightly shook his body and instantly the luxurious red cloak of his changed into a simple, flax long cloak. He then trod on the river water, held his hands

behind his body and walked towards the small island, where Ji Hao and his friends were.

While walking, the young man gained a very happy grin on his face and murmured, "Ah, it feels really nice to take a good disciple."

"Oi, Gui Ling, don't forget to throw that old candle thing away, I mean, further away! He almost tried to take my good disciple! Such a bastard!"

Chapter 300: Yu Yu

With his 'amazing archery skills' Taisi shot another five arrows in a row at the straw doll and finally managed to fill the quota of seven shots a day.

Gasping, Taisi dropped the tiny bow, grinned embarrassedly and turned towards Feng Xing, who was standing aside with his mouth curved down into a semicircle. Taisi said, "Ha...ah...ahah, brother Feng Xing, next time, I'll cast the curse but can you please shoot on my behalf?"

Feng Xing raised his head and sighed towards the sky.

The first arrow was shot on the lower belly of the straw doll, while the second one on the fingertip. For the remaining five arrows, Taisi had moved closer till he was less than a zhang away from the altar in order to try to aim better. The result was one on the corner of the forehead, one on the toe, one on the ear, one on the corner of the mouth while the last one on the shoulder.

Such a cra**y archery skill would probably make even a God cry. If Taisi had been so unfortunate to be born in the Ten Sun Country, once he displayed such a poor talent in archery, his own parents would strangle him themselves for sure, just to prevent him from humiliating the whole family with such dreadful archery skills.

In the main camp of Di Sha's army, Ju Xiu had suffered suddenly and weirdly from great pain for an entire seven times. In the meanwhile, seemingly small, neglectable wounds appeared on her body abruptly for absolutely no reason. For example her finger had cracked, ear gashed, toe broken and two teeth had fallen off. Although none of these small wounds had threatened her life, the pain was enough to drive her crazy.

Di Sha and the other army commanders were nearly driven crazy as well. The Xiu Clan master physicians were trying their best to

cure Ju Xiu and cast the curse away from her, but none of their tries had worked so far. All of Ju Xiu's small wounds looked nothing but ordinary, but those Xu Clan physicians had failed to even stop the bleeding after using up all of the best magical medicines that they had brought.

Hearing this news, the entire non-humankind army had instantly fallen into chaos, especially those Yu Clan warriors who were afraid of death. They sent messages to their families as soon as possible, and after only an hour of sending them, quite a few large-scale families of the Blood Moon began purchasing all kinds of powerful magic talismans and treasures which could block magic curses. Even the prices of this kind of treasures and talismans had risen quickly by over a hundred percent.

This chaos had no effect on Ji Hao and his team at the moment. Looking at Taisi, who had just finished the seven shots for today and looked quite relieved, Ji Hao smiled and said to him, "Taisi, you're pretty tired, and everybody else is too. Let's go back and take a rest. I have already told Elder Wulong, so no task will be assigned to us during the next few days, we can..."

Although Ji Hao hadn't perceived the existence of any other people with his spiritual power, he still subconsciously took a glance at the bulrush wood aside. However, with this careless glance, he was shocked to discover a human silhouette near the edge of the bulrush wood, who was holding his hands behind his body and was curiously looking at the Nailhead Seven Arrow magic curse formation.

A stream of cold sweat gushed instantly out of Ji Hao's body, and every single one of his fine hairs stood immediately straight. He rushed up to Shaosi, who was standing the closest to that silhouette, grabbed her shoulder and threw her backwards. At the same time, the turtle shell swiftly and automatically appeared on his body. He then pulled out the stone sword, puffed out his chest and stood right in front of that dark silhouette.

"Who are you?!" An indescribable great shock turned eventually into a simple sentence.

"Ah!" Yelled Man Man. Seeing Ji Hao's movements, she finally realized that someone had come near them without them noticing it. She was startled as well and instantly raised her pair of gigantic hammers, quickly glancing around then moved to behind Ji Hao. Man Man had already got used to standing behind Ji Hao and be his reinforcement anytime he would need it.

A stream of green mist rose from the ground under Yu Mu's feet, along with which, a dense watery mist puffed up from the two surrounding rivers, which condensed quickly into a few thick streams of mist flowed around his body.

As always, Feng Xing had already disappeared in the wind once Ji Hao had discovered that silhouette. At the first second, his footsteps could still be heard faintly, coming from the surrounding area, but it faded soon away. Feng Xing, the one who was able to move swiftly like a ghost, had already become a terrifying person among Ji Hao's team.

Only Taisi had yet to realize what was happening. While turning his head around, he yelled aloud, "Hah? Rest? No, no, no, we should get something to eat before we rest! I'm starving! Now, do you have any idea how exhausting the Nailhead Seven Arrows curse is...?"

"Oi?! Who the hell are you?!!" Taisi finally saw the silhouette. He let out a shrill scream then pulled out his bone cane and chanted a spell right away.

"Haha, you little group of kids, why are you being so nervous? My name is Yu Yu, Daoist Priest Yu Yu. This time I have come here to take in a disciples. I do not have any bad intentions," said Yu Yu, who had already changed his red cloak into simple flax clothes. He took a few big steps forward, walked up to Ji Hao, then conveniently poked at Ji Hao's armor with his finger and said, "Did

Gui Ling give you her own shell? Hm, such a nice sister!"

Followed by a buzzing noise, the turtle shell that hadn't even shook when being attacked madly by hundreds of Jia Clan warriors simultaneously back in the battlefield, vibrated slightly then turned into a beam of black light and darted into Ji Hao's body.

Ji Hao's mouth opened subconsciously and stared at Yu Yu, and seemed to have become dumbfounded. Man Man laughed out behind Ji Hao and said, "Wow, look at him, he is as handsome as my Abba! Isn't he?"

Yu Yu smiled and looked at Man Man, then proudly touched his own face and responded, "Little girl, are you saying that your Abba is handsome? Well, never mind, I won't bully kids... after all your ancestors were quite close friends of mine back then...But you know, he is not as handsome as me."

They corners of Ji Hao's eyes couldn't stop twitching. The shell armor gifted by Gui Ling disappeared, which had already proved Yu Yu's identity.

However, Ji Hao felt that his mind had become completely empty and even his body had become powerless. He had studied almost all Taoist books in his precious life, countless of those books were written by Yu Yu himself, and his disciples.

"This...you...eh, the..."

Remaining dumbfounded for quite a while, Ji Hao retracted the stone sword and cupped his hands, saluted Yu Yu, while talking tremblingly.

"Get down on your knees and call me Shifu!" Yu Yu looked at Ji Hao with a happy grin on his face and said, "Ah, you're such a talented boy, just like my good disciple Po had told me. Po's words were not exaggerated at all, neither did Gui Ling praise you without reason. I have taken so many disciples, some of my non-

humankind disciples had gained their spiritual Dan before they had become my disciples, but amongst the human disciples, you're the first one who has gained a Golden Dan before I even have taken you in."

Yu Yu then slapped hard on Ji Hao's shoulder and said louder, "Good, good, amazing...such a nice disciple of mine. Hm, a welcome gift...welcome gift, let me take a look in my pockets..."

Before Ji Hao had gotten a chance to talk, Yu Yu put his hand into his sleeve and rummaged in there. Soon, he took out a one zhang and two feet long streamer, which was completely fire-red and was releasing a terrifying great heat, and said, "This is 'immemorial sun streamer', haha, I had almost forgotten about this treasure! Dear disciple, Ji Hao, this streamer is braided with the essence of the sun power. It can release sun essence flame and burn anyone you hate into nothingness... such a good match for you!"

The streamer was releasing a great and primitive sense of power continuously. Even Man Man, the girl with the power of god, howled out and was pressed on the ground and was disabled from moving because of the the great sense of power of that streamer.

Yu Yu grinned proudly again, then pointed his finger at the streamer. Followed by his move, a drop of purple spirit blood transformed into a huge and long purple streak and swooshed out of his finger, rolled the immemorial sun streamer up, while emitting a slight, high-pitched sound, then turned it into a stream of fiery light and pushed it into the middle of Ji Hao's eyebrows. Ji Hao's body instantly became scorching hot, while perspiration that had a strong, pungent scent gushed out of his body in big streams.

"Dear disciple...eh, I have already given you a welcome gift..."Yu Yu remained grinning nicely, but stared at Ji Hao with a pair of fiercely shining eyes and said.

Ji Hao still couldn't say anything. He remained silent, thought of

Po, who was simple, honest and passionate, and Gui Ling, who was so friendly and warm, then he looked at Yu Yu, who was...nowhere near his anticipation. Finally, Ji Hao thudded his knees against the ground and kowtowed to Yu Yu for seven to eight times.

"Ji Hao, kowtowing to my dear Shifu as your disciple!"

Streamer: Long flag, often tapering.

Table of Contents

- The Magus Era
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 201: A Poisonous Rain
  - Chapter 202: Release
  - Chapter 203: Candle Dragon
  - Chapter 204: Weal and Woe
  - Chapter 205: Slaves
  - Chapter 206: Vicious Bugs
  - Chapter 207: The Nest of Bugs
  - Chapter 208: Bug Slave
  - Chapter 209: A Crystal Mine
  - Chapter 210: Lie Mountain
  - Chapter 211: Trapped
  - Chapter 212: A Magical Space
  - Chapter 213: A Holy Weapon
  - Chapter 214: Body Strengthening
  - Chapter 215: Overall Situation
  - Chapter 216: Attendant
  - Chapter 217: Prince Xu
  - Chapter 218: A False Countercharge
  - Chapter 219: Wuyou
  - Chapter 220: Shamelessness
  - Chapter 221: Counterplan
  - Chapter 222: Interception
  - Chapter 223: Confession
  - Chapter 224: Misfortune
  - Chapter 225: Falling on Evil Days
  - Chapter 226: The News of His Death
  - Chapter 227: Another Sudden Death
  - Chapter 228: Collaboration
  - Chapter 229: Ku Quan
  - Chapter 230: Special Abilities
  - Chapter 231: Earl Chong
  - Chapter 232: Presenting Himself Before the Emperor

Chapter 233: Confrontation
Chapter 234: Being Taken into Custody
Chapter 235: Jail
Chapter 236: Preach
Chapter 237: Xie Zhi
Chapter 238: Gui Ling
Chapter 239: Appreciate the Music
Chapter 240: Finishing Meng Ao
Chapter 241: Releasing Souls from Purgatory
Chapter 242: Kang
Chapter 243: Deluding Their Hearts
Chapter 244: Suppressing
Chapter 245: Arbitrariness
Chapter 246: Twisting the Situation
Chapter 247: Join the Army
Chapter 248: One Strike
Chapter 249: Gift Giving
Chapter 250: Finalized
Chapter 251: The Yu Dynasty
Chapter 252: Chi Ban Mountain
Chapter 253: Special Army
Chapter 254: Experience
Chapter 255: Refugees
Chapter 256: Pursuers
Chapter 257: A Small Frustration
Chapter 258: Close Combat
Chapter 259: Blood Power
Chapter 260: Evil Blood
Chapter 261: Snipe Kill
Chapter 262: Magic Bow
Chapter 263: The Bug Formation
Chapter 264: Emergency
Chapter 265: Ginger
Chapter 266: Information
Chapter 267: Hatch
Chapter 268: The Ocean of Bugs
Chapter 269: Surrender
Chapter 270: Bug Puppet
Chapter 271: Bug Attack

Chapter 272: Exasperating
Chapter 273: Array
Chapter 274: Useless
Chapter 275: Determination
Chapter 276: Blood Waves
Chapter 277: Burn the Blood
Chapter 278: Encircling
Chapter 279: Tusk
Chapter 280: Start the War
Chapter 281: Blood Scent
Chapter 282: Cruel
Chapter 283: A Mass Brawl
Chapter 284: The War Between Emperors
Chapter 285: Onlooking
Chapter 286: Yanluo
Chapter 287: Seeing a Ghost
Chapter 288: Tangled Fight
Chapter 289: Continue the Battle
Chapter 290: Collapsing
Chapter 291: Teleporting
Chapter 292: Counterstrike
Chapter 293: Withdrawal
Chapter 294: Formidable Enemy
Chapter 295: Nailhead
Chapter 296: Spies
Chapter 297: The First Shot
Chapter 298: The Second Shot
Chapter 299: Take A Disciple
Chapter 300: Yu Yu